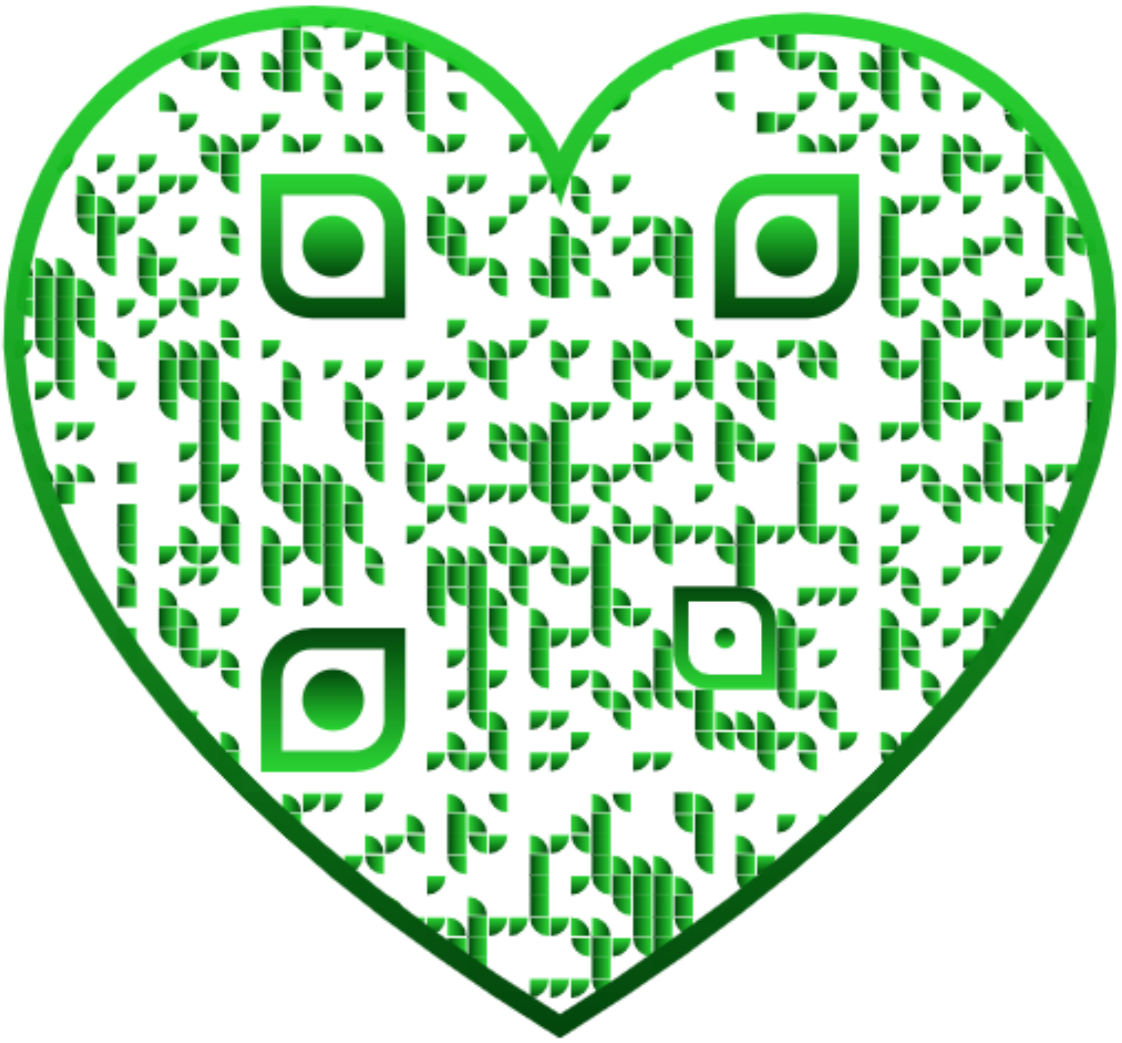
UNHOLY COMMUNION:

The Alien Abduction Phenomenon, Where It Originates *And How It Stops*

By David Ruffino and Joseph Jordan



Throughout this work, the authors refer to the websites for their personal ministry, which can be found at www.paapsi.org, www.unholycommunion.info, and www.ce4research.com.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION

PROLOGUE

SECTION ONE: Alien Abduction – The Secular and Occult Views

- CHAPTER ONE: What Is Alien Abduction?
- CHAPTER TWO: Secular View: Scientific View
- CHAPTER THREE: Crossing Over
- CHAPTER FOUR: Psychics/Channelers

SECTION TWO: The Biblical Judeo/Christian View

- CHAPTER FIVE: So, What About the Christian Church?
- CHAPTER SIX: Is There Life in the Universe?
- CHAPTER SEVEN: Alien Abduction in Past Centuries?
- CHAPTER EIGHT: The Conflict and the Combatants
- CHAPTER NINE: Three Basic Christian Views on the Alien Abduction Reality
- CHAPTER TEN: Doors

SECTION THREE: The Proof Is in the Testimonies

- CHAPTER ELEVEN: Importance of Testimonial Evidence
- CHAPTER TWELVE: Testimony of Joyce
- CHAPTER THIRTEEN: Catherine's Testimony
- CHAPTER FOURTEEN: Bill's Testimony
- CHAPTER FIFTEEN: Matt's Testimony
- CHAPTER SIXTEEN: Lyle's Testimony
- CHAPTER SEVENTEEN: David's Testimony
- CHAPTER EIGHTEEN: Lourdes' Testimony
- CHAPTER NINETEEN: Jim's Testimony
- CHAPTER TWENTY: Wade's Testimony

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE: Testimony of Lynn from Texas

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO: More Important Testimonies

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE: People Who Refuse Help and Their Outcome

SECTION FOUR: The Awakening

CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR: Christian Awakening

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE: Official Disclosure

INTRODUCTION

There is a saying in the world that God works in mysterious ways. To people who do not know God personally His ways do seem to be of a mysterious nature. But for those of us who know Him we know that in place of mystery, God often does things strategically. A good illustration can be made between riding a rollercoaster in the dark of night contrasted to riding the same rollercoaster in the light of day. In the dark of night the ride is uncertain and the way is not clear, so every turn, every rise or fall is unexpected and therefore it seems mysterious. But for those who ride in the daylight the course can be seen. Each and every rise and fall, every turn and rollover can be seen and if the riders position themselves right, they can see the beginning and the end of the ride before it even starts.

So to some it might seem mysterious how God rose up one person on the East Coast of Florida and the other person in the Central Valley of California and how He gave them the same message, the same mission and even how He brought them together in what many would consider to be an obscure town in the desert of New Mexico. The two men that I mention are the coauthors of this book.

David came to know of UFOs and aliens around the time that he was forming his first words. Like most teenagers growing up in the 1970s he experimented with drugs and many of the strange philosophies that presented themselves to anyone who would take a look at them. At the age of twenty he accepted Jesus Christ into his life and he was changed forever. During the early years of his Christian walk he often wondered about UFOs and aliens and he wondered how they fit into God's scheme of things. The years of contemplating were accompanied by years of prayer, asking for wisdom in this matter. God in His mercy led David to scripture that helped to explain who and what the phenomenon is and its sinister nature.

Like every believer in Jesus Christ, David asked God what he was supposed to do with his life. Seeking God's will for one's life is very hard sometimes. God spoke to David and told him that he should pursue ministry in exposing and ministering to the two areas that once bound him; those areas being UFOs and evolution. Having been deeply involved in both areas before his conversion enabled David to know have firsthand experience as a former insider. He now understood why God had enabled him to delve so deeply into these two areas before he came to faith in Jesus.

Late in the 1990s David felt the call to take the ministry to higher levels and

the rudiments of what would later become The Delusion Resistance Ministries came into being. Soon people started to write to him, telling him that they too had the same revelation about UFOs, aliens and evolution. In 2005, David went to Roswell, New Mexico to attend a UFO-related conference and there he met Joe Jordan and Jim Wilhelmsen. In the fall of that year the three men started a counseling ministry to help alien abductees. All three formed a friendship that lasts to this day. While in Roswell in 2007, Joe and David resolved to write this book and the ball started rolling.

Joe Jordan became interested back in the 1990s after reading a book that he picked up at an airport while he waited to board a flight to visit his brother in Alaska. After reading the book, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, Joe was convinced that there was something behind the UFO phenomenon and he felt led to investigate it. Joe is an in-depth sort of person so he didn't just start his investigation lightheartedly but plunged in with both feet. Joe was warned by someone that he should be careful because the UFO realm was filled with a variety people, among them a group known as the New Age. As Joe investigated he found that there were things that the New Age presented in their explanation of UFOs and pretty soon Joe found himself adhering to New Age philosophy.

After a series of events that God used to show Joe that he was heading down the wrong path, he finally saw the light and left the New Age and dedicated his life to Jesus Christ. His time in the New Age was not a total waste. The knowledge that he gained while in the clutches of that philosophy helped him to be spiritually street-smart, so to speak.

Before he became a New Age adherent, Joe joined an organization named MUFON, which stands for Mutual UFO Network and it wasn't long before he was a State Section Director for MUFON. After Joe became a Christian, the Lord started to show him how the alien abduction event was really an insidious event orchestrated by the enemies of God, and that those enemies are the fallen angels. Joe and a co-laborer named Wes started researching the alien abduction event and also showing people that these events weren't aliens from outer space, but they were fallen angels. Wes later left to move on to other things.

Just after that time Joe was introduced to a fellow named Guy Malone, who himself was a former alien abductee, and also Pastor Chris Ward, whose ministry in spiritual deliverance often dealt with bringing the message that alien abduction is really harassment by demons, and who also helped those people to become free. The three formed Alien Resistance, which still exists and is closely affiliated with Joe Jordan's, CE4 Research Group.

Since that time Joe has traveled to many different places to proclaim the message that alien abduction can be stopped by using the name of Jesus Christ in defiance against their attackers, and that a relationship with God the Father through Jesus Christ can end the harassment altogether.

Joe and David have spoken together on a few occasions. In July of 2008 they spoke together in Roswell in a talk titled, "Unholy Communion – The Unwanted Piece of the UFO Puzzle." This talk brought to the public arena the evidence that has been ignored by most of the UFO community; evidence that the fallen angels that disguise themselves as extraterrestrial entities are active in our present age to bring about what the Bible calls the "Great Delusion" that would come at the end of the age. Present at this conference, and invited upon the stage were people who had been harassed by these entities, and who had found freedom in the name and authority of Jesus Christ, and a relationship with God Almighty through Jesus.

This book that David and Joe present to you is a summation of their research. Some in both the UFO research field and even some in the church have found this information to cause discomfort because it might challenge preconceived notions that are embedded in their minds. We are reminded that the same thing was said about the message of Jesus Christ, whose message was ignored by most and accepted by few. David and Joe in no wise equate the importance of their message to that of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, but the message that they bring does tie a lot of loose ends together and it helps to explain current events as they are related to the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon, and they will help many to understand the bizarre and unimaginable things that will come to pass on this Earth very shortly.

So please, find a comfortable place to read, get a good beverage to enjoy and sit down and read this book. Be warned though, that you might want to buckle your seatbelts and put your trays in an upright position because you're going to be heading into some philosophical turbulence, but when you finish this book you will be glad that you chose this particular flight.

PROLOGUE

With the exception of just a scant few people, it usually happens at night. It can happen to just one individual, or a couple, or a whole family at the same time. The victims are taken to a bright room where strange-looking entities educate them and almost always perform medical procedures on them. The abductors have no racial preference, and although more women are taken than men, there is no predilection there either. Although the abductors seem to be interested in adults of child-bearing years, people of all ages are taken, from infants to the elderly. There seems to be no social preference either; people from all walks of life have found themselves in this predicament. The predicament referred to here is commonly known as Alien Abduction; where entities claiming to come from distant star systems whisk away people against their will in what most consider a most bizarre and outlandish phenomenon.

It is clear that something is happening to these "abductees." There are too many accounts by incredibly reliable witnesses, for anyone to write these occurrences off as mass hysteria, dreams, fantasy or mental illness. The media has thought it worthy enough to report on from time to time and quite a few documentaries have been produced on the subject. Hollywood and the television networks have thought the subject credible enough to produce movies and short stories for film about the subject, and the bookshelves of large book outlets are littered with books and magazines that talk about alien abduction. The subject has caused many to sit up and take notice and almost everyone who has studied this trend to any extent has to agree that it isn't going to go away.

Theories abound when it comes to this subject. If you asked any group of people what they think about alien abduction you will get a variety of different answers. Some will say that these entities are from outer space. Some will say that they are our progeny, come to us from many centuries in the future. Some will say that these entities are extra-dimensional beings and some say that they are really ascended masters who have evolved spiritually and have come to aid us in our own spiritual evolution. We've only breached on a few views that can be found in public opinion concerning this area under discussion.

When it comes to subjects that border on the fringe, there are three sources that people run to for answers. Those three schools are science, metaphysics and religion. In our modern times, most run to science to answer perplexing questions. Science is a good place to run, especially if the science is a true science, and not

something adulterated by the personal beliefs of the scientists. True scientific method is an honest and forthright way to answer many of the questions that we all have. It is because of true science that we have cures for many diseases that killed our ancestors and wiped out civilizations. It is because of true science that we have the technological advances that we have today. We tend to trust science because it has provided answers to many questions and the answers that they have produced are tangible; they can be held with the hands, seen with the eyes, heard with the ears, smelled with the nose and tasted with the mouth. There is nothing wrong with trusting in science, as long as science can be trusted.

When it comes to the subject of UFOs and alien abduction, science tends to fall a bit short when it comes to explanations. With no tangible proof; no saucer to touch, no live alien to examine and such, it appears that at this time UFOs and alien abductions are enigmatic to the majority of the population; they are a mystery wrapped around a riddle. Unless a person has had personal experience with such things; like touching a UFO or being examined by a strange entity in the middle of the night, then what is being heard is just supposition to the person hearing it.

Since UFOs and aliens tend to be elusive in character, it causes people to turn to other avenues to find the answers. When an unexplained object just disappears before the eyes, or when it disappears into solid ground these things are not normal and they do not obey the laws of physics. When an object flies at six thousand miles per hour and makes a ninety degree turn, this violates the laws of physics. When one object becomes two or more objects and then becomes one object again, this is not normal. When a supposed extraterrestrial walks through a wall to start an abduction episode, this is not normal. All these things cause the observer to turn to alternative belief systems for answers.

Back in an earlier day, anyone who saw such things would talk to their pastor, priest or rabbi. In most cases the person reporting to their religious advisor would be told that these things are from the devil, or were a devil, and a person would believe by faith that the person advising them was a reliable source of information. But today things are different and people want to know more than just the obvious things. They would want to know why their advisor thought that these things were demonic or angelic and it is sad to say that in most cases, the church and their leaders do not have appropriate answers to lend support to the person with the questions. Many in leadership just take the ostrich in the sand approach, hoping that the problem will go away by itself. Unfortunately, these things never do.

Because of this stigma, many people are forced to look for answers from other sources. The metaphysical camp, currently known as the New Age, has been quick to recognize that they need to provide the answers to these questions. The entities

that claim to be extraterrestrial have used this New Age avenue to indoctrinate all who come to them with questions. Through a vast web of psychics, channelers, automatic writers and the entities themselves, they have provided messages that have just enough religious appeal and spiritual malarkey, along with a scientific undertone to draw into their web not just the intellectually ignorant, but also those who are spiritually thirsty; those who are grasping in the darkness to accept the very first doctrine that soothes their itching ears.

As we touched upon lightly above, the Christian Church has dropped the ball when it comes to UFOs and alien abduction. This is probably a holdover from the early days of UFO lore when preposterous claims were made by those that had unusual UFO and alien encounters; people like George Adamski who came up with ridiculous claims and faked photos that looked like common hardware store items fused together to create what many took to be authentic pictures. There is no doubt in my mind that Adamski did have contact with entities, but these beings used him for a season, and when their claims could not be substantiated, they cast him off to play the fool all by himself. The sad thing is that those who had bonafide sightings, those who were really abducted and those who have suffered the ruining of their lives because of their episodes suffer because of the hoaxers that turn the phenomenon into a tabloid event.

While modern day society has for the most part accepted that there is probably an extraterrestrial reality, the Christian Church lags behind, sort of hoping that if they ignore the problem it will fade away like a dream when one awakens. We have seen many times how when the subject of UFOs is brought up to pastors, associate pastors and even the general congregants in a church body, the sounds of very low gasps occur accompanied by a general look of disapproval; or the smile that says that anyone who broaches this subject is borderline insane. It is a sad day when Christians turn a blind eye and close their ears to a societal trend that is so prevalent in all areas of our civilization and one that chips away at the very foundation of the Christian Faith.

Another sad thing is that in their ignorance of current trends, many believers in Jesus Christ are ignoring the obvious; that the phenomenon of UFOs, aliens and other such things is an area where we can be a genuine help to those who have questions. Unfortunately, it takes tragedies like the “Heaven’s Gate” mass suicide to occur before Christians finally open up their eyes to see that evil is allowed to thrive when good people do nothing to warn the unsuspecting and those trapped in lies and deception.

The Heaven’s Gate tragedy, although a very sad event, woke up many people to the UFO/Alien problem. To the secular world it showed that a person can believe

in the paranormal so strongly that he can give his life as a sacrifice for his belief. It showed that there is more than just the scientific research group in the UFO realm; that the belief in UFOs, their occupants and the message that they bring has actually become for many a religion. When many researchers started to investigate the UFO phenomenon deeper, they found that it is rife with false prophecies, messages from supposedly ascended masters and a whole mishmash of bizarreness.

Heaven's Gate was also a wakeup call for many of us who profess our faith in Jesus Christ, and who study the UFO phenomenon from a spiritual standpoint. We knew that there was a danger of cults coming into being with UFOs and aliens as the focus point of those belief systems. We did not however think that it would ever turn into a "Jonestown" sort of scenario. Three persons in particular, Joseph Jordan, David Ruffino and Jim Wilhelmsen were motivated into action in the middle to late 90's just around the time of Heaven's Gate. Through research, prayer and study of the scriptures we have come to the conclusion that these entities are not of extraterrestrial origin; but are of a more insidious nature.

Over the past ten years we have watched as quite a few independent Christian researchers have come onto the scene. They have done an excellent job at getting the news out to people, telling them that the "supposed" extraterrestrials are really messengers of deception, specifically, that the entities are fallen angels and demons. But the one thing that bothered us is that this is where most of them stopped their message. Sure, they tell of how these beings are insidious, evil and malevolent, but nobody that we know of has ever tried to provide a solution so that anyone can be rid of the intrusions of these entities in their lives. To us, this is akin to knowing that people are going to be robbed at gunpoint and warning them, and it is good that they are given the warning. But to us, we know for sure that we can stop the robbers from perpetrating their act. Maybe our friend doesn't know how to stop the act once he or she knows that it is coming. Maybe if we take one extra step, they will have safety and security. That is the premise that we operate under. We don't just tell you what alien abduction really is, we tell you how you can stop it forever; and once you have this information, you will stand ready like a soldier, prepared to fight and win against them and then fight again should they ever decide to come back to you.

Because we felt that we needed a presence to help people via the World Wide Web; we instituted a website in 2005 called the Alien Abduction Crisis Centers of America. Ever since its inception, the website has been a help to those who are in a crisis and need answers. Other counselors have heeded the call and over the course of the months that we've been active on the internet we've grown in numbers, having counselors in many regions of the United States, Canada and we even have a presence in England and Central Africa. We know that our effort will spread into

other states and countries in the days to come and that we'll see many more victories over alien abduction and demonic harassment. With that reality came the need to expand the counseling ministry and to change. Our scope is now global and our ministry isn't solely the alien abduction phenomenon. After countless letters from people desiring help from other aspects of the paranormal world we have now become the Paranormal and Alien Abduction Problem Solvers International. This will facilitate our message and expertise to many more people than before.

Both Joe and I hope that you will find this book educational and inspirational. It is our hope that once you realize who the aliens really are, and what they are; and that they can be overcome in a simple manner; that if you are someone who feels hopelessly trapped in this malady, you will find freedom. We have found freedom, and have helped others to find freedom and we hope to help you. If you already know the giver of life and freedom, than we hope that this book will educate you and even spur you on to join with us in our efforts to help others to become free. We'll also introduce you to some people who have found freedom from these entities. Their testimonies are proof that Jesus Christ can set you free, and that He is just what scripture promised to us:

The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound. (Isaiah 61:1)

It is important that we explain something that you will find in this book. Both Joe and I live in the United States. Over the years we have seen our land and the rest of the world become vastly multicultural. In a multicultural society there is a large variety of customs and beliefs and there are many who adhere to other religions and other gods. We would like to explain to the reader that when we refer to God, we are referring to Elohim (The God of all creation) and Yahweh (the Lord God of Israel) which we see as the same and who came to Earth as the man Jesus Christ. As you read this book you will see why we had to clarify our position in this matter, because the name of Jesus Christ is the only name that can end alien abduction. The proof is in the testimonies!

Now, let's take a look at this whole thing that is called alien abduction and how it can be overcome.

SECTION ONE: Alien Abduction – The Secular and Occult Views

CHAPTER ONE: What Is Alien Abduction?

A Brief Overview

When studying any phenomenon it is best to identify the matter at hand. When we have established that there is a subject to be studied, we then use scientific method to establish a criteria that will enable us to understand the subject that we want to gain more knowledge of. The scientific method seeks to explain the events of nature in a reproducible way. We can then use these reproductions to make useful models and predictions. It is done through observation of natural phenomena, and sometimes through experimentation that tries to simulate natural events under controlled conditions.

The scientific method is very useful in determining the disposition of natural phenomenon, and as long as strict adherence to the tenets of this method is held, the results are for the most part favorable and knowledge is attained. If however, there is another reality, one that is not physical; one that is not bound by the laws of physics and most of science, then scientific method finds itself wanting for answers. It is at this juncture that we have to turn to what many call the spiritual aspect of life and existence.

One of the ways to best find evidence is through the testimony of credible witnesses. All throughout modern UFO history there has been a cry for the testimony of witnesses who have veracity, individuals and groups who are recognized in their field of work. The insinuation was always that individuals like farmers, fishermen, truck drivers and other such persons that have witnessed unidentified flying objects, lacked the education to properly identify the strange lights that they constantly saw darting through the heavens. Truth be told though, the common man is quite capable of distinguishing things common from things uncommon because the common man spends a lot of time in the elements of this natural world. Supposedly, the problem has always been that the common man lacks the so-called “credentials” to be seen as credible by those with the proper accreditations. When UFO and entity reports were received from the common man, they were mostly referred to as imaginations, mass hysteria, or the misidentification of common manmade or natural objects.

There had been other sightings by so called “credible” people, but there was a stigma involved in these instances. That stigma came in the form or ridicule and in many cases, careers were affected negatively, and any credibility that the witnesses had before their UFO sighting report suddenly waned and died. All of a sudden their

peers and the media lumped them in with the then-perceived lunatic fringe. But as the years progressed, and many of these “credible” people dared to voice their sightings, and their beliefs that UFOs are real, the tide of public opinion shifted. It is to the credit of these individuals that they stepped up and risked their reputation and their credibility; and it is because of them that all the sightings by the common man are now taken much more seriously by everyone, in what is a steadily growing field of study, called Ufology.

Every year more and more reports come into research agencies such as MUFON (Mutual UFO Network) and NUFORC (National UFO Reporting Center). These reports are then added to databases where they are compared with other reports. What the sum total of these databases shows is that the experience known as “alien abduction,” is not slowing down; no, they prove that abductions are growing in number.

Public opinion polls are pretty accurate at determining trends and such, as long as those conducting the polls do so with an unbiased flair. Back in 1991 a Roper Poll was conducted in order to get an idea of how widespread the alien abduction phenomenon might be. The authors of the poll were Bud Hopkins, David Jacobs and Ron Westrum; all noted researchers in the alien abduction arena. Two of the authors, Hopkins and Jacobs, had researched nearly five hundred abduction cases in a period of seventeen years.

The poll consisted of eleven questions; all these questions being pertinent to the alien abduction phenomenon. The questions came as a result of the many alien abduction cases researched by this group prior to the poll and the most common “events” akin to alien abduction were listed in the poll. These events are: seeing a ghost (11 percent); seeing and dreaming about UFOs (7 percent and 5 percent respectively); leaving the body (14 percent). But the key questions were the “indicator questions,” which were: “waking up paralyzed with a sense of a strange person or presence or something else in the room” (18 percent); “feeling that you were flying through the air and you did not know why or how” (10 percent); “experience a period of time of an hour or more, in which you were apparently lost, but you could not remember why or where you had been” (13 percent); “seeing unusual lights or balls of light in a room without knowing what was causing them or where they came from” (8 percent); and “finding puzzling scars on your body and neither you nor anyone else remembering how you received them, or where you got them” (8 percent).

The poll included a word from noted professor of psychiatry, John Mack, from Harvard Medical School. In his letter he stressed that it was possible that hundreds of thousands of American men, women and children have been victims of

UFO/alien abductions. At the same time a letter was sent out to almost one hundred thousand psychiatrists, psychologists and others in the mental health field. The letter asked them to "be open to the possibility that something exists or is happening to their clients whom, in our traditional Western framework, cannot or should not be."

The conclusions of the poll are this: if a person answering the poll answered yes to four of the five indicator questions then the probabilities were pretty sure that the person was an "alien abductee." The math in this equation is pretty easy. Of the 5,947 people interviewed, 119 (2 percent) answered "yes" to four or five or the "indicator questions." The population of the United States at the time that the poll was taken was 185 million, therefore, since the poll was representative of the total population of the U.S. at the time, the sum total is that close to 4 million Americans (2 percent) had been abducted by extraterrestrials.

It can't be ignored that such a large population has probably had some kind of encounter with the so-called "extraterrestrial." As we delve further into this subject we will see that there is quite a bit of evidence to prove that these entities are not the benevolent saviors that they and their endorsers are purporting them to be.

Any time that a person starts to investigate this field of study they run into people who twist words and contort quotes to make those words or quotes fit into their agenda. It is because of this fact that in our studies of the UFO/abduction phenomenon, we tend to do a lot of word studies. We like to know specific word definitions so that we can present the correct meaning of words. Surprisingly, this helps to avert a lot of problems that might arise down the road. If a person can be made aware that some of the words that they are using are out of context with the true word meanings then it will cause them to wonder if the rest of their belief system is correct. For instance, many people ask me if I believe that people live on other planets. My answer to them is that the word "people" denotes human beings, so no, there aren't people on other planets. I can then tell them that if they are not humans then perhaps they are other things; even spiritual beings, fallen angels or demonic. The correct use of words is vital to fidelity in our speech and our presentation of what we believe.

With that in mind, we have to look at two words that are the main focus of our focus of study for this book. Those words are "alien abduction." I've elected to use the Merriam Webster Online Dictionary for our study. Let's first examine the word "alien," to see what the meaning really is:

Main Entry: **alien**

Function: noun

Date: 14th century

1: *a person of another family, race, or nation* ***2:*** *a foreign-born resident who has not been naturalized and is still a subject or citizen of a foreign country;*

broadly: a foreign-born citizen ***3: extraterrestrial*** ***4:*** *exotic*

It is pretty plain to see that the definition of "alien" as it relates to the context that we are studying refers to extraterrestrial beings. The word "extraterrestrial" means, outside, or not of the Earth.

With that fact established, we now have to take a look at "abduction," to see what its true meaning is:

Main Entry: **ab·duct** Pronunciation: \ab-ÈdYkt, Yb-; 2 also Èab-Ì\

Function: transitive verb

Etymology: Latin abductus, past participle of abducere, literally, to lead away, from ab- + ducere to lead

Date: 1825

1: to seize and take away (as a person) by force

Now we have established the meaning for "alien abduction." In the context of our studies, the meaning of this phrase is: "when an extraterrestrial (or a being purporting to be extraterrestrial) seizes and takes away a person (human being) by force."

Before we proceed it is important that everyone know that there is a nomenclature that is ascribed to UFO sightings. It is by this classification that UFO investigators categorize their findings:

—CE1 – A sighting of one or more unidentified flying objects

—CE2 – An observation of a UFO, and associated physical effects from the UFO

—CE3 – Where an entity is observed, with or without a UFO or where an entity is not observed but has some sort of intelligent communication with a human

—CE4 – A human is abducted by a UFO or its occupants

It is also important to note that a small percentage of communion accounts by those who have been visited aren't abductions, but they are answers to invitations made by the human agent in these accounts. Yes, it is true; some people request that these entities take them away for instruction and physical examination.

Our focus in this book is the alien abductee (the person who is taken against his or her will and subject to any number of experiments and/or examinations). One might ask what a typical abduction consists of. Are there any traits that are similar in all or most of those who are abducted? Toward the end of the 1980s a great number of alien abduction cases were collected. All in all, there was somewhere between six

hundred to seven hundred cases available for review. A folklorist named Thomas Bullard took three hundred of those cases and examined them quite intensely. Of those cases, he took 103 cases which he called "high information cases," and he studied them to see if there were any similarities in the cases. What he determined from his study (his essay reprinted in Clark, 1998) was the following:

1: CAPTURE (Abductees taken from room/area and find themselves in the "ship")

2: EXAMINATION (a seeming medical or physiological exam)

3: CONFERENCE ("Aliens" speak with abductees)

4: TOUR (Not always described but some abductees claim to be shown the ship)

5: LOSS OF TIME (Many abductees suffer from periods of time removed from their memory, often coming back to them later)

6: RETURN (Returned, sometimes with environmental changes)

7: THEOPHANY (a profound mystical experience, ergo a feeling of oneness with God or the universe)

8: AFTERMATH (Sickness, new phobias, ridicule, etc.)

If you were to go into a UFO conference anywhere in the world and were to take a poll of the attendees there you would get a variety of different answers to your questions. Let's say that the question posed to those attending the conference was this: "State what you think the purpose of Alien Abduction is." There would be a variety of answers to this question, but when all the answers were shaken and sifted you would come up with two camps. The first camp would be the larger camp. That camp would say that extraterrestrials are coming into our rooms at night and abducting us in order to study us. They want to take our DNA in order to either renew their own biologic structures, or they want to manipulate our DNA to make us better; to give us an evolutionary advancement. Although they might see abduction as evil and as an intrusion into the lives of the victims, they would see it as beneficial in the long run for the human race. Interestingly enough, in ancient cultures here on Earth, human sacrifice was seen as beneficial in the long run; the sacrifice of the one for the many, this too (in most cases) against the free will of the one being sacrificed.

The second group would be in the minority. They would see alien abduction as

malevolent; an invasion of the human rights of the person being abducted. Many questions mull around the minds of those in this group. They wonder why beings purported to be so well-advanced from humans would have to abduct so many people. Couldn't they learn about human DNA structure from a small group of abductees? If they're benefactors, then why abduct people when you could get willing people to cater to their needs? Why travel the untold miles to Earth in order to indoctrinate humans in theosophy when it is so readily available here already? This group sees something sinister in the act of alien abduction and deep down inside, they're thinking of ways to make it stop. Well, the authors of this book and many others know of the only way to make it stop and we will explain it in later chapters.

The aspirations of the first group should not be written off as the wishes of fanatics or a misguided focus. It has always been the desire of mankind to live in a world without the common maladies that plague our planet. We all hope and pray for a world without sickness, famine and war. We're all looking for that one figure, or that one group that has all the answers and can solve all the problems. Mankind has always been quick to hold fast to the first of these that comes on the scene in any one era; and with the exception of just one, the result of that all the others have been tragic in the ending.

Mankind always tends to go in one direction when it is trying to make some sort of semblance of itself. First, an idea comes to mind and after a while that idea becomes a philosophy. The creators of the philosophy tend to think that their philosophy is the answer to the ills of mankind. This is true whether it is in a family, a village, a state, a country or global. There are those who accept the philosophy without question, those who accept it begrudgingly and those who refuse to accept it.

Where the abductee of supposed extraterrestrials is concerned, there exists many facets. From what we've determined, there are four groups of abductees. The first type of abductee is the person who actually welcomes the experience. This person has seen the abduction experience as being glorious, either through the written word or through the medium of the screen and they want to be part of the process. In many cases these people have always wanted to attain a degree of notoriety but have never been able to attain that stature. The thought of being an ambassador for a UFO reality in their lifetime is alluring and this compels them to want to be taken. In a sense, the first snatching away by the "space brothers" could be compared to an abduction, simply because it would happen at an undesignated time and place and the person would be taken unawares, but after the first experience the visitations are welcomed and/or sought out.

One of the things that Joe Jordan, Jim Wilhelmsen and I do each July is to go to Roswell, New Mexico to get a table at the UFO Convention there. At this table we hand out literature to everyone who will take it from us. The literature tells people about the spiritual side of the UFO and specifically the alien abduction phenomenon. For the most part people are pretty accepting and they accept our materials and the "anti-alien" stickers that we give away. However, there is a minority of people who are offended by the literature we hand out. Each year we are told by this minority that they think that the aliens are good and they go on to tell us that they hope to be abducted someday. Sadly, more than 90 percent of these people are children in their teen years and they make their statements while in the company of their parents, who remain silent while the children make their comments.

It is pretty well known in the UFO realm, and this is backed up by our research, that all abductees have had some sort of involvement with the occult, either through direct involvement or through the involvement of a close blood relative. Most of us, when we were younger, did experiment with some sort of occult device, whether it was consulting a psychic, reading cards, playing with Ouija Boards, consulting the Magic 8 Ball, or even reading horoscopes. These things opened up doors for us. But, in our group of friends, there was always at least one person who, although they joined in the fun, also took these actions seriously because they were actually looking for answers from what they sensed was a viable source of information. This sort of person, when presented with the possibility of alien abduction, will jump at the opportunity with excitement and yearning.

The second type of person, at the onset of their abductions, feel fear and sometimes terror regarding their experiences. They know that what is happening to them is not at all normal, and the sight of little gray beings with large black almond-shaped eyes, or reptilian beings, or insectoid-looking creatures frighten them. But as has been the case with so many abductions, they are told not to worry; not to fear because they have a purpose, a job to complete in the great cosmic evolution that is soon coming upon the Earth. And although the message is meant to calm them, and it does to some degree, they still feel the terror. At some time though in their whole process of abduction experiences, they begin to acquire a strange kind of love or respect for their abductors, what those in the psychological practices have labeled as Stockholm Syndrome. Stockholm Syndrome is a psychological response sometimes seen in an abducted hostage, in which the hostage shows signs of loyalty and/or affection to the hostage taker, without regard to the danger in which the hostage has been placed.

Some alien abductees have been told that they are special, that they are needed to spread the word of impending disaster. Other abductees have been told that the

sperm and ovum that are taken during their kidnappings are being used to rejuvenate the alien race, which needs human DNA to stay alive. Still others are told that mankind is in need of an evolutionary jump in order to survive the coming changes on the Earth. In either case, some scenario is given to the abductee in order to gain their trust and their respect. The abductee then thinks that they are special, singled out from all mankind for the wondrous responsibility of being an emissary between the aliens and humankind. Of course this is a form of brainwashing. Interestingly, many cults and many religions use this same form of manipulation to gain adherents and to keep those members indoctrinated and excessively active so that they don't have the time to reflect on what has actually occurred to them. Later in this book we will present a variety of similarities between alien abduction and what is known as SRA: Satanic Ritual Abuse.

The third group of abductees is the one which has people who never seem to cope well with their alien abduction experiences. We've personally gotten calls from people who have been plagued by abduction for months, years and even decades and no matter how hard they try to run from the experience, it always plagues them. Through countless abduction experiences they have become accustomed to the event. They do not wish for the events to continue, but have resigned themselves to a hopeless condition, in many ways akin to slavery. They want to be free, and might have tried the many trumped-up claims that are out there, but to no avail.

We will introduce the fourth group a little later in this chapter. First, we need to take a look at some of the dreadfully insidious things that are done to alien abductees during their encounters. This is important because the message and mission of any group is only as good as the fruit that it produces.

"Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. You will know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes from thornbushes or figs from thistles? Even so, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a bad tree bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. Therefore by their fruits you will know them." Jesus Christ – Matthew 7:15–20

We really cannot proceed without citing the work of Dr. Karla Turner. She was widely respected in the UFO community for her research in alien abduction. She was a scholar and professional educator, having earned a Ph.D. in Old English studies and she taught at the university level in Texas for well over ten years. In 1988 Dr. Turner, her husband, and her son underwent a shocking set of experiences and recollections that forced them to recognize that they were all abductees. After this revelation Dr. Turner ended her teaching career and began an incredibly in-

depth research into the alien abduction phenomenon. Dr. Turner published several books on the subject and many papers. Here is one of the papers titled, *Are Aliens Negative From Our Point Of View?*

If "abduction" reports can be believed—and there is no reason to doubt the honesty of the reporters—the abduction phenomenon includes the following details:

1) Aliens can alter our perception of our surroundings.

2) Aliens can control what we think we see. They can appear to us in any number of guises, and shapes.

3) Aliens can take us—our consciousness—out of our physical bodies, disable our control of our bodies, install one of their own entities, and use our bodies as vehicles for their own activities before returning our consciousness to our bodies.

4) Aliens can be present with us in an invisible state and can make themselves only partially visible.

5) Abductees receive marks on their bodies other than the well-known scoops and straight-line scars. These other marks include single punctures, multiple punctures, large bruises, three- and four-fingered claw marks, and triangles of every possible sort.

6) Female abductees often suffer serious gynecological problems after their alien encounters, and sometimes these problems lead to cysts, tumors, cancer of the breasts and uterus, and to hysterectomies.

7) Aliens take body fluids from our necks, spines, blood veins, joints such as knees and wrists, and other places. They also inject unknown fluids into various parts of our bodies.

8) A surprising number of abductees suffer from serious illnesses they didn't have before their encounters. These have led to surgery, debilitation, and even death from causes the doctors can't identify.

9) Some abductees experience a degeneration of their mental, social, and

spiritual well-being. Excessive behavior frequently erupts, such as drug abuse, alcoholism, overeating, and promiscuity. Strange obsessions develop and cause the disruption of normal life and the destruction of personal relationships.

10) Aliens show a great interest in adult sexuality, child sexuality, and in inflicting physical pain on abductees.

11) Abductees recall being instructed and trained by aliens. This training may be in the form of verbal or telepathic lessons, slide shows, or actual hands-on instruction in the operation of alien technology.

12) Abductees report being taken to facilities in which they encounter not only aliens but also normal-looking humans, sometimes in military uniforms, working with the alien captors.

13) Abductees often encounter more than one sort of alien during an experience, not just the grays. Every possible combination of gray, reptoid, insectoid, blond, and widow's peak have been seen during single abductions, aboard the same craft or in the same facility.

14) Abductees—"virgin" cases—report being taken to underground facilities where they see grotesque hybrid creatures, nurseries of hybrid humanoid fetuses, and vats of colored liquid filled with parts of human bodies.

15) Abductees report seeing other humans in these facilities being drained of blood, being mutilated, flayed, and dismembered, and stacked, lifeless like cords of wood. Some abductees have been threatened that they, too, will end up in this condition if they don't cooperate with their alien captors.

16) Aliens come into homes and temporarily remove young children, leaving their distraught parents paralyzed and helpless. In cases where a parent has been able to protest, the aliens insist that, "The children belong to us."

17) Aliens have forced there human abductees to have sexual intercourse with aliens and even with other abductees while groups of aliens observe these performances. In such encounters, the aliens have sometimes disguised themselves in order to gain the cooperation of the abductee, appearing in such forms as Jesus, the Pope, certain celebrities, and even the dead spouses of the abductees.

18) Aliens perform extremely painful experiments or procedures on abductees, saying that these acts are necessary but give no explanation why… Painful genital and anal probes are performed, on children as well as adults.

19) Aliens make predictions of an imminent period of global chaos and destruction. They say that a certain number of humans…will be "rescued" from the planet in order to continue the species, either on another planet or back on Earth after the destruction is over. Many abductees report they don't believe their alien captors and foresee instead a much more sinister use of the "rescued" humans.

"In every instance from this list, there are multiple reports from unrelated cases, confirming that such bizarre details are not the product of a single deranged mind. These details are convincing evidence that, contrary to the claims of many UFO researchers, the abduction experience isn't limited to a uniform pattern of events. This phenomenon simply can't be explained in terms of cross-breeding experiments or scientific research into the human physiology… Before we allow ourselves to believe in the benevolence of the alien interaction, we should ask, "Do enlightened beings need to use the cover of night to perform good deeds?" Do they need to paralyze us and render us helpless to resist? Do angels need to steal our fetuses? Do they need to manipulate our children's genitals and probe our rectums? Are fear, pain, and deception consistent with high spiritual motives?" (Karla Turner Archives – www.karlaturner.org)

Prior to citing Dr. Turner's work we placed a scripture on the page. In the scripture, Messiah Jesus was telling us to beware of false prophets. He was telling us that it is pretty easy to tell the counterfeit from the genuine. He told us that trees produce fruits according to their own kind. An apple tree will produce apples, a lemon tree will produce lemons, so on and so forth. He also told us to beware of those who come to us like sheep and to examine those people to see if they are really wolves dressed in sheep's clothing. This is the litmus test for examining the claims of those who abduct human beings and whisk them away into their supposed interstellar vehicles. The list that Dr. Turner provides shows that the intent of these entities is not honorable nor is it noble; but it is insidious, sadistic and without a doubt, satanic.

The creator (God) has placed a certain degree of discernment in each individual. This discernment allows us to discriminate between danger and safety; basic good and evil and many other things. In all the case studies that we have read

and in all the people that we counsel, we can attest that the beginning of the abduction lifestyle for all of the abductees starts out with fear and the manifestation of the "flight or fight" instinct that is built into every one of us. Words like "fear," "dread," "panic," "anger," and "rage," and all other synonyms to those words are used in describing the beginning encounters with the entities that try to pass themselves off as extraterrestrial visitors. What is noteworthy is that from most of the literature that is out there and in most of the case studies that are available for review, the first thing that the abductor entities try to quell is the flight and fight syndrome. Some might say that it is because they want cooperative subjects to examine, or that maybe they cannot understand this emotion. We feel that the reason why they try to subdue emotion during their procedures is that the clear and present danger of a person crying out the name of the only person (Jesus Christ) that can save them from their plight. After all, people who are pacified often forget about God and their condition at that present moment.

The fourth group of alien abductees is the one that has the people who want to fight against these entities and they want to win. They want to retain their sovereignty and will fight at all costs to retain it. It is interesting to note that one of the first things that the abductors do to their captives is to appeal to the captives' humanity, telling them that what they are enduring is for the good of humanity, or for an evolutionary enhancement, or any other number of altruistic endeavors. The captives are told that they are special, a chosen people and that they hold a special place in the final outcome of all humanity. With this notion placed into the mind of the captive, that captive becomes enamored with the captor and pride is satiated. Once the fear is removed they are able to manipulate the captive's mind, then his soul and later his spirit. But the people of group four are not the type to acquiesce to this type of manipulation.

The fourth group of abductees doesn't fall for all the demonic scatology. They are able to reason for themselves (or more importantly with divine help) that no matter what these entities tell them, any supposed race advanced enough to come to Earth should act with a more civilized, loving, and caring demeanor. These people see things in black and white and to them there are no grays (no pun intended). To them, if it walks like a duck, and it quacks like a duck and it swims like a duck, it is a duck; it is not a kangaroo that professes to be a duck.

The people of group four are never the kind to fall in with the status quo and they aren't the type that surrenders when things get tough. Many have searched for months or years for a solution for their dilemma. They will try one thing and another to rid themselves of alien harassment. Some of the things that they try seem ridiculous to an outsider who is looking at them, but when a person is desperate he

will try each and every thing to eliminate the source of trouble.

From our experience we have determined that those in group four fall into one of two categories. We can make this statement because we have worked with people who have fallen into one category or the other. The categories are as follows:

1: Those who want answers that will cater to their preconceived notions of what the problem is and what they hope will alleviate the problem on their terms.

2: Those who want answers and are willing to accept the only answer that works; that answer being that the name of Jesus Christ thwarts abductions and a relationship with God the Father through Jesus Christ ends alien abduction.

We get phone calls and e-mails on a regular basis from people who visit any number of our websites, but mostly those who visit our Alien Abduction Crisis Centers of America. It is not uncommon to be woken up by a phone call in the early morning hours or during the defining moment of a drama on television, by someone who has been having trouble with alien harassment or abduction. Since this is our ministry and our job as counselors we are delighted to take these calls and/or to answer the e-mails that come in on a regular basis. Most of the calls or e-mails that we get are from people who are tired of the visitations during the night by these entities and they want it to stop so that they can get on with their lives. They are tired of having their bodies probed, their seminal fluid or ovum extracted and they're tired of being treated like laboratory animals. They have heard the lies from these entities who tell them that they are special and that they are part of a scenario that will soon play out on planet Earth. Frankly, they are tired of being kidnapped, raped, and manipulated and they want it to stop. They want to get on with their lives and to be normal again (a phrase used many times in conversation). Just about everyone who calls us or mails us has come to the realization that these entities are malevolent, they're self-seeking, and that the feelings of fear, anxiety, dread and other things that the victims experience is a well-founded realization.

The one thing that they all agree on is that they have tried everything and nothing has worked to keep these entities away, or to even make them stop for just a little while. They want answers, they want relief, they want freedom and they want it now. The victims of alien abduction want freedom that lasts. They've tried many things; visiting psychics (which always makes things worse instead of better); they've tried the foil hats (yes, this really does happen); they've tried everything that

they have found written on the internet or in books; and they have tried taking the advice of all sorts of religious leaders (eastern religions, shamans, wiccans, etc) only to find that they still are visited in the nighttime by grays, Nordics, reptilians, insectoids and others who tell them that they are loved, are needed, and have a purpose for the alien agenda and a New Age Earth.

In order to illustrate the person who calls and wants answers that will fit his/her notion of how they hope the problem will be solved, we feel the necessity to illustrate a couple of accounts where a person called us for help. We will use fictitious names for these people.

Bob called me (David) one night as I was relaxing. He asked if he had reached a counselor at the AACCOA and I replied that he had done so. I asked Bob to tell me how I could help him. Bob told me that he had been abducted many times and that he was getting tired of it. Right after saying that, he told me that he that he had grown accustomed to the aliens being in his life, but he knew that some of them were evil and some were friends. He said that he was constantly in contact with these entities whose voices he heard in his ears all the time. I asked him to tell me everything that he felt comfortable telling me and he took me up on the offer.

After a while I asked Bob if he really wanted freedom from the entities and he told me that he did. I told Bob that we have found (and have many testimonies proving) that the name of Jesus Christ thwarts abductions and that a personal relationship with the God in Jesus Christ enables people to be free from abduction as a life's pattern. During the time that Bob had "spilled hit guts out" to me Jesus had revealed to me that this person was possessed and this was proved out to me during the conversation. Right after I told Bob about the name of Jesus and about having a relationship with Jesus, Bob's conversation with me started to get strange. First he started to twist my words around, telling me that I said things that I had never said. Then, Bob started to get anxious in his speech, like he wanted to get me off the phone. So I asked Bob if the aliens were talking to him right at that moment. The Holy Spirit revealed to me that they were talking to Bob. I explained to Bob that the voices that he was hearing were the voices of demons and he denied that.

Well, we went back and forth a little bit, Bob trying to remain nervously friendly. So, taking God's lead I told Bob again that he needed to let Jesus free him from these entities and that Jesus was the only way that this was going to happen. Then, I told Bob, "They just told you that this is all bovine scatology, right?" Bob was quiet for a moment and then he told me that those were the exact words that they said to him. After this, I told Bob that the voices he heard were the voices of demons and that they only meant him harm and that they are liars. Bob got silent again and I asked Bob, "They just told you that I am the liar and that the Jesus thing

will never work, isn't that right Bob?" Again he told me that I said what they said word for word. Well, this went on for a few more questions and then I had to ask Bob an important question.

I said, "So Bob, I have a pretty good batting average in all of this, right?" Bob told me that he was amazed at what had just happened. I told Bob that it wasn't me, but it was the Holy Spirit of God that gave me insight into what the demons were telling him. I then told Bob that it was quite clear that since God was able to tell me what the demons were telling him, it could not be disputed that God was more powerful than those demons. Bob could not resist and he had to agree that I was telling the truth. I told Bob that since God was more powerful He could make the "aliens" go away. Bob agreed that God was more powerful and that he wanted the voices to stop and the visitations to end. I told him that he just needed to accept Jesus into his heart and life and to live for Him and that would happen. It was then that Bob dropped a bomb on everything. He said that he wanted relief, but he just wasn't ready for the "religious" thing. I told Bob that it wasn't religion, but a relationship with God Almighty. Bob was adamant, he didn't want to live for Jesus and he wasn't going to ask Jesus into his life. I told Bob that I couldn't make him receive Jesus Christ, but that I would always be available for him and that I would keep him in prayer. I told him that although he rejects God, he could not keep me from praying for him and that I would continue to do just that. I also told him that the website explained salvation clearly and that he should go there and read it. Bob thanked me and the conversation ended.

Bob was a prime example of a person who wanted freedom and heard the way to freedom but he didn't want the freedom because it meant submitting to Jesus Christ. He reminded me of the felon who upon release from prison commits another crime so that he can go back to comfortable and familiar surroundings. Bob is still in my prayers.

Stella was another person who called me one day out the blue. I answered the phone and she asked if she had reached the alien abduction place. I told her that she indeed had and asked her how I could help her. She told me that she had been having abduction experiences for many years and that they still made her uncomfortable. She said that she wanted it to end and I said that we could help her.

Stella sounded excited about ending the abduction experiences and she told me to proceed with my talk. I told Stella that the entities that where bothering her were spiritual, specifically fallen angels and/or demons. She didn't discount what I was saying and seemed to agree with me. I told her that she needed to use the name of Jesus to stop the abductions. She said that she had said the name of Jesus before and that it had never worked for her. It was then that I decided that we needed to find out

who she thought Jesus was. As we talked back and forth she revealed to me that she had seen Jesus before and that she believed that Jesus lived inside all of us. She further went on to tell me that if we tried hard enough we could all become Jesus.

I was now aware of the Jesus that Stella was referring to. I now knew why Jesus never helped her when she cried out for him. She was crying out for the New Age Jesus, or what the New Age refers to as "The Christ Consciousness." This is not the Jesus Christ of the Bible and has nothing to do with the Son of God that Christians venerate. When she was crying out to her Jesus it wasn't going to answer because her Jesus is demonic, probably one of the fallen angels that masquerade as the real Jesus; the one that claims that he wasn't anyone special and that he's just one of the many "enlightened" people who have come to Earth in the same league with Buddha, Mohammed, Krishna and a multitude of others.

I couldn't let this go on and I had to tell her that she believed a lie. I told her that the real Jesus is God and that He came to Earth to die for sinners. Stella then went into a New Age diatribe, telling me that there is no such thing as sin and that everyone has good and bad inside of them and that they can work out their own karma. Stella then became angry with me and told me that she was going to hang up. I asked her to wait just one moment. In that moment I gave her the gospel and told her that I would be praying for her and that she should remember that if she was ever abducted, she should call on the true Jesus Christ and that this would work for her. I told her that when this did work for her, she would realize that she was wrong and that Jesus Christ is forgiving and would accept her if she came to him and asked Him into her life. I told her that now that she had the truth she was responsible to act upon the knowledge that she had just acquired. There was a click and she was gone.

Now, from the two stories above it might sound like there is hopelessness in our work, but that is not true. The cases above were just two examples of how some people are in misery and when presented with the answer to come out of their misery, they run away because they think that they will have to change their lifestyle and become one of those boring Bible thumpers that have turned them off so many times in the past, but that is not true. It was their pride that kept them from accepting the answer to their dilemma. Some people like to wallow in their troubles, especially when the answer to their problems doesn't fit into their preconceived notions of how problems can be alleviated.

For every person who refuses to accept help from us, there are dozens who want to find relief from alien abduction. You will be able to read about some of them later on in this book. You will see how God had taken shattered lives and healed them by His Spirit. You will see how ordinary people used the Name Above All Names to find liberty and freedom from alien abduction/demonic oppression.

We think that from what we have seen so far that the act of alien abduction isn't just a fad that's occurring, nor it is something imaginary. It is not something that is made up by members of some lunatic fringe; no, it is real and it is a danger to everyone in our society. We think that it is a major part of the "strong delusion" that has come upon the Earth. It fits perfectly into the end time scenario and is a wonderful way to pull people away from the true God and point mankind to the false messiah who will deceive the whole world. Let's explore alien abduction further, shall we?

CHAPTER TWO: Secular View: Scientific View

Nuts and Bolts – A Secular Religion Confusing

It may come as a surprise to some reading this that there are a variety of different viewpoints in the UFO investigatory realm regarding alien abduction. When all things are shaken down and pressed together we are left with three categories. The first category is the religious category. This group consists of most of the world's religions and it also contains the New Age religion, which in itself contains all the occult beliefs. All of the groups that make up the religious category, to some degree will attest that there is a religious component to alien abduction and all will in some way or another agree that there is a binding factor that unites them all together where the extraterrestrials are concerned. Surprisingly, many who profess to be Christians fall into this category too, having bought into all of the rhetoric that they have heard from various sources whether on television or by some other form of media.

The second category is the Christian category. This category consists of Bible-believing individuals that take the Bible literally and they, to some degree, have been given divine revelation of the nature of the UFO phenomenon and the beings that purport to be of extraterrestrial origin. This group of people is thought of as being dogmatic and unbending in their belief. They're often ostracized by the other groups because they tend to take on an air of knowing the truth about UFOs and alien abduction and are often accused of not looking at all the evidence before making their determination. They wear the stigma that Christians have worn ever since their religion came into being; that being that they are the only ones who know the real truth. Through our investigation we'll see if perhaps there is some foundation to that claim.

The third category is the secular category. The vast majority of those who take interest in or study the UFO and/or alien abduction phenomenon fall into this group. These people are the nuts and bolts type of people. They are the "show me" type of individual and they demand hard and tangible evidence.

It must be emphasized that a person can (and many do) fall into more than one category. A person in category three can still look into the esoteric side of the phenomenon and find some interest in those things, and they might even see some validity in what some would call the spiritual aspect of alien abduction. On the other hand, a person in category two might believe that the alien abduction experience is mostly spiritual in nature but they have to admit that there is trace evidence that is left by UFOs and that people who are abducted sometimes have strange marks on their bodies and such. But the interesting thing is that while those in categories one

and three can have a meeting of the minds, so to speak, they will most of the time reject the claims of those in category two. We will explain later in this book why that tends to happen.

Category three people, or the secular view people, as we said before, are hands-on type of people. Many scientists and others who are scientifically orientated fall into this category. Science, when it is practiced with fidelity, is a wonderful thing. It is because of science that we have many of the technological marvels that we use today. It is because of scientific ingenuity that we can whisk around the world in a matter of hours whereas it used to take days and months to do so. It is because of science that many of us live to ripe old ages. Yes, science has benefited mankind to a great degree and we should be thankful that many of the conveniences that we have today came into being by those who practiced sound scientific method.

For those who might not be familiar with the Scientific Method, we will look at its definition found in the Merriam Webster's dictionary. The definition of scientific method is: *principles and procedures for the systematic pursuit of knowledge involving the recognition and formulation of a problem, the collection of data through observation and experiment, and the formulation and testing of hypotheses.*

When looking at what the secular world believes about alien abduction we have to first look at what they think about UFOs and who they think the aliens really are. This is crucial for the simple fact that the UFO is what many believe to be the conveyance of the extraterrestrial visitors. We too have to know whom we are dealing with when it comes to the entities purporting to be visitors and/or benefactors of a cosmic nature.

Anyone who practices good science would have to admit that where UFOs and alien abduction are concerned, that there is really no hard evidence to substantiate the claims of many, that alien abduction is the act of visitors from other worlds. The only evidence that could be presented is the testimony of these entities and we would have to be certain that they are trustworthy and that they do not have some ulterior motive that they are covertly trying to perpetuate. For many years there were witnesses to UFO sightings, and the factors that led to the veracity of their testimony were that they were people with some degree of education, that they had some sort of training to discriminate between what is real and what isn't real, and that they were honest and upstanding individuals of their community. Based on that litmus test, we would have to demand that the "visitors" would have to live up to the same high standards. To date, this criteria has not been met by the so-called "extraterrestrials," and it probably never will be simply because their actions are covert in nature and occult in design.

In the UFO research realm people seem to look at things from a rearward sort of view. What is meant here is that people are looking for physical evidence that the extraterrestrials exist. As we have seen, science operates in that vein. It must be stressed that there is nothing wrong with this way of doing things, and in a physical world, situations dictate that most things be approached from this angle.

We cannot deny that the UFO phenomenon is one that operates in the shadows. Even with some of the physical evidence that might exist, there is still need for much more physical proof before a solid synopsis can be formed about the subject in general. When things in this life do not seem clear, certain people tend to formulate contingency plans to deal with the case in hand. The military forces of the world are experts at formulating contingency plans. They postulate many scenarios and makes plans to deal with the many aspects of each scenario. The current "War on Terror" is a great example of how this works. The governments of the world have think-tanks where incredibly smart minds formulate how the next terror attack might happen. They try to think like a terrorist so that they can outsmart and hopefully outmaneuver them before they attack. During each conflict, and between conflicts, countless hours are spent by tacticians who try to outguess the enemy and to see what makes them tick.

How does this relate to the UFO phenomenon and alien abduction? Well, the first thing that researchers need to do is to identify what the UFO is. We have to always remember that just because something is called a UFO it doesn't mean that it is a vehicle from another world. Many times a UFO is identified and it becomes an IFO, or identified flying object. Many times, when the sighting is wholly investigated, it is found that what appeared to be an object of unknown origin was actually a flock of geese or a weather balloon; something either manmade or of an explainable natural occurrence.

Questions remain when an object cannot be explained, and these are the sightings that cause researchers to speculate as to the nature of what has been witnessed. If one is to retain fidelity in their research they have to consistently examine the foundation of their research. True scientific research comes to conclusions by way of undeniable evidence and hard fact. Operating outside of these perimeters leads to conjecture at best, and heartfelt belief in conjecture is more akin to religion than to science. This is summed up by the Apostle Paul when he said, "Now **faith** is the substance of things hoped for, the **evidence** of things not seen" (Hebrews 11:1).

Considering all the things that have been said in this chapter, the next question is, what do modern scientific researchers of UFOs say that the phenomenon is?

There are a variety of different conjectures as to what UFOs actually are according to scientific minds. Here are a few:

—They are conveyance visitors from other star systems or galaxies in our universe.

—They are conveyances for beings from other realities – parallel universes and such.

—They are conveyances for time travelers from our future.

—They are craft from hidden civilizations on Earth – Atlantis or inner Earth.

—They are super-secret inventions of mankind – Black-ops or Area 51 craft etc.

The five categories listed above pretty well take into account all the major areas of origin where the physical nature of UFOs is concerned. These are the areas of study for those who consider the UFO phenomenon to be purely physical and these are the topics that those who are strictly scientifically minded will take with any seriousness.

Visitors from the Cosmos:

This is the most common belief held by the majority of those who see the UFO phenomenon as being nuts and bolts and tangible. They take into account that there have supposedly been crashes of these craft, that the craft are sometimes picked up on radar and that the craft leave physical traces when they land or come into contact with tangible things like trees and the ground. They also take very seriously the testimony of credible witnesses who have witnessed these craft in the distance, up close, or even from inside. In recent years the testimony obtained by hypnotherapists has been accepted as credible evidence and that evidence often has not only information about the craft, but the entities that pilot these craft. The secular people who search for the truth without qualm accept the testimony of eyewitnesses and the transcripts obtained by hypnotherapy, but they refuse vehemently the testimony of those who have overcome by the blood of Jesus Christ. We hope to be vessels that bring about a change in all that.

The belief that these beings come from other star systems and/or galaxies

comes really from the hope that they can be some sort of salvation for mankind. Humanity has cast away the only savior that can save them, and in their humanist effort they cry out for another savior. Now on that alone there would be no foundation to what they believe. Since the craft that they operate fly though the air with incredible physics-defying maneuvers it is natural to come to the conclusion that they have entered the atmosphere from other places. This further adds to the notion that they come from the cosmic realm. The notion that cements their premise firm in their minds is the testimony that is given from the aliens via abductees who have been given educated lectures from these beings, and perhaps those in the metaphysical world who receive messages from the beings via automatic writing and trancelike states.

Remember now that true scientists accept only what they can see and what can be reproduced in a laboratory. In a courtroom if you were up on a witness stand and the examining attorney asked you why you believed something to be true, and you said it was because another person told you it is true, it would be dismissed because it is hearsay evidence. Science is the same way; don't believe it until you see it and can make it happen again yourself. Yet those in the scientific community who believe in UFOs do the exact opposite.

Many in the scientific community who believe in UFOs have their premise upheld by those in that same community. Much in the same way a Christian is only going to listen to the words of a fellow Christian, especially a learned one, those in the scientific field hold their elders in high esteem and hold their views to be canon. Two scientists, J. Allen Hynek, and Stanton Friedman are good examples of those who have promoted an extraterrestrial origin for the beings that are associated with UFOs. Hynek passed away many years ago, but his profession was that of an astrophysicist. Friedman is a nuclear physicist by profession. Both men are very intelligent and excelling in their fields and held to the extraterrestrial hypothesis for UFOs and their inhabitants. There is some evidence that Hynek exchanged his view to embrace the trans-dimensional hypothesis although UFO scientists refute that vehemently. People like these two men are held in high esteem, much like well-known religious leaders are held in esteem in religious circles. One might even say that these men are the evangelists and apologists of the UFO realm.

For many years people who claimed to have been abducted by aliens were sort of written off, even by the crème de la crème of the UFO investigatory community. Their claims were simply too outlandish to be investigated by serious researchers. The stories of being floated out of bed, through walls and being taken onto spacecraft didn't fit with physics, and the stories of rape and sexual manipulation seemed almost pornographic to many. The thing that really seemed way out in left

field was the message that many of the abductees were bringing back to the table. Stories came to light of the abductee being set before a large television screen on the spacecraft where they were shown pictures of future events on Earth. These events included human tragedies and cataclysmic Earth changes that would soon befall the Earth, but could be averted if humans trusted the aliens and changed their ways. The aliens preached a New Age message, telling their captives that mankind needed to experience a spiritual evolution so that the forces of Earth and the whole universe could come into sync again. Mankind, according to the beings, is living in a bad vibratory pattern, and things like Christianity, Jesus, and the Bible are old ideas that are holding humanity back.

With this message to mankind coming so rapidly and from so many people it forced scientists to take notice, but to stand away from the message. It was interesting to read, but it had no foundation and more importantly, it held philosophical or religious connotations. There was another belief that scientists held on to quite tightly, but in recent years they have been seeing as being full of holes, and that is the theory of evolution. There are really only two ways to believe how life and the universe came to be. Either you believe that a compassionate and loving creator made the universe, or you believe that it all happened by accident, or what Dr. Mark Eastman affectionately calls, "from the goo, through the zoo, to you." Of course many scientists saw through the theory of evolution and that it had too many flaws to be a viable source of life, but they could not believe in God because their hard hearts will not permit that. So, when the aliens started to spout off new lies of how they came to Earth millions of years ago and seeded the Earth with life, it was a happy day for science. Suddenly evolution made sense to them because now there were actually beings that were acting as our creators. They never stopped to wonder who created the aliens and who created the creators of the aliens and so on and so forth.

So now we see that through their claims, the aliens are seen as saviors to those in the UFO community. According to them, the aliens made life, they nurtured evolution along and now they are watching over us. This premise is used by many in the UFO community to justify the diabolical acts of the aliens.

In July of 2008 Joe Jordan and I were speakers at a conference in Roswell, New Mexico. Our talk was titled, "The Unwanted Piece of the UFO Puzzle." We conducted our talk in the format of a trial, claiming that the UFO community has had over sixty years to present its findings and that our talk was a chance for the rest of the evidence to come to the public. At the end of the talk there was a panel discussion at which time the audience could ask questions. One of the questions had to do with alien abduction and the harshness of the aliens toward humans. One of

the other speakers took the microphone and his assertion was that the aliens should not be treated too harshly. Yet another speaker, Farah Yurdozu, took the microphone and broke down the previous speaker's assertion more precisely. Her thought was that if we are inferior to the aliens then we might want to consider how animals on Earth perceive mankind so that we could understand the alien point of view. She talked about pets like dogs and cats and how they love and trust us because we feed them and care for them. She then talked about animals like laboratory rats and other animals that humans use for other purposes. She said those animals see humans unfavorably because of the way that we treat them. In other words, she was saying that it is a matter of perspective and that one person can see an alien as evil while another can see them as a benefactor.

I have never been one to look at things from a yin yang perspective so I had to say what I thought the LORD had placed on me. I thanked Farah for her analogy and then said that we could look at it from yet another angle. I asked the people to imagine a serial killer. This man is married and he supports his wife and kids, gives them everything that they want and he might even love them to some degree. They love this man for what he has given them. On the other hand, this same man, when seen through the eyes of his victims, whom he has brutally murdered, and the victim's families who have lost a person very dear to them; he is a cold-blooded monster who comes under the full weight of the law to deserve punishment for what he has done. I told them that according to a fair society, this man doesn't deserve to live and no matter what he has done for his family, the dictates of society call for this man to be removed from society forever. I then told them that we need to judge a person on his or her fruit, not by how it looks, but by the way it tastes and what it produces.

Now we have to ask one question, the answer of which will show us the direction in which modern UFO research is heading. What happens when a person believes that these beings are more advanced and that they should have dominion over us? The answer is that these entities then become gods over those who hold such thought. The progression is very simple if we honestly look at it. The first part of the progression is to deny that God exists. This creates a natural vacuum in the psyche of a person because humans are created with the need to have deity in their lives. As we all know the one thing that a vacuum desires is to be occupied. The thing is that with the human soul that vacuum cannot be filled unless the human allows it to be filled. First they try to fill it with evolution but evolution on its own is empty and bankrupt. But, if you give evolution a god then it is more appealing. If you meld it with alien beings who say that they are gods and that they created life on Earth then you have a rudimentary belief system. Do you see where this is going?

To continue the process, you then set up for yourselves apostles who will plant your rudimentary belief in different areas. These are the scientists and others who have scientific religious degrees and just enough credible influence to cause your faith system to grow and be respected because of their testimony. Then you have to have offices for your faith. You embrace the New Age with its channelers, psychics and other soothsayers and they become the prophets of the new faith. You then organize evangelistic outreaches and call them conventions and seminars. You advertise these meetings so that the faithful will come and also those who lack a belief system of their own. Then you organize into big churches and each church has cell groups all over the nation and you call these churches Networks and Organizations. Each cell group is a faith meeting that occurs at least once a month. It is a place where the faithful talk about the latest sightings, abductions and other shenanigans that your gods have performed since your last meeting. Finally, you write a new Bible, one that fits your preconceived notions and also the things that the gods told the prophets to write. Only the truly faithful can truly know what is in your new gospel. The rest will be kept shrouded in a cloud of mystery and a fog of innuendo.

The result of all of this is that a new religion has formed. Those who belong to the religion will always deny that they are a religion and most will take offense when that word is brought up. Although they fight against the word they know deep down in their hearts that they are religious. They have the whole structure of a religion, from the deity, through all the offices of the religion and down to the common man at the bottom. Many of the evangelists in this religion run to and fro to every UFO event to speak and spread their alien gospel. Many of these people, who are the first to talk against Christians, saying that we are closed-minded and intolerant are the same ones who ostracize and excommunicate from the speaking circuit anyone who dares to put forth anything from a biblical point of view.

We have to remember what we read earlier in this chapter. The Apostle Paul gave us a very good definition of what faith is: “Now **faith** is the substance of things hoped for, the **evidence** of things not seen” (Hebrews 11:1).

This is so applicable with those who say that they are nuts and bolts UFO believers, but who really partake in the UFO religion. We are reminded of the television show *The X Files*, and how Fox Mulder had the poster on his wall of the flying saucer and the words, “I Want to Believe.” Those who are involved in the scientific query of the UFO phenomenon chant the same mantra. The whole reason that most of them are researching the UFO enigma isn’t to prove or disprove the existence of UFOs in order to move on to other things. No, they want to prove the existence because it will give them the foundation for their faith.

When we look at the passage in Hebrews we find some interesting things. The Greek word for "substance" means setting, or placing under. So in order to have faith you have a foundation of things that you hope for, and faith is believing that you will get the things that you hope for. Having evidence of things not seen is a criteria for faith. Christians believe that there is a heaven that we will inhabit someday. We have read about it but we have never seen it. Secular people see the vastness of the universe and they postulate that there is life out there. They have seen stars but have never seen other planets. So, without proof that there are other planets they believe that there are countless forms of life in the universe. Just by the wondrous beauty of creation and the miracle of life on this planet Christians believe in God and know that if there is a God then He must live there and we know we will someday too. Both the Christian belief and the secular belief are founded on faith.

There is no doubt whatsoever in our minds that Ufology as it is studied by secular researchers and scientists is nothing but a religion, much the same that evolution is a religion. There was a day when it was strictly a nuts and bolts scientific research study, but it has "evolved" into a religious-based scientific faith. It was bound to happen because as we have so many times asserted, the beings that claim to pilot the craft known as UFOs themselves are not scientific in nature, but every indication is that they are spiritual beings that are here to fulfill an agenda that is as old as time itself, to spiritually enslave mankind, and do so with mankind's permission and blessing.

They Are Conveyances from Other Dimensions:

As of this writing, many scientists are starting to subscribe to the theory that the universe is made up of at least ten dimensions. Four are visible and six are invisible to us at this time. What is inside those invisible dimensions is anyone's guess and we will probably never know. The premise that UFOs come to us from other dimensions is not a new one. It is a good way of explaining the behavior of some UFOs. As we mentioned earlier, UFOs are capable of making maneuvers that defy the laws of physics. A right-hand turn at six or ten thousand miles per hour would exert enough G-forces on a pilot that he would probably be a cellular mass on the side of the craft after the turn was finished.

UFOs do some other interesting things. In many instances witnesses have seen the craft split into multiple craft and merge into other craft. UFOs have been seen to fly into mountains and just disappear as well as fly right into the ground or come up out of the ground. They are submersible and they seem to be able to maneuver just as well underwater as they do in the atmosphere.

These sorts of things have bothered secular researchers for many years. The only way that matter can pass through matter without some sort of destruction is if the object is not really matter. Men like J. Allen Hynek and Jacques Vallée are two scientists who have actually penned the idea that UFOs and the entities that are associated with them are not from our dimension, but are visitors from other dimensions. While Hynek stopped there with his assertions, Vallée has gone much farther in his theory and he suggests that the entities that call themselves extraterrestrials are not from other planets, but are trans-dimensional, and not only that, but he feels that they are malevolent and that their plan is to change human beings for their own devices. You can read more about what Hynek, Vallée and others said about the transdimensional aspect of UFOs in the following chapters.

The thing that many don't realize is that sometimes when a scientist uses the word dimension, they are talking about another plane, which is just another word for dimension. Personally, I believe that when they talk about another dimension, especially where these craft and their entities are concerned, they are using a codeword for spiritual. Perhaps they don't realize that they are doing this but we have to think about one thing. Imagine that you are a well-respected scientist and you discovered that there is in fact a spiritual world and that these entities come from that world. Knowing that you are a scientist and that you would probably be ostracized from the scientific community for using the word "spiritual," you use a word that is as close to spiritual as you can get without using a religious word. This is especially true with Vallée who went out of his way to go much farther expressing his beliefs of the matter.

We have seen in scripture that there were quite a few instances where we are shown that there is a spiritual world and a physical world. Angels would appear and disappear at will. Seeing into this other dimension in the Bible is called, "opening up the eyes." This can be seen in Second Kings chapter 6. Of all of the scenarios listed in this chapter that we're examining to see the origins of UFOs, this one fits into the model perfectly. The spiritual world is another dimension that spiritual beings can pass to and from at will. We should not however confuse this dimension with God's Heaven. The Bible is quite clear that God Almighty inhabits eternity and eternity is outside of time and space. The dimensions are inside of the created universe and they are part of it. With all this said, let's move on to the next speculation.

They Are Conveyances For Time Travelers From Our Future:

This speculation was held by some for a period of time but is pretty well defunct

now. It really came into popularity because of the following factor. First, some of the abductees came back with fantastic stories of how the aliens told them that they are really our progeny who have come back to save the world. They are trying to avert a future worldwide disaster that will change the world forever, and not in a good way.

Many abductees are shown videos of future disasters that they are told can stop if the abductee will become proactive and spread the alien gospel. Since these people were being shown videos of future disasters that will happen, it only made sense that they had pulled these videos from their historic libraries to show them to the abductees. This speculation is not very popular anymore because the aliens have changed their story again, this time saying that they come from star systems far away. If people would only see how many times these liars have changed their stories to cover their lies that would be convincing enough for many.

They Are Craft From Hidden Civilizations Like Atlantis or The Inner Earth:

While this sounds like a fantastic claim (something on the order of a Jules Verne book), there might be some indication that some of this is true, and it melds into the speculation that we will examine next. We pretty much discount the Atlantis theory simply because we believe that Atlantis is really an ancient recollection of the antediluvian world that existed before Noah's Flood. There is a lot of evidence that points in that direction that we won't discuss here because that is a road that branches off in a distant direction that we have no time for right now.

There is however some evidence for what some call an inner-Earth scenario. The authors of this book have no real expertise on this subject and we suggest that if you want to further your studies on The Inner Earth, that you reference Jim Wilhelmsen's book titled, *Beyond Science Fiction*, which goes into exhaustive detail about the subject and comes to incredible revelations.

We will go as far as to say that there is good evidence that the Nazis were involved in the occult sciences and that it is probable that their alliance with occult entities (what we call aliens today) could have gotten them alien technology (the secrets of the angels) sometime during the war years. It is also known that close to two hundred of the Germans' most advanced submarines were missing at the end of the war and that many key personnel were never found. Also missing was the complete inventory of the Reichstag Bank. It is rumored that the Nazis cordoned off a section of land in Antarctica and that they moved their operations down to that

continent.

It is also interesting that some of the first encounters of "humans with aliens" were in cases where the humans met aliens that had blond hair, blue eyes and who spoke with German accents. Add to this is the fact that during one of the times when Barney Hill (a famous abductee) underwent hypnotherapy he was heard to say about one of his captors, "Oh my God, he's a Nazi."

Whether the Nazis ever found an entrance into an inner-Earth is debatable but one thing is for sure, they spent a lot of time and effort looking for one. This speculation is probably a reality and it may have some sort of impact on future events, but we'll have to wait that out and see what becomes of it.

They Are Super-Secret Inventions of Mankind:

Just like the previous speculation, there is no doubt in our minds that there is some truth to it. Knowing that the government has items that it doesn't reveal for ten or more years helps us to understand that there is probably a lot that they have that we will see coming to light in the near future.

According to the speculators there are probably three ways that it was possible for the United States government to get such technology.

1: Acquired from the Nazis when many of them were brought to the US via Project Paper Clip and other secret agreements.

2: Acquired the technology when they acquired things like the crashed craft outside of Roswell.

3: Made a deal with the aliens (fallen angels) themselves to attain the technology.

We know that the German scientists that we brought over to the U.S. at the end of the war were very intelligent and we obtained many technological wonders from them, however their wonders were already being worked on in the laboratories in Britain and the United States. It would be akin to jumping from a Model T Ford to a 1970s Ford Thunderbird. The principle was the same but just more advanced. Taking that into account, and also what we talked about in the prior section in regard to the Nazi's moving all of their workings to Antarctica, it is highly doubtful that they left any of the super intelligent to be captured by the allies.

It is pretty well documented that there have been a number of crashes of strange unearthly vehicles around the world, of which Roswell was just one. It is also evident that the American government changed their story at least twice in

regard to the Roswell crash, which leads one to believe that they were covering up something. The problem that I see with so many accidental crashes is this: are their ships so bad that they can't maneuver correctly? If we are to assume that these beings traveled hundreds or thousands of light years and that they are so tremendously technically advanced so as to get here by overcoming Einstein's theory, then how come they can't seem to master flying in our atmosphere? How in the world do you get through all the asteroid belts, the space debris, and all the other dangers of space travel, yet you crash all over the globe called Earth.

Well, either our space visitors are inept when it comes to piloting their craft around the Earth, or something else is afoot. Let's just say that you really weren't from outer space but you wanted someone to think that you were; what would you do? I think that if you are a spiritual being then it would be easy to make some craft, have them manifest in the physical realm and while they are physical you crash them in places where they would bring attention. You not only create a public relations ploy by doing this, but you announce to the world that their want for a cosmic savior is possible. Then you start showing up in varied places to people you know that you can dupe and you spread a false doctrine to them. They start a new religion with you as their deity and after a few decades the little deception turns into a big lie that is believed by the masses because they rejected their only true savior and want one that has a message that will scratch their itching ears. Now if I can figure this out, don't you think that fallen angels that have millennia of practice can come up with something of the like or even better?

What is even more interesting than what is written above is that there seems to be a pattern: whenever some sort of prophetic event is about to happen with the Jewish people, there is some sort of major UFO event that concurs with the prophetic or evangelical event. We do not think that it was a coincidence that the United Nations voted in 1947 to make a homeland for the Jewish people; something that God prophesied would happen in the end of days, which concurred with the Roswell crash. Also we do not think it to be a coincidence that the Dead Sea Scrolls was found that same year; a discovery that would prove that the current Bible that we use is identical to the one used in the time of Jesus. There is more about this on my website, The Delusion Resistance, located at www.delusionresistance.org.

The analogy that we used above regarding a possible public relations attempt by the fallen angels is interesting and perhaps a correct one. We left one thing out however, since this section is about mankind getting technology from these crashes. Since Jesus said that when He returned it would be like in the days of Noah, and we know that in the days of Noah part of the technology that mankind knew about was the secret of the angels, it would make much sense that the fallen angels would

crash their vehicles around the world, so that humans could back-engineer them and have some of the technology that existed before Noah's flood.

We made a deal with the aliens (fallen angels) themselves to attain the technology.

The following almost sounds too farfetched to be true, but we must examine all possibilities to come to the truth. There are some on the internet who suggest that the United States government has had communications with the supposed aliens and that they struck an accord. The story is as follows.

According to speculation, certain people in the United States government were approached by the aliens. They struck an accord where the aliens promised to give the government alien technology and in return the government agreed to allow the aliens to take a specific amount of people to use for their research of our race. Also according to this speculation, the aliens broke the agreement by abducting more people than they promised to take but the government realized that they were powerless to stop the aliens from abducting whomever they willed to take.

While this sounds very outlandish it would not surprise us if our government sold us out. They've done it many times before so why would they change in this regard? Secondly, most of our leaders have no moral character nor do they respect their constituency; but they do have a lust for power. Presented with great power and knowing their lust for the same, I find it quite possible that if such an offer was made by the fallen angels, it would be accepted without the blinking of an eye.

These are some fantastic claims and you might wonder if they can be backed up. The evidence comes in some of the craft that we see flying around in our skies. Back in 2005, I had the pleasure of attending the "Ancient of Days" conference in Roswell that was administered by Guy Malone. One of the speakers at the conference was Stan Deyo, a scientist who claims that for a certain time in his younger days he worked for secret elements of the government. He explained in layman's terms some of the physics that would be needed to make antigravity aircraft. He showed some examples of craft that he had worked with and explained how they would operate. One of the examples that he used was that of a triangle and it had antimagnetic generators at each of the angles of the triangle. He explained that the placement of the generators offered stability and that it is possible to couple all these pieces together in order to make one big craft. What he described was to the "t" of what we see flying in the skies currently; triangular-shaped craft with one light at each angle of the craft and one in the middle. I feel that these craft are pretty well proof that our government could have possibly made a deal with the devil, so to speak.

This ends our discussion about the secular view of the alien abduction event and who perpetrates it. In the next chapter we will take an in-depth look at some UFO researchers who, after much research and soul searching, came to the conclusion that the entities that purport to be extraterrestrial in origin are really transdimensional, or inter-dimensional as the case may be. Now let us go and see how this might be true, or in some of our opinions, is very true.

CHAPTER THREE: Crossing Over

Secular Researchers with Inter-dimensional Views

Imagine if you would that anyone who is interested in the UFO and/or alien abduction phenomenon is really part of a jury in the largest courtroom that up until this time has ever existed. We've sat in the jury box, some of us for a very long time and we have listened to many witnesses who have, in effect, testified in the witness box for the defense. The defendants who are on trial are the entities that pose as visitors from other worlds. But we're not just the members of the jury because when all is said and done, and all the evidence is presented before the court, we will also be the judges. Each one of us will take the information that we heard as we sat on the jury and we will weigh that evidence in our minds and in our hearts.

It is important to realize that when we have made our judgment in this matter then each of us will, as judges, impose a sentence upon the defendants. We will judge as to whether the defendants have told us the truth or a lie. We will be able to judge them according to their character and as to if there has been any fidelity whatsoever in the claims that they have made for more than a generation. If the defense has offered an unbiased and truthful case for their clients then you will take that into account, and if they have been less than adequate in the task which they have been given, you will weigh that in the evidence, too. In like manner, if the prosecution has done its job adequately and they have presented their case in a forthright manner, and they have presented all the evidence then that can be used to weigh the evidence and we as members of the jury, and also judges in the matter can come to the right conclusion, pass judgment and implement the sentence. The sentence that we can pass will be to have a firm conviction in our minds and our hearts as to the true nature of these entities.

When a case is prosecuted in the matter of a civil or superior court, the courtroom is in most cases open to the public and when the proceedings are finalized then they become public knowledge. In the same way, when a person who sits on the jury of our court and also in the judges seat comes to a final determination of who and what the UFO/alien abduction actually is, it is their right to go public with what they have determined. So as we mentioned earlier, only when *all* the evidence is presented can this procedure be completed. The purpose of our websites, our talks, and this book is to ensure that the missing pieces of testimony are presented so that you, the reader, can now make that determination knowing that all the evidence is now presented for you to do so.

In Roswell, New Mexico, during the Fourth of July week in 2008, the authors of this book brought to the courtroom evidence that has been excluded from the witness stand and has never been presented in a public forum, at least as far as we can determine. We had noticed for quite a long time that the research that we were performing was not being recognized, nor were any of the secular researchers bringing our contentions to the witness stand. Of course this is to be expected because a good attorney will try to suppress any and all evidence that could bring their attorney into a bad light and cause the jury to question if the defendants are the upright citizens that the defense maintains. But is this good law practice? We contend that it is not.

In United States law, whenever a trial is to be conducted there is a process called "discovery," which is a lawyers' examination, before trial, of facts and documents in possession of the opponents to help the lawyers prepare for trial. This process allows for a fair trial for both sides and it gives both sides an idea of what they are up against. When the trial proceedings occur, only the evidence presented during "discovery" is admissible in court. New evidence can be submitted during the trial but its submission can only be allowed if the opposing lawyer can see the evidence, and sometimes, if the opposing attorney requests, the trial may be delayed for a certain period of time so that the attorney can research the new evidence and so that they can try to find other evidence or testimony to challenge the new evidence.

The evidence for the prosecution, which we will present in this chapter, had for the most part been suppressed for many years. This evidence is powerful and was presented in the writings of many secular UFO researchers, men and women who do not necessarily agree with the case for the prosecution. These people came to conclusions that are harmful to the defendants and their evidence, in the way of research conclusions was never allowed to come to light in court.

It is our contention that in excess of sixty years, those in defense of the "aliens," who have championed their cause and who have been in the spotlight for those decades have had more than adequate time to present their case. The thing is that their clients, those same entities that claim to be extraterrestrial, have never made an attempt to come to court to speak for themselves. In lieu of their personal testimony they have sent representatives to the court. Their representatives have come in three groups. The first group consists of the people whom they abduct. After a time of repeated abduction the entities indoctrinate their victims with apocalyptic messages and/or bits and pieces of other messages so as to present just enough testimony to satisfy the people sitting on the jury. The jury is then left to take bits and pieces that they are given and to place each piece into some sort of bizarre puzzle that they are left to interpret. This tactic causes the jury to come up

with a variety of different stories, all somewhat the same but none entirely identical to each other.

The second group of representatives for the defendants is those in the psychic realm. The messages come in many ways, some of which include: automatic writing, messages from "walk-in" entities (entity enters the body of the channeler and speaks through them), sometimes via telepathy, and other methods. These messages are then given to interested parties via the internet, or in newsletters, journals, books and many times via word of mouth. There currently are many books in bookstores around the world that are the jumbled testimonies of these entities that claim to be exceedingly advanced and/or enlightened but cannot show up for their court appearance.

The third group comes in the way of those who witness UFO appearances. It is as if UFOs appear just to say that they exist and that we'll just have to be satisfied with that for now. It is like they are playing some sort of sick variant of "Marco Polo," showing themselves for just a brief moment and then causing humanity to figure out the rest by themselves. The witnesses come to court saying that they saw something here or there or that they heard them talk from time to time, but there is nothing definitive, nothing certain.

In the pages that follow, we will examine the thoughts of many secular people who have studied the UFO and/or alien abduction phenomenon. While there is no doubt that there are many more than these few who have studied and have come to the same conclusion that the following have, we present the testimonies of these people because they possess the "credentials" that are required to satisfy those who demand that professionalism be present in anyone who researches the phenomenon.

The men and women whom we will now quote have seen the evasiveness of these entities. They have seen that the UFO/alien abduction phenomenon doesn't present itself in a way as behaving like the actions of advanced visitors from other planets in the cosmos. These persons also see both UFOs and the supposed aliens as acting more akin to spiritual entities rather than physical beings. Let's see what these secular researchers have to say about UFOs and the entities that purport to fly them.

Testimony of Jacques Vallée

Probably the best-known of these researchers is Dr. Jacques Vallée. Doctor Vallée is exceptionally educated, having many credentials, of which include:

—Bachelor of Science degree in mathematics from the Sorbonne

—Master of Science in astrophysics from the University of Lille

—Ph.D. in computer science from Northwestern University

—National Advisory Committee of the University of Michigan College of Engineering

—Involved in early work on artificial intelligence

—Carefully studied the problem of UFOs for many years with J. Allen Hynek

—Has written nine books and many papers about his research into the UFO phenomenon

Giving the fact that Doctor Vallée possesses the credentials that he does, there should be not one doubt that he has the intelligence to research and study the alien abduction phenomena with the lack of any prejudice or personal bias. Just a simple glance at his credentials shows us that he has pursued science as his profession and with that as his basis of thought, he should be very objective to any and all pieces of the puzzle that present themselves in the UFO/abduction realm. We could even take this thought to the extreme and state that given his foundation in science, and knowing that scientific method demands physical and demonstrable proof to make a determination, Doctor Vallée should not even toy with the thought that the UFO/abduction event is anything other than something physical. But instead, Doctor Vallée comes to a conclusion that entirely shakes his foundation. Let's look at what Doctor Vallée has found: "We are dealing with a yet unrecognized level of consciousness, independent of man but closely linked to the Earth… I do not believe anymore that UFOs are simply spacecraft of some race of extraterrestrial visitors. This notion is too simplistic to explain their appearance, the frequency of their manifestations throughout recorded history, and the structure of the information exchanged with them during contact" (Vallée, *Confrontations - A Scientist's Search for Alien Contact*, pg. 89).

Vallée draws some very interesting conclusions from his study of the UFO/alien abduction phenomenon. He is saying that it isn't from outer space, but from right here on Earth, or around the Earth. He makes mention that they have been recorded as having visited us throughout recorded history but what is his inference by saying this? And why does he say that the ETH (extraterrestrial hypothesis) is too simple an idea to explain who they are? We feel that the answer to those questions can be answered in another of Vallée's quotes: "The 'medical examination' to which abductees are said to be subjected, often accompanied by

sadistic sexual manipulation, is reminiscent of the medieval tales of encounters with demons. It makes no sense in a sophisticated or technical or biological framework: any intelligent being equipped with the scientific marvels that UFOs possess would be in a position to achieve any of these alleged scientific objectives in shorter time with fewer risks" (*Confrontations*, pg. 13).

Vallée is saying here that after studying archived reports of strange goings on over the centuries, regarding beings that have come in the middle of the night and have taken captive unwilling victims, the parallels are far too similar to ignore. He is saying that he believes that the stories of hideous creatures resembling demons from centuries past and up until our supposed age of "enlightenment," are strikingly similar if not identical to the accounts of current day alien abductees.

In the same book, *Confrontations*, Vallée again echoes that after doing extensive research that he believes that the demons of old and the alien abductors of today are the same beings, as we observe in the following quote: "The UFO beings of today belong to the same class of manifestation as the [occult] entities that were described in centuries past… (*Confrontations*, pg. 160–161).

In another book, *Messengers of Deception*, Vallée shows us that he hasn't limited himself to studying the past to see parallelisms between the abductors, but he shows us that his research shows that there are many similarities between activity that contemporary researchers consider demonic and the actions of the beings that supposedly pilot UFOs: "Impressive parallel [can] be made between UFO occupants and the popular conception of demons" (Vallée, *Messengers of Deception*, pg. 15).

Vallée was very thorough in his research into the UFO realm. A reading of his books shows that he left no stones unturned in his search for the truth. One of the many areas where he made comparative studies was into the occult religious domain. After an exhaustive study of this realm, he came up with the following conclusion: "The structure of abduction stories is identical to that of occult initiation rituals" (*Confrontations*, pg. 160).

It becomes obvious that he dug deep into many works on occult tradition and practice because he makes the following statement in regard to "other worldly" travel state that many victims of alien abduction refer to when telling their accounts: "The symbolic display seen by the abductees is identical to the type of initiation ritual or astral voyage that is imbedded in the [occult] tradition of every culture" (*Confrontations*, pg. 146).

Finally, it would appear that Doctor Vallée is a forward thinker. He didn't just think about how this whole subject would affect the here and now, but he looked at the intent of the entities that are doing all the abducting. Instead of just focusing on the "who" and "what" of the UFO/alien enigma, he delved into the "why" of the subject; why they are here and why they are doing what they are doing. He came to the following conclusions: "[UFOs can] project images or fabricated scenes

designed to change our belief systems" (*Messengers of Deception*, pg. 19).

Yes, and when it comes down to brass tacks, the whole UFO/alien abduction puzzle is based on the following premise: "Human belief…is being controlled and conditioned," "man's concepts are being rearranged," "[and we may be heading for] a massive change of human attitudes toward paranormal abilities and extraterrestrial life" (Vallée, *The Invisible College*, pg. 3, 201, 204).

So the conclusions of Jacques Vallée, a highly educated secular scientist, are the following.

The beings that pilot UFOs and who abduct humans aren't extraterrestrial. They are demonic entities who are conducting sadistic experiments on human beings in an attempt to involve them in an occult initiation (disguised as "enlightenment") in order to change the human belief system and our attitude toward the paranormal and also toward extraterrestrial life.

In other words, they are perpetuating a lie, providing false imagery and false proof to allow the lie to become fact in the minds of many. Christians of course see this as an attempt to set up the one world government that will be administered by the one we call the Antichrist. Will he (the Antichrist) come in the guise of an alien or a hybrid human/alien; well, only God knows that, but it seems to be a possibility.

Testimony of Doctor Josef Allen Hynek:

Above we mentioned that Jacques Vallée was the best-known UFO researcher, and for our current day and time that is the truth. Before Vallée came into the spotlight and during the early years of Vallée, there was another man named J. Allen Hynek who was a serious UFO researcher.

Again, we have to abide by the criteria that is set upon us by the UFO research community. We have to use as witnesses for the testimony only those who have incredible credentials and those who can prove to the UFO research community that they have no bias against scientific research.

Doctor Josef Allen Hynek is just the sort of person who can fit into this criteria. He has impeccable credentials and spent much of his adult life involved in science, and much of that time in the investigation of the UFO enigma. His credentials are as follows:

—B.S. from the University of Chicago

—Ph.D. in astrophysics at Yerkes Observatory

—Associate director of Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory, Cambridge, MA

—Headed NASA sponsored satellite tracking program – part of a sixty-seven-nation International Geophysical Year of 1957–1958

—Department of Physics and Astronomy at Ohio State University

—Specialized in the study of stellar evolution and in the identification of spectroscopic binaries

—Scientific consultant; Project Sign, Project Grudge and Project Bluebook

—Delivered speech on UFOs to U.N. General Assembly in 1978

—Founded CUFOS - Center for UFO Studies

Doctor Hynek was involved in many other scientific endeavors too numerous to list in this book, lest someone think that we are writing a biography of him. Needless to say, J. Allen Hynek was more than qualified in regard to the rigid stands set upon us. The interesting thing about Dr. Hynek is that he started out as a skeptic of the UFO phenomenon but after years of study, working for the United States Air Force, commissioned to explain what UFOs really were, he came to the conclusion that there were some sightings that he just couldn't explain. This caused him to delve into a deeper study of UFOs and his acceptance that some of them are real.

With this in mind we can now look at some of the comments that J. Allen Hynek made concerning his research and the conclusions that he came to regarding his studies. Remember that what you are about to read came from the mind of a man who was steeped in science and scientific method all his life.

"If UFOs are indeed, somebody else's 'nuts and bolts hardware,' then we must still explain how such tangible hardware can change shape before our eyes, vanish in a Cheshire cat manner, seemingly melt away in front of us, or apparently 'materialize,' mysteriously before us without apparent detection by persons nearby or in neighboring towns. We must wonder too, where UFOs are 'hiding' when not manifesting themselves to human eyes" (J. Allen Hynek and Jacques Vallée, *The Edge of Reality*, Henry Regnery Company, pg. xii–xiii).

Dr. Hynek asks some very important questions here. If they're tangible craft then how can they change shape and dematerialize or materialize out of thin air? Hynek, a scientist, and one who believed in physics knew that tangible objects cannot do what he was hearing about in the reports that he was receiving. These things caused him to wonder about the origin of these objects.

This must have been a particularly bothersome facet to the whole UFO investigatory process for Dr. Hynek. We know this because he mentioned it quite a bit. In a 1976 interview with *UFO Magazine* Hynek asks the same question, but this time he uses a term that was anathema to science at that time…psychic:

"Another peculiarity is that alleged ability of certain UFOs to dematerialize… There are quite a few reported instances where two distinctly different UFOs hovering in a clear sky will converge and eventually merge into one object. <u>These are the types of psychic phenomena that are confronting us in the UFO mystery</u>" (J.

Allen Hynek interview, *UFO Report Magazine*, August 1976, p.61).

One can only wonder what was going through Hynek's mind when he uttered those words. He probably imagined the doors of colleagues in the scientific community slamming shut and the tumblers of the locks falling into place. However, Hynek was only being honest and he was only submitting an opinion based on his research. Hynek pressed on with his research and dared to bring his opinion more into the light, which is illustrated by the following quote:

"We should consider the various factors that strongly suggest a linkage, or at least a parallelism with occurrences of a paranormal nature" (J. Allen Hynek interview, *UFO Report Magazine*, August 1976, p.61).

Dr. Hynek was a smart man and although he was daring for his day, he still chose words to describe his theories about UFOs and tailor cut them to fit the audiences that he was talking to. In the quote from the book he posed his theory vaguely and in the form of a question. This would satisfy his peers who would think that he was proposing a hypothesis. In the two quotes from the interviews in the UFO magazine he was a bit more revealing about his thoughts, saying that the UFO enigma was a likeness or a parallelism of spiritual activity. However, in an interview with someone who was undoubtedly interested in spiritual manifestations, Hynek had the following to say. "Many UFO reports," he said, seem to pertain more to accounts of "poltergeists" and other types of "psychic" manifestations than to "actual solid items of nuts and bolts hardware." "This is one of the reasons," added Dr. Hynek, "why I cannot accept the obvious explanation of UFOs as visitors from outer space" (J. Allen Hynek interview, *The Unexplained Column*, by Allen Spraggett, November 8, 1975).

It is most probable that Hynek felt comfortable saying what he did to Spraggett during this interview. He had come to the conclusion that UFOs were a manifestation of the spiritual realm and he even goes as far as to say that since they are psychic (spiritual) and manifest as such then that is why he can't accept that they are tangible craft from other worlds.

The testimonies of Vallée and Hynek alone are pretty damning to the case for the defense, those who are proponents of otherworldly visitors. We could end this chapter right here and now because we have men of such high caliber stating that they believe UFOs and aliens to be spiritual. Two very large nails have been hammered through the lid and into the box of the extraterrestrial proponent theory coffin but there could be a problem. There are those who could contend that these two men were tainted in some way or that perhaps some religious fanatics got to them and corrupted their scientific minds. For the benefit of those who might think this way we must present other testimonies of secular scientists and other secular researchers who have come to the same conclusions, either partly or in whole.

Testimony of Raymond E. Fowler:

We now present the testimony of Ray Fowler. There probably aren't many people with his scope of expertise in the UFO investigatory field. Ray's credentials are quite impressive and include the following:

—B.A. degree (magna cum laude) from Gordon College of Liberal Arts

—Tour of Duty with USAF Security Service

—Twenty-five years with GTE Government Systems as a Senior Planner for the Minuteman Intercontinental Missile Program

—Director of Investigations for the International Mutual UFO Network (MUFON)

—Has written eleven books on UFOs and paranormal phenomenon

—Has been a consultant to a number of TV UFO Documentaries and also to Time-Life Books

—J. Allen Hynek said Ray Fowler is: "An outstanding UFO investigator… I know of no one who is more dedicated, trustworthy or persevering."

Ray Fowler is quite a knowledgeable researcher of the UFO enigma. As we see in his credentials, he received an outstanding review by J. Allen Hynek, the father of UFO scientific research. When investigatory programs or documentaries want an expert he is right at the top of their list of people to contact. With the credentials that he bears and the respect that he has among UFO researchers and the media he is more than adequate to share what he has found in his study of UFOs and aliens. After years of research and after seeing people like Hynek change their opinion about the nature of UFOs and aliens, Ray said the following in one of his books:

"I [have] watched in dismay as a number of respected UFO researchers moved from a physical to a parapsychological interpretation of the bizarre UFO phenomenon…now I [too] am being forced to reexamine the UFO phenomenon in light of its apparent paraphysical nature" (Raymond E. Fowler, *The Watchers: The Secret Design Behind UFO Abduction*, New York: Bantam 1991 pg. xv, 183).

We have no doubt that Fowler was probably close with Hynek and since Hynek was friends with Vallée it is probable that they had some working knowledge

of each other. One could argue that Hynek and Vallée might have influenced Fowler with their tilt toward the spiritual origin of the phenomenon, but it is quite evident from Fowler's writings that he is a free thinker and that any determination he has come to was made by examining all the evidence he found through his own or that was presented to him.

Fowler states that he was dismayed by the number of UFO researchers who were coming to the realization that UFOs and aliens are of a spiritual nature. This means that it bothered or annoyed him that his colleagues were coming to conclusions that differed from his. There is no doubt that this caused him to look into the claims of so many who were changing their minds about this matter and he researched their claims in order to prove them wrong or prove them right. The result of his further research is that UFOs, aliens and alien abduction all fall into the category of outside of the physical nature.

Testimony of Ivar Mackay:

Captain Ivar Mackay is a former chairman of the British UFO Research Association, or BUFORA, which was one of Great Britain's largest and most influential UFO groups. Ivar made the following statement in *Flying Saucer Review*: "Further, if one sets the three occult groups against the three classifications of UFO entities and their characteristics, it is rather surprising how complementary to each other they appear to be, not only through their appearance, activities, and level of behavior, but also in the quality of mental and especially, emotional reaction and response that has been noted to have occurred on contact" (Ivar Mackay: "UFO Entities: Occult and Physical," in *Flying Saucer Review*, Vol. 16, 1970, Nos. 4 & 5).

To remain forthright in our research and in our own testimony we must enter into the record the fact that Ivar Mackay is now a devout Christian. One might argue that his name doesn't belong in our list of secular people who have come to the conclusion that aliens are actually spiritual entities. However, the article that the quote has been taken from was written in 1970 and this has to be noted for a very import reason in regard to any contention of Mr. Mackay's spiritual condition in 1970. It is public knowledge that two of Mackay's associates at BUFORA, founding President Graham Knewstub along with Roger Stanway, became born again Christians at or around the year 1976. That year, Stanway wrote a letter of resignation, telling those at BUFORA that, in addition to other things, "Furthermore, I now believe that the UFO phenomenon has Satanic origins."

In addition to the prior mentioned items, another member of BUFORA researcher had a conversion to Christianity, the story best told by David Clarke in an article in *Fortean Times*:

> Perhaps the most bizarre story of all concerns the BUFORA investigator for South Wales, Randall Jones Pugh, who died in 2003. Pugh—a retired veterinary surgeon—was a God-fearing man who investigated the West Wales UFO flap of 1977 that became known as the "Welsh Triangle." Initially, he was another believer in ET visitors but gradually his views changed. During his investigations, Pugh looked into a range of weird happenings centered upon a remote part of the Pembrokeshire coast: lights and objects hovering in the sky, mysterious silver-suited figures peering into farmhouse windows, cowering animals, a herd of cattle teleported from one part of a farm to another, and poltergeists plaguing a family of UFO witnesses. By 1980, he had concluded that the UFO occupants were evil supernatural entities, and came to believe ufologists were placing themselves in both physical and spiritual danger. Soon afterwards, like Roger Stanway before him, Pugh left ufology and burned his collection of books and slides. These actions followed a series of personal experiences that, he claimed, 'were too frightening to talk about.'" (Dr. David Clarke, "Flying Saucers from Hell," *Fortean Times* June 2006)

We feel that this is important because Ivar Mackay was affiliated with these men and all of them came to faith in Jesus Christ anywhere from 1976 and later. Ivar was most likely in their number during this time, therefore, his quote about the UFO entities being strikingly similar to the three types of occult groups was made by a secular person who was researching the spiritual side of the UFO enigma but who most probably hadn't made a decision of conversion yet.

It is interesting that all these persons are listed in the article in *Fortean Times* as being men who were proponents of the "nuts and bolts" origin of the UFOs and an extraterrestrial explanation for the abductors, but they were all convinced through their research of all the information (even the spiritual info) that the whole phenomena is a spiritual one that manifests in the physical.

Testimony of Lynn Catoe:

A search for any credentials concerning Lynn Catoe was not successful. While we know nothing of her education or her scientific inclinations we can deduce that she was college-educated and that she had a wonderful eye for detail when it came to categorizing and researching. A good education and a sharp eye when it comes to detail are crucial when it comes to any sort of research and they are credentials that allow Lynn's testimony to be admitted in our courtroom.

In 1969 Lynn Catoe served as the senior bibliographer of a publication on UFOs researched by the Library of Congress for the U.S. Air Force Office of

Scientific Research. After a two-year investigation, in which she surveyed thousands of documents, she drew explicit attention to the link between UFOs and the occult. After reading through all the available articles on UFOs she came up with the following observation: "A large part of the available UFO literature is closely linked with mysticism and the metaphysical. It deals with subjects like mental telepathy, automatic writing and invisible entities as well as phenomena like poltergeist (ghost) manifestations and 'possession.' Many of the UFO reports now being published in the popular press recount alleged incidents that are strikingly similar to demonic possession and psychic phenomena…" (Lynn Catoe, *UFOs and Related Subjects: An Annotated Bibliography*, 1969 US Government Printing Office; Prepared under Air Force Office of Scientific Research, Project Order 67-0002 and 68-0003).

Lynn is probably the best researcher that there has been in regard to compiling and collating data. Considering the era that her work took place, she, in all probability, worked without the aid of a computer. After hours, then days, then weeks and probably months, she came to the conclusion that with the evidence presented on paper, the beings that purported to be of extraterrestrial origin were really just demons and/or angels in disguise…spiritual entities.

The Testimony of Dr. Pierre Guérin:

Dr. Pierre Guérin, French astronomer, senior researcher at the French National Council for Scientific Research (CNRS), has written extensively about the need for scientific research in the UFO field. Guérin died in 2000. Before his death he wrote a book titled, *UFOs: The Mechanisms of a Disinformation*, where he foresaw that the American policy of deep UFO secrecy which has persisted for many years will continue because he felt that the general population could not bear a disclosure revelation that there is extraterrestrial life.

It is an accepted fact, judging from Guérin's writings, that he was an ardent believer in the theory that UFOs and aliens are of extraterrestrial origin. But his research took him other places, as evidenced by the following statement made by him: "[UFO] behavior is more akin to magic than to physics as we know it…the modern UFOnauts and the demons of past days are probably identical… What is quite certain is that the phenomenon is active here on our planet, and active here as master" (Pierre Guérin, "Thirty Years After Kenneth Arnold," in *Flying Saucer Review*, Vol. 25, No. 1, pp. 13,14).

Dr. Pierre Guérin, astronomer, senior researcher (one who called for more

scientific research into the UFO enigma), and an ardent scientist on all accounts, found himself taking beings whom he thought to be extraterrestrial visitors and comparing their actions to magic and psychic ability, and ultimately admitting that they are probably "identical to demons of past days," hence, they are a spiritual entity that manifests in the physical realm.

Are we starting to see a pattern here? So far we have seen several people who have been educated in the sciences, who shouldn't even be mentioning the things of the spirit realm, but who have come to the undeniable truth that the UFO/alien abduction enigma lends itself out to be a spiritual experience. The truth, like cream, always tends to work its way to the top.

Testimony of John Keel:

John A. Keel, is probably the world's foremost researcher into the paranormal, and has traveled extensively to over forty countries investigating the unknown for almost fifty years. Some have gone as far as labeling him the "Indiana Jones of the paranormal research world." John has researched the UFO enigma for many years and has come to some startling conclusions. For instance, John Keel observes, after studying literature on demonology that: "The manifestations and occurrences described in this imposing literature are similar if not entirely identical to the UFO phenomenon itself" (John Keel, *UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse*, New York, Putnam's, 1970, pg. 21).

He goes on to repeat again what he says earlier on in the same book: "The UFO manifestations seem to be, by and large, merely minor variations of the age-old demonological phenomenon" (*UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse*, pg 299).

As is usually the case in any situation where a representative is bringing conflicting reports to an individual or group, the messenger usually suffers the brunt of the persecution. This is the case many times in the alien abduction scenario. The abductors present the abductees often with outlandish messages that challenge the concepts of normal everyday life. They also offer predictions of future events that do not come true. When this happens it is usually the messenger (the abductee) who is called a liar and a scoundrel. Keel counters this by saying, "The UFOnauts are the liars, not the contactees. And they are lying deliberately as part of the bewildering smokescreen which they have established to cover their real origin, purpose and motivation" (*UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse*).

In the quote above, Keel further enforces his conclusions that the beings that claim to be from other planets in our tangible universe are liars. He is saying that

their extraterrestrial mask is just a smokescreen, a delusion, a façade to hide what they really are. He made mention in two previous quotes that he is convinced that the beings are demonic in nature and here he says they are deliberately lying through their emissaries who are only innocent pawns in the greater deception.

Keel, in his book, *Strange Creatures from Time and Space*, tells us what originally convinced him to change his opinion as to the origins of the visitors: "I abandoned the extraterrestrial hypothesis in 1967 when my own field investigations disclosed an astonishing overlap between psychic phenomena and UFOs… The objects and apparitions do not necessarily originate on another planet and may not even exist as permanent constructions of matter. It is more likely that we see what we want to see and interpret such visions according to our contemporary beliefs" (John Keel, *Strange Creatures from Time and Space*, Spearman, 1975).

From the above quote, we now know that Keel came to his determination back when it was a scientific researcher's professional suicide to make such claims. Not that Keel was a scientist per se, but he took on subject matter that professional scientists were too cowardly to investigate. His claims made it impossible for anyone with a scientific background to take him seriously. It is most certain than the only reason why anyone scientifically inclined would even consider his research was the fact that notable scientists like Hynek and Vallée came to the same conclusions. Keel is to be applauded for the guts it took to go public with such info in a day and age when anything spiritual concerning UFO or alien abduction was an abomination to science in general.

Testimony of Ronald D. Story:

Ronald Story's credentials as a valid witness in our courtroom precede him. He is an internationally published science writer. Story graduated with honors from the University of Arizona in 1970 where he studied philosophy, anthropology, astronomy, logic, and the scientific method. In 1976, Story founded the original UFO Encyclopedia Project, which resulted in the classic *Encyclopedia of UFOs*, published by Doubleday and New English Library in 1980. He also wrote *The Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters.*

Seeing that Story has an education so grounded in science and with such an education is could be called "a scientist of science," his conclusions about UFOs and alien abduction should be accepted beyond a shadow of a doubt.

"I have come to see through my continued study from the 1960s on, that all the

world religions have similar descriptions of astral vehicles and supernatural beings and their interactions with humankind. I believe the UFOs to be the 'Powers and Principalities,' as stated in the New Testament" (Ronald D. Story, *The Mammoth Encyclopedia of Extraterrestrial Encounters*, in an article by Sherry Steiger, London: Constable & Robinson, 2002, pg. 676).

We find it incredible that a man with such a scientific background, and one who has spent many hours researching the UFO phenomena should come up with such conclusion. Story is an incredible researcher and he should be recognized for his honesty and his willingness to research all the facets of the UFO enigma, even the religious side. Story addresses the issue by quoting partly from a scripture that even many who wear the name "Christian" don't especially understand. "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places" (Ephesians 6:12).

The scripture in Ephesians is stating clearly that battle for dominion of the Earth and for the souls of men isn't in the physical realm, but is a spiritual battle. We will examine this scripture and others in subsequent chapters. In Story's case though, it is obvious, by his using this scripture, that he is convinced that UFO and alien abduction occurrences have their roots in the spiritual realm and that they are manifestations of that realm. By making such a claim, Ronald Story proves himself to be another scientist who has come to know what many consider to be the truth about the UFO enigma; it is spiritual in nature. Story is a brave man because being a scientist and making such a claim has always seemed to be detrimental to one's long-term career.

Testimony of Farah Yurdozu:

Farah Yurdozu is Turkey's first female UFO researcher author of several best-selling books in her native land and many magazine articles. Farah's theological inclinations are that of a psychic and she claims a family heritage as such. Her work shows a passion for the paranormal in many of its aspects. Her main attention is focused on close encounters with UFOs and alien abduction. Farah is not only a UFO researcher, but she's also a writer and a lecturer, and is asked to talk at many UFO conferences all over the United States.

Though Farah's views on most theological tenets are at polar opposites of the authors of this book, we do fall into line for the most part where the origin of these supposed alien entities are concerned, as is evidenced in the following quote. Farah gave this answer to a question about why the aliens in the form of grays, reptilians

and such fear the name of Jesus Christ. Her quote as to the real identity of these entities is as follows:

> Coming from an Islamic country, I'm Turkish; the biggest part of my investigations is alien abductions, today and in the past. In our culture, religiously and traditionally, specific beings that we call Jinns, inter-dimensional beings have a very important place. They have been abducting people for thousands of years, but they exist before the Islamic religion. Yes, they exist in Koran and Islamic tradition. Religiously they accept the existence, the reality of Jinns because Jinns are created by the same God who created us and the universe… My personal opinion is what they used to call evil or demonic being is the inter-dimensional or extraterrestrial being of today. (Farah Yurdozu, Turkish UFO and Alien Abduction Researcher, voiced during the panel discussion at the 2007 Roswell, New Mexico UFO Conference)

It's quite clear in her explanation that she is of the opinion that evil and demonic beings and extraterrestrials are the same thing. It's important to take into consideration that Farah isn't coming at this from a Christian point of view, but first from an Islamic perspective and also a psychic perspective. The fact that she uses the word "demonic" shows that she has also studied the Christian view of the origins of these entities. Her testimony is yet another nail, now amongst many that have been driven into the extraterrestrial hypothesis' coffin.

Testimony of Whitley Strieber:

Whitley Strieber has had an interesting career that can be divided into three categories. He started out by writing horror novels, two: *The Hunger*, and *Wolfen*, became films that brought Whitley a great deal of notoriety. The second part of his career was also as an author, but he wrote novels that dealt with what would happen after limited nuclear exchanges and such and a couple of his books got onto the New York Times Best Seller list.

Whitley however is known mostly for his novels *Communion*, and *Transformation*. The first was an autobiographic story of his encounters with "extraterrestrial" beings in the woods outside of his Upper New York State cabin. *Transformation* was a sequel to *Communion*, and was basically a book that told about Whitley's transformation from an unwilling victim of alien abduction to a person who became a willing test subject for his captors and to form a relationship

with them. The books relate a basic "if you can't beat them, then join with them" scenario.

In *Communion*, Whitley relates to the reader the sheer horror that he felt during his abduction experiences. He recognizes that these entities aren't really extraterrestrials, but the classic demons of old dressed in a new persona. Let's look at a couple of his encounters and experience the fear and dread that Whitley initially felt as he was taken against his will by the "visitors."

"Increasingly I felt as if I were entering a struggle that might even be more than life-or-death. It might be a struggle for my soul, my essence, or whatever part of me that might have reference to the eternal. There are things worse than death, I suspected… So far the word demon had never been spoken among the scientists and doctors who were working with me… Alone at night I worried about the legendary cunning of demons… At very least, I was going stark, raving mad" (Whitley Strieber, *Transformation*, pg 96).

It is interesting how Whitley mentions how the scientists and doctors never mentioned that his problem might be demonic. They were never going to mention that word because when the word "demon" is mentioned it denotes evil and spiritual, and when those two words are brought up then naturally their antithesis comes to mind, Holy and God, and those two words are frowned upon in scientific circles. It is interesting that when Whitley contemplated his dilemma he thought that it might be demonic, based strictly we're sure on the sadistic rituals that were performed upon him. In another passage he relates to his readers:

"I felt an absolutely indescribable sense of menace. It was hell on Earth to be there [in the presence of these entities], and yet I couldn't move, couldn't cry out, couldn't get away. I'd lay as still as death, suffering inner agonies. Whatever was there seemed so monstrously ugly, so filthy and dark and sinister. Of course they were demons. They had to be. And they were here and I couldn't get away…" (*Transformation*, pg. 181).

Whitley describes in this passage the common feelings that plague most abductees in the first stages of abduction. He was paralyzed, couldn't talk and couldn't move. The only thing that seemed to work was his mind and that was filled with fear and anxiety. He describes that he feels the presence of the entities in his room and that they gave off an air of being ugly as monsters and they seemed to be filthy, dark and sinister. He doesn't really paint a pretty picture of his experience. The fear that he felt fed his intuition and he knew that something that felt this evil, dark, and filthy could only be demonic in nature.

Conclusions:

We named this chapter "Crossing Over" for an important reason. We have shown the testimony of some very important and very influential people in the scientific realm and also of some who are not scientific per se, but are bonafide and respected UFO researchers. The testimonies that we have shown are from people who have attempted to find and study all the evidence. They didn't pick and choose evidence that would cater to creating an opinion that fit their preconceived notion of what they thought the UFO/alien abduction phenomenon is. They wanted to know the truth, no matter how much it might cost them, either in their own lives or in their research credibility with their peers.

The sacrifice that they made by coming to the conclusions that they have should not be taken lightly. The scientists that we mentioned could have lost credibility with their peers, which could have caused them to be ostracized from the scientific community. Science was and is their profession and making waves in the "community" could get one passed up for positions and possibly research grants from individuals or associations. Aside from these things, there are the little things that occur that hurt, like being talked about at social functions and laughed at by those who they considered their friends and colleagues.

There may be some who would say that these men really didn't say much by saying that UFOs and alien abduction accounts mimic or parallel demonism but we must look deeper into the motives of these scientists and researchers to see what they really meant when they said it. We must remember that most people with a scientific background, especially those who are schooled in and who adhere to scientific method, hold to the thought that all things to be examined have to be tangible and they have to be proven repeatable in a laboratory. Close encounters with UFOs and alien abductions do not fit into that mold. Therefore, if one researches these things and they come to the conclusion that there are some reports that are real they are treading on thin ice scientifically. They are basing their theories on the testimony of human beings and as the authors of this book have found out by dealing with secular researchers and scientists, they consider testimony pretty well moot when it comes to eyewitness statements.

For the secular researcher, things are further complicated by the fact that these things are happening, and they seem to mimic things psychic and demonic. For a secular researcher to use the word demonic is a monumental step. When this term is used it denotes that the speaker recognizes that there is a demonic realm and that demons are involved. Let's take it a step farther shall we? Almost everyone recognizes that demons aren't the good guys, so to speak. They are always

associated with mayhem and evil, or as Whitley Strieber states, “monstrously ugly, filthy, dark, and sinister.” To most, these entities are associated with Satan, being placed on a status as his minions, under the fallen angels in rank. Are you getting the picture? If there is a Satan then there has to be an adversary for Satan and there is. Christians and Jews know Him as Elohim, Yahweh or God.

Now we cannot speak for these men and women and we wouldn’t pretend to do so. We do not know if they have ever acknowledged God in a fundamental fashion. We do know that these men and women are intelligent people and they would not have used the word “demon” without the thought that many people would surmise that they were leaning toward some sort of knowledge of a supreme God. With this in mind, saying that UFOs and alien abduction lean to or are parallel to the demonic is as far as they dare go; to say that there is a spiritual realm and that it is a world of demons and fallen angels on one side, and a Supreme Creator God on the other. They saw that the word “demonic” was right at the line and that they dared not cross that line. That isn’t really a problem because most people who are astute with semantics can pick up on what they were saying.

It is so very important that these ladies and gentlemen have equated alien abduction to be a spiritual event. It can be compared to Copernicus stating that the Earth orbits around the sun and not the other way around. It can be compared to Martin Luther nailing a copy of the *95 Theses* to the door of the Castle Church in Wittenberg. Both of these acts challenged the established order of the time and they also caused people to think outside of the norm. Generally, those who administer the established norm do not appreciate nor do they accept those who operate outside the established norm. Both Luther and Copernicus suffered the wrath of the Catholic Church during their time of research and their subsequent publishing of that research.

The authors have been classified as those who think outside of the norm. We’ve experienced the lack of toleration from not only the secular community, but many times from the Christian Church, although with time some in the latter have been shown through divine revelation that we should be listened to and that our research needs to be reexamined. We’ve been able to expose people to our research through the internet and we’ve had some surprising contacts. There have been numerous letters and even phone calls received by us; calls by people who want to tell us that they always knew that there is something unwholesome about the UFO/alien abduction theme. They’ve told us that they just couldn’t put their finger on what was wrong, but after reading our websites they can finally lay a hold of what it is; that the entities involved are demons or fallen angels.

Every year Jim Wilhelmsen and I sit in a booth in Roswell, in the Convention

Center, and we hand out literature and we tell people about what we have found. While we always hope that the visitor to the booth will be someone who needs our help we have discovered that the majority of those who visit us are people who knew that there was something wrong with UFOs and alien abduction but they just couldn't figure it out. Many times people leave us with the rest of the pieces of the puzzle fit firmly into place. Many have told us that we are an answer to prayer and they thank God (right there and then) for the confirmation that they needed to hear concerning what they have always believed. To say that our times at the booth are rewarding would be a gross understatement but we use that word because no other word adequately describes the feelings that we have at the end of each day there.

So yes, the secular people who have done the research and found that the alien abduction act has a spiritual connection have hit the nail right on the head. They can be classified as a metamorphic component to the secular answer to the origins of UFOs and the alien abduction perpetrators. Sometime in the future, probably very soon, all UFO and alien abduction researchers will come to the realization that the phenomenon has a spiritual component. When this happens there will still be two contenders in the ring. There will be those who hold to the fact that these entities are fallen angelic and demonic, and there will be those who adhere to an occult and New Age answer to the abduction question. We will look at that component in the very next chapter.

CHAPTER FOUR: Psychics/Channelers

What the New Age Has to Say About Aliens

When writing anything about the New Age Movement we have to pin down exactly what that movement is. The New Age is like some strange creature with countless tentacles, all coming from a central core, all different and yet all the same if that makes any sense. Knowing full well that writing my own definition of the New Age would be nearly impossible I researched to find an adequate definition for the New Age and the search resulted in what I present below. We now present this meaning to you so that you can ruminate on it for a little while before proceeding in this chapter. According to the Wikipedia Online Encyclopedia, The New Age can be defined as:

> New Age (New Age Movement and New Age Spirituality) is a decentralized Western social and spiritual movement that seeks Universal Truth and the attainment of the highest individual human potential. It combines aspects of cosmology, astrology, esotericism, alternative medicine, music, collectivism, sustainability, and nature. New Age Spirituality is characterized by an individual approach to practices and philosophies, while rejecting religious doctrine and dogma.
>
> The New Age Movement includes elements of older spiritual and religious traditions ranging from atheism and monotheism through classical pantheism, naturalistic pantheism, and panentheism to polytheism combined with science and Gaia philosophy: particularly archaeoastronomy, astronomy, ecology, environmentalism, the Gaia hypothesis, psychology, and physics. New Age practices and philosophies sometimes draw inspiration from major world religions: Buddhism, Chinese folk religion, Christianity, Hinduism, Judaism, and Sufism; with particularly strong influences from East Asian religions, Gnosticism, Neopaganism, New Thought, Spiritualism, Theosophy, Universalism, and Western esotericism. Additional phrases which refer to the New Age Movement include All is One and Mind-Body-Spirit.
>
> The modern New Age Movement began in the late 1960s and early 1970s, although elements can be traced back to the late 19th and early 20th centuries. It gained momentum in the 1980s and strengthened with the Harmonic Convergence event in 1987. Diverse individuals from around the World

practice New Age Spirituality.

Simply put, the New Age Movement is like a gumbo recipe. Each person has a recipe, and they throw into the recipe the things that they like the best. There is no doubt in our minds that the New Age Movement is the "Mystery Babylon," that is spoken of in the Book of Revelation in the Bible. Babylon in Nimrod's day was a culmination of all the peoples under one religion, and the goal of the New Age is to bring about the same thing in our current era. The reason why they hate Christianity so fervently is because those of us who adhere to the teaching of Jesus and practice those teachings know that He is the way, and the truth and the life, and that no man can come to the father but by Him. Those in the New Age see that as being narrow-minded and bigoted. It is also the reason why the entities that call themselves extraterrestrials dislike Christianity because we stand in the way of their implementation of a one-world order with a one -world religion.

The Prophets of the UFO Religion:

We did a little bit of an analytical study in the preceding chapters and we came to the conclusion that modern-day researching of the UFO realm is more akin to religion than to a science. We saw that all the offices of a religion were fulfilled by those in the UFO movement, from the deities right down to the common man. If a person looks at this whole phenomenon and the study thereof, and they approach that study honestly then they can come to no other conclusion.

We are making the claim here that those in the occult realm, especially those who channel the entities who claim to be extraterrestrials, are akin to the prophetic office within a religion. In a religion, a prophet is someone who receives a message from their deity and passes down that information to those in the religion that the deities have designated as the recipients.

In the UFO religion such persons are those who are steeped quite deeply in the occult sciences. Most of the time they are people that our grandparents called fortune-tellers, and our fathers called psychics and we currently call channelers. In the past these prophets looked like gypsies who were versed in these nefarious activities and performed them to make money from a superstitious public. The channeler of today is many times a very well educated person skilled in the writing arts and capable of putting together literature that can beguile the most ardent skeptic.

There are other prophets who assign to themselves fame by organizing sects

within the UFO religion, who do so by mixing science with psychobabble and they are adept at spreading their lies and deception. Groups like the Raelians and The Ashtar Command have a working knowledge of science as well as the ethereal arts and they are masters at making science sound like religion and religion sound like science.

One such deception was a book distributed by The Ashtar Command titled, *Project World Evacuation*. The messages in the book were channeled by a woman who was called Tuella (pronounced two-lah). In the book she channels four fallen angels who go by the following identities; Sananda, who claims to be Jesus Christ; Kuthumi; a third entity who calls itself Andromeda Rex; and of course the fourth who goes by Ashtar. The basis of the book consists of these four fallen angels working through Tuella, giving her messages to share to the world. The messages talk about coming world catastrophes and an upcoming worldwide evacuation of souls from the Earth so that they can be safe during the world changes. It is of course more complicated than that, but that gives us a fair synopsis of the book.

The basic message of the book is that some of the New Age faithful will be taken from the Earth before the bad things happen and they will be spiritually evolved while in the giant UFOs that the fallen angels say are around the Earth. They will be brought back after the chaos on Earth is over. Interestingly they also say that there are some (eluding to Christians) who will not accept the changes and who will be sent to another place a short while for special training.

What I saw as alarming about this book is that there is a lot of scripture inserted into their message and if a person isn't grounded in the real Jesus Christ then it would be possible for that person to fall into the deceptions given to Tuella by the fallen angels. There are some giveaways though that anyone with discernment can pick up. One of the more amusing was the following, when Ashtar was talking about Sananda Jesus. Ashtar says, "I am Ashtar, of the star ship upon which our Beloved Commander, Sananda, travels and calls His home, although of course, this great Avatar is capable of being anywhere and everywhere simultaneously."

The Ashtar Command would have us believe that this person is Jesus and that he is omnipresent. He could encompass the whole universe but chooses to live in a UFO somewhere in the cosmos. This is in stark contrast to the God of the Bible who asked the Jewish people if they really thought that the creator of everything that exists could fit into a temple in Jerusalem.

Another wake-up call for the readers of the book is written on its cover. On the cover a claim is made that this great evacuation is forecast to happen before the year

2000. Seeing that we are writing this book in 2009 it seems like the "forces of the universe" cannot make accurate predictions, showing us clearly that they aren't representatives of God Almighty.

There was a third thing that I feel not many people picked up on. The cover of the book has a large UFO above the Earth that is using a beam to transport what looks like people. If one looks at the Earth however there is a clue as to where the book comes from. Looking at the Earth on the cover one notices that the continents are placed in backward fashion. They are aligned so that the only way they could look that way is if someone could take the skin of the Earth and turn it inside out. I don't believe that this is a mistake, but a clue to the discerning eye. Since the ship is beaming the people off of the transverse Earth one could take it to mean that the ship is really upside down in hell pulling people into hell instead of into space.

The book is a mixture of science and religion. It is woven together using the psychobabble of the fallen angelic entities and the truth of the Bible. This should not be a surprise because Satan was caught several times in the annals of scripture trying to lie to God's people and even God himself. This however is how the New Age works and its trickery has deceived a lot of people thus far and will continue to deceive in the days and years to come.

In order to see how these organizations work we can look at two of the major ones, The Ashtar Command and the Raelians, both of which have a sizable membership. When you see their mission statements and their philosophical views you will be able to see how these prophets of the UFO realm fit quite well into the UFO religion. After that, we will look at the third area of UFO prophets, the abductees themselves and you will see how the message remains the same, and how it is hostile to only one group of people on Earth; those who follow and serve the real Jesus Christ.

The Raelians:

The Raelians are a group of people who have an exo-political mission on Earth. The best place to learn about this group is from their website. Having perused their site we find the following statements, which can be found at www.rael.org.

> On the 13th of December 1973, French journalist Rael [Claude Maurice Marcel Vorilhon] was contacted by a visitor from another planet, and asked to establish an Embassy to welcome these people back to Earth…

He told Rael that: “We were the ones who designed all life on Earth,” “You mistook us for gods,” “We were at the origin of your main religions,” “Now that you are mature enough to understand this, we would like to enter official contact through an embassy.” (Brackets mine)

And we also learn the following on the website:

“Human Scientists From Another Planet Created All Life On Earth Using DNA. Traces of this epic masterpiece of creation can be found in all religious writings and traditions. It is to them that Moses, Jesus, Buddha and Mohammed referred. It is now time to welcome them.”

If a little more clarification is needed we should look at another message gleaned from the Raelian website:

“The Raelian Revolution is boldly bringing about a complete paradigm shift on our planet. The Messages given to Rael by our human Creators from space contain the world’s most fearlessly individualistic philosophy of love, peace, and non-conformism: a beautiful combination of spirituality, sensuality, and science.”

So on the word of one man, Claude Maurice Marcel Vorilhon, we have the message of fallen angels who would have us deny our Bible and the ministry of the Holy Spirit to follow a philosophy that contradicts all that is God. According to Rael and the entities that talk to him, God is not real, at least not God as God Himself depicted in His Holy Word. Advanced humans created us and they gave their messages to all the great philosophers who mistook them for gods. They say that we’ve matured and that this maturity will allow them to talk to us. What they’re trying to say in a clandestine way is that “since you’ve cast off the only true God you are debase enough for us to manipulate you.”

If you investigate the Raelian movement enough you will find that they like to use symbols. One of the most striking symbols is the Star of David within which they have put the Swastika. Actually by doing this they are showing their true intent. Anyone who has studied the New Age movement in any depth knows that it is nothing but theosophy. Further study of the Nazi movement shows that it also had its foundations in theosophy. The Raelian movement is nothing but a modern day Nazism packaged in an extraterrestrial gift-wrap. Again we are reminded of the words, “Those who cannot remember the past are condemned to repeat it.”

The Ashtar Command:

The Ashtar Command is very much akin to the Raelian Movement. Both receive channeled messages from demonic sources and both have a New Age gospel that they are trying to give to the world. The difference with the two is that the Ashtar Command tends to publish more readily the raw content of the beings that they channel. Where the Raelians seem to be more reserved, the Ashtar Command seems to be more spiritually aggressive. Ashtar Command is the group that published the book *Project World Evacuation* that we mentioned earlier in this chapter. Let's take a look at The Ashtar Command, who they are, and what they have to say.

First let's take a look at Ashtar and see who and what he really is: "Ashtar is an inter-dimensional Being from another Galaxy! He is here on our behalf to help us in our ascension and spiritual evolution! He is working in conjunction with Sananda (Jesus) and Archangel Michael! He is our Shepherd looking over his flock with much Love and Tenderness!" (Source: http://ashtar.galactic2.net/indexb2.html).

If you look at the name Ashtar and it looks familiar to you, it probably is. Ashtar is not a newcomer to the block, but has been around since the creation of the universe. We find that the Moabites called this entity Ashtar; the Canaanites referred to it as Ashtart and the Babylonians called it Ishtar. There is at least one reference to Ashtar in the Bible: "And they forsook the LORD, and served Baal and Ashtaroth" (Judges 2:13).

The Ashtar Command has gone even farther to help us to understand who they really are. They describe themselves as:

"The Ashtar Command are humans from other Worlds of God's Creation, i.e. … Extra Terrestrial Beings of Light that exist on the higher dimensions of spiritual life. They are of the original Adam Kadmon Blueprint, i.e., perfected humans that vibrate to the Christ Vibration and are part of the Collective Christ: Lord Sananda, The Ashtar Command, Galactic Command, Intergalactic Command, the Ascended Masters of Light, the Angels of Light and Councils of Light serving Mother/Father Creator Source and the Divine Plan" (Rev. August Stahr: "About the Ashtar Command;" http://www.star-esseenia.org/).

If a person is versed in the warnings of the Bible, then the preceding testimony by The Ashtar Command should have sent bells and whistles alarming in their heads. They go out of their way to equate themselves with "light beings," which the Apostle Paul exhorts us to be wary of: "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness, whose end will be according to their works" (2 Corinthians 11:13–15).

Jesus Christ also warned us to be careful in the last days because there is going to be a greater deception that could deceive even the most ardent believer in him: "And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them" (Luke 21:8).

So as we see by their statement, they have said that they are part of the "Collective Christ" which means that everyone in that collective considers himself to be Christ. In addition to that they say that they are angels of light. It doesn't take a rocket scientist to put together the message that they are sending to us. Clandestinely they are telling us that they are the fallen angels.

One interesting attribute of the entity Ashtar is that most of those who have reported seeing this fallen angel have noted that he is tall, with long blond hair and blue eyes. This description is very similar to the early entity reports where some of the close witnesses and/or abductees reported that the aliens had the same stature and the same physical attributes. This also fits in well with theosophy and Nazism which both saw the master race (Aryans) as having the same physical characteristics.

So now we have seen that the New Age Prophets, clothed in occult spiritual garb, have been a main outlet for the fallen angels. We've just done a cursory study of the major players and we haven't even touched on many others who have published papers and books about the messages that the fallen angels have given to them. Occult bookstores and even stores like Barnes & Noble stock such books and there is a plethora of places online that offer the same swill. We'll now explore in general terms the messages that abductees have brought back from their meetings with the fallen angels.

Alien Messages to Abductees:

The fallen angels, in an attempt to brainwash their victims, often fill their minds with information that is really an indoctrination of New Age dogma. The message that they teach includes but is not limited to the list that we now provide:

1. They preach a New Age Gospel – mankind can attain godhood
2. They teach reincarnation and karma
3. They encourage the "doing away with" biblical truths:

A. There is no sin or need for atonement

B. Jesus did not die on the cross for the atonement of sin

C. Jesus' resurrection was an alien intervention

D. Jesus was just another ascended master, half human and half alien.

4. They teach "moral relativism" (everyone has their own truth)

5. They teach pantheism (nature is god and god is nature)

6. They teach "one world government"

7. They teach "one world religion" (ecumenism)

8. They teach a coming world calamity

The abductees are taught doctrines that in effect are New Age. Ideas like karma, reincarnation, and other eastern religious ideas are taught and endorsed. They are taught that mankind is currently stuck in an old evolutionary pattern and that in order for mankind to "evolve" to the next step of spiritual evolution, mankind must let go and let the aliens (fallen angels) guide them through the process. In the darker realms of the New Age this is called the Luciferic Initiation, which is cited in the words of New Age guru David Spangler. "Lucifer comes to give to us the final gift of wholeness. If we accept it then he is free and we are free. This is the Luciferic Initiation. It is one that many people now, and in the days ahead, will be facing, for it is an initiation in the New Age" (David Spangler, *Reflections on the Christ*, pg. 45).

While we cannot ascertain that the aliens have ever used the words, "luciferic initiation," they use other words like *spiritual evolution* and *raising our vibratory level* to say the same thing. Of course they would not come out and mention the name of Lucifer because too many people would see the truth and resist this movement in force.

In effect, talking about this "process" is just another way to indoctrinate people in the doctrine of karma and reincarnation. A major theme of the New Age is to take names and doctrines and give them new names, hence the New Age, but in reality it is the "old lie" repackaged. The purpose of this new vibratory level according to the aliens is to bring us closer to Nirvana, or to attaining godhood. This was illustrated by Shirley McClain in the 1987 movie, *Out on a Limb*, where she is standing on the beach shouting at the ocean the words, "I am god." They teach that humans can

become part of the "collective christ," where everyone in that vein becomes one with the "christ consciousness" that fills the universe. I have run into many people who claim to be adherents of the New Age and a majority of those asked will respond with affirmation that they are Jesus Christ. They are not saying that they are the person of Jesus Christ per se, but they are affirming that they have achieved christ consciousness and are therefore part of the collective christ. This is a satanic counterfeit of the "Body of Christ" that all Christians are participants in, but we stop short of saying that we are making any claim to His divinity or His preeminence. He is the vine and we are the branches; part of the same plant but separate and distinct.

The fallen angels teach that we need to do away with biblical truths. The belief in the eastern mystic religions teaches the doctrine of yin and yang as a foundational truth. Without going into a long thesis on this doctrine, yin and yang's principal teaches that everyone has both good and bad and that the good and bad cancel each other out. How a person lives life determines which force, yin or yang, is predominant in a person's life. If a person's life appears to have more good than bad there is a possibility, according to karma, that their next incarnation will be one of peace and freedom; however if a person is more bad than good their next incarnation could be so that they will have to pay for the evil of their prior incarnation.

Of course with this sort of belief there is no recognition of sin. If a person is bad they could just continue to be bad and take the attitude that they will pay for their evil the next time. If there is no sin then there is no need for atonement for sin, therefore there is no need for Jesus' atoning sacrifice. Since this is diametrically opposed to biblical scripture we therefore recognize it as a doctrine of demons which scripture warns us to be wary of.

The fallen angels teach that Jesus never died on the cross, or that if he did die on the cross he was just another human that died under capital punishment. Sometimes they teach that Jesus' resurrection wasn't miraculous nor was it for any Godly purpose, and that it was at best an alien intervention to bring back to the cosmos one of their own. Some proclaim that Jesus was just another human/alien hybrid who came to teach the truth. In their eyes and in their teaching, Jesus was just another enlightened person in the same league with Buddha, Mohammed, Vishnu and all of the others that formulated religions and philosophies. The strange thing about all this is that all the messengers taught different messages, and all of them said that their doctrine was the only correct one. If the aliens wanted to teach truth then how come they taught different messages to different people? No, it is quite evident that the fallen angels taught different religions to different peoples to cause division and strife, war and sorrow.

In an odd twist, the fallen angels teach the doctrine of moral relativism; the belief that there is no sin and that evil and good are relative to each and every person and/or being. What might seem evil to one person might seem perfectly okay to another person and nobody has the right to determine who is right or who is wrong. On the flip side of this, the fallen angels in the guise of extraterrestrials are quick to condemn mankind for being bad stewards of the Earth and its resources. They say that mankind has made a mess of itself and Earth's environment and that they (the aliens) are here to set us straight. Looks like what is good for the goose isn't good for the gander where the aliens are concerned.

The aliens send us a message that they condone pantheism; the belief that god is nature and nature is god. They were the originators of environmentalism and are the gods that are associated with that doctrine. From that doctrine come the idea that mankind is overpopulating the world and that there needs to be a major reduction in the population of the Earth if we want the Earth to be happy and to survive. This is also where the idea of Gaia originates. According to the New Age, Gaia is the Earth Goddess, the personality, spirit, or soul of a living and breathing planet. This doctrine states that the Earth is a living organism and that it can be hurt or helped by the actions of mankind. The aliens use this doctrine to promote the idea that someday soon the Earth will protest its treatment by producing Earthquakes, climate changes and all sorts of purging actions by a very angry Gaia. This is one of the primary themes of the book, *Project World Evacuation.* Do you see how all of the teachings are starting to coalesce into one religious movement?

The fallen angels teach that a one-world government is necessary for the Earth to survive. They teach that the sovereign state has been the problem with human society. They teach that only when the world comes together under one banner can all the world's problems be solved. Of course this falls right into line with the Book of Revelation, which states that the whole world will come under one banner and under one leader.

They teach that it is vital for the world to come under one belief system. They teach that all religions, while founded with good intent have only led the world to war and strife time after time. They know that in order to get the world united, a one-world religion has to be put into effect. This religion will be the New Age. From the description of the New Age that we inserted at the beginning of this chapter we saw that the New Age draws a little from every religion. This will satisfy just about all those who the New Age will try to bring under its reign. There will be two religions that will not fall into that category; Bible-believing Christians and Bible-believing Jews. Interestingly enough, these are the two groups that the forces of evil go after during the last seven years of human government on Earth.

Their final tool in their bag of tricks is that they tell people that there will soon come a time of calamity upon the Earth. Human beings have a natural inclination toward wanting to know the future. This is the reason why fortunetellers have always been so popular, even if they are not correct in their predictions. For many years a woman named Jean Dixon would come out with predictions for the following year. Some of her predictions would come true because they were so general in nature that they had to come true. But the majority would not pan out. Even though she had a terrible track record people would wait each year to hear what Jean Dixon had to say.

The fallen angels know that humans have this inclination and they use it for their benefit. They know that people are preoccupied with "end of the world" scenarios and it is probably because mankind instinctively knows that it is in a fallen state and deserves judgment. Mankind would like to know in advance when judgment time will be so that it can play the harlot and repent just before judgment comes, but that information is never forthcoming.

It must be realized that the fallen angels have an advantage over mankind. They too know that mankind is in a fallen state, and they too know that mankind will be judged for its rebellion. They are skilled at reading the signs of the times and they know that the world is a mess, mainly because they are the ones that caused almost all of that mess. So what better way to dupe mankind than to create chaos upon the Earth and then to come upon the scene to make things better and appear to be saviors. When these beings convey to the abductees that calamity is coming upon the Earth and they show movies of the calamity, it is just a preparatory oracle to indoctrinate the abductee and the abductee's audience about a "Wag the Dog," tactic that they will orchestrate and produce. Mankind unfortunately will be the sucker in their movie.

We've been able to see without a shadow of a doubt that the whole UFO phenomenon and those who participate in it, whether they are fallen angels, demons, or human beings, are really just part of the New Age UFO Religion. In this chapter we looked at the three classes of prophets that make up the religion and how they operate, whether willingly or ignorantly in the UFO faith.

Are There Congregants Who Are In Denial?

There are people who would certainly fall into the camp of those who deny that the UFO phenomenon and its adherents are a religion. Frankly, most of those who are secular in nature, who study this phenomenon, would deny that they are

religious when it comes to UFOs and aliens. We've run into quite a few who get angry when this suggestion is made.

In 2008, Joe and I were speakers in Roswell. We spoke at the CE4 Seminar and the topic of our study was "The Unwanted Piece of the UFO Puzzle." We presented the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon as being spiritual and that it manifests into the physical. We presented it as a court case, claiming that the UFO community has had over sixty years to present its evidence to the public and now it was our turn to present the Christian explanation of what UFOs and aliens truly are.

We presented to the audience that the aliens are in fact fallen angels and that their message was one of deception and we proved it by presenting what you have read in prior chapters and will read in the chapters that follow this one. We found that we ran into hostility from the secular researchers and at first we didn't know exactly why. On the way home from Roswell the Holy Spirit revealed to me that we were attacking the philosophy, therefore we were attacking the philosophers. The secular researchers who were offended by our presentation constantly told us that we had put them on trial during our presentation, but that had never been the case. Without even knowing it, these people have allowed the aliens to become their gods and when we told the truth about them, the disciples were offended.

I had seen this before, one case being with a fellow that I work with. This man says that he is a Roman Catholic, but he probably hasn't voluntarily gone to church in many decades. If another Catholic were to ask him to church he would probably make up some sort of excuse why he couldn't make it. About three years ago Pope John Paul II passed away and my coworker had a genuine sorrow, which is natural and to be expected. During our conversation he expressed that he thought that the pope had been something special with more holiness than other popes. I gently explained to this man that all people are equal in the eyes of God and that God is no respecter of persons. What happened then could be compared to the energy released when a rubber band snaps under pressure. The man became hostile toward me and accused me of being a Catholic hater. For the rest of the week he would make comments to everyone around that I hated Catholics and because of that I was a bad Christian. After a couple of weeks of explaining how I loved Catholics but didn't agree with the church doctrine he finally calmed down. It just proved to me even more that when a doctrine is questioned, those who lay claim to the doctrine, even if they haven't adhered to the doctrine themselves, will be quite offended.

The same thing happened to us after the conference in Roswell in 2008. An associate of mine posted a short blurb about what he thought about the Roswell Conference. In the blurb he mentioned that he had noticed that some of the speakers had gone into attack mode and he mentioned that this could have been because we

had attacked their UFO religion. One person in particular took this to be an affront and wrote to my associate demanding that he remove any mention of the UFO community being religious. The researchers in the secular UFO community want all of the blessings of the UFO religion, but they become aggressive when they are called religious. The man who was the most offended and two of his colleagues spent the next two months belittling us and berating us on blog-talk radio programs. They told the audience that we were narrow-minded and they were offended at how we presented our thoughts as fact and not conjecture, which is what they would have liked. We're not sorry that we brought to the forum our thoughts, and how we believe and could prove them using the Bible, common sense, and the thoughts of some of secular community's own gurus.

One of the things that people will do when you question their philosophy is they will try to twist your words around, like we saw with my Catholic friend, and also like what happened in Roswell during the question and answer time. Peter Robins had been the moderator of the conference as well as the question and answer period after the conference. One of the questions that Mr. Robins asked me was why we felt impelled to place the UFO research community on trial. We had never even mentioned them as being on trial, but we mentioned a lot that the entities and their message to mankind were on trial. Mr. Robins has a wonderful mind and is an incredible thinker, but somehow he had twisted that all around.

Mr. Robins also told us that he had met many of the researchers that we quoted from in regard to the UFO phenomenon being inter-dimensional. He said that he even knew some of them personally and are friends with some. He said that for every quote that we had from secular researchers regarding the inter-dimensional aspect of UFOs and aliens, he could find many other quotes that would suggest that they considered the phenomenon to be physical. I had to remind Mr. Robins that he was probably right, but that all the quotes that he could bring in that regard had already been out on the table for many years, yet the things that we had brought were somehow always suppressed. I told him that we had brought these things to light so that all the information could be out for everyone to consider when making their own determination about UFOs and aliens.

With my Catholic friend or with people like Mr. Robins and the others who took offense to our message, the problem isn't that the truth that we brought to them wasn't built on a firm foundation. No, it was the fact that the information we brought to them rocked their foundation and violently shook the UFO philosophy or, dare I say, religion that they hold so dear to their hearts. These sorts of things only shore up even better the fact that researching about UFOs leads to the New Age which leads to faith and ultimately the practice of that faith.

SECTION TWO: The Biblical Judeo/Christian View

CHAPTER FIVE: So, What About the Christian Church?

As I sat to write this chapter I ran into a conundrum that I had to pray about and of course meditate on. Having been a Messianic believer in Jesus for over thirty years I have seen many reactions and have been given a variety of opinions when I asked people what they thought about UFOs. The subject is difficult to bring up in these circles because UFOs and especially alien abduction still have the stigma that has long since eroded away from the secular community. There are a few brave souls who will talk freely about the subject and there are some who will talk quietly about it. There are also those who will talk about it outside of a church setting and some will not talk about it at all because they still see it as lunacy.

The challenge was of a multifaceted nature. While I knew that the later parts of this chapter would be easy and palatable for most who read it, I knew that the first part would be difficult. How does one talk about an area of ministry that most of the clergy and churches either don't see, or they see and do not want to accept? How do I go about discussing areas where the church should be active but they ignore? How does one discuss these things without being offensive and turning people away? The answer was given to me almost instantaneously. I would have to just start writing and know that the Holy Spirit would take control. If He writes the script and someone gets offended then they take offense to what God is trying to tell them. He showed me how the prophets and even Jesus Himself angered people when they told them the truth. He told me to just write, and if they get mad, they get mad. Knowing however that the Holy Spirit is a gentleman, I knew that the words would be presented as if Jesus Himself were sitting at the keyboard typing the pages.

A question had come up during a panel discussion that I was a part of after Joe Jordan and Jim Wilhelmsen spoke at the 2005 Ancient of Days Conference in Roswell, New Mexico. The three of us made it known to many people that we would be available to answer questions and that any question could be asked, as long as it pertained to UFOs, and especially if the question asked had to do with religion and UFOs and/or alien abduction. While many questions were asked and all of them addressed in length, one stood out to me, so much so that I felt compelled to take on this question and answer it. The question, posed by an elderly man was, "This is interesting stuff. I want to know why we have never heard it in church. Why hasn't it been preached from the pulpit?"

This was a valid question and one that touched my heart. I think that Joe, Jim,

and I, as well as a myriad of Christians who have researched the phenomenon, have asked that same question. Being a researcher who has approached pastors and congregants about the subject, and both seeing and hearing their reactions, I have come up with the following conclusions that answer that question:

1: They have never thought of broaching the subject.

2: They have thought about it, but have no knowledge so as to teach on it.

3: They are scared and don't want to teach about it.

4: They think that it is demonic so they don't think that it is proper to teach it.

5: They refuse to think that it is real, or they think that it is lunacy.

Several hundred years before the birth of Jesus Christ a prophet named Ezekiel walked along the roads and pathways of Israel and Judah. God talked to Ezekiel one day and told him the following:

> Again the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Son of man, speak to the children of thy people, and say unto them, When I bring the sword upon a land, if the people of the land take a man of their coasts, and set him for their watchman: If when he seeth the sword come upon the land, he blow the trumpet, and warn the people; Then whosoever heareth the sound of the trumpet, and taketh not warning; if the sword come, and take him away, his blood shall be upon his own head. He heard the sound of the trumpet, and took not warning; his blood shall be upon him. But he that taketh warning shall deliver his soul. But if the watchman see the sword come, and blow not the trumpet, and the people be not warned; if the sword come, and take any person from among them, he is taken away in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at the watchman's hand. So thou, O son of man, I have set thee a watchman unto the house of Israel; therefore thou shalt hear the word at my mouth, and warn them from me. (Ezekiel 33:1–7)

Simply put, God told Ezekiel that he was responsible for Judah's welfare and that if God told Ezekiel to warn Judah about something then it was Ezekiel's obligation to warn the people. If he did warn them and they didn't listen and died while in their rebellion then their demise would be on them, but if he didn't warn

them then their fate would hang over him. This is clearly cut and rightly divided and understandable.

About six hundred years later another man would echo similar words, not as detailed as God's command to Ezekiel, but with the same implications: "And He said to them, 'Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature [person]. He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned'" (Mark 16:16–16, Brackets mine).

For those who do not know what the Gospel is, it is as follows. Gospel means "good news." The good news is this; that mankind is in a fallen state and, since the wages of sin are death, then every person is destined to experience the second death; that being eternal separation from God. *However*, God made a remedy for this dilemma in that He sent His Son as a sacrifice for mankind and that every person who accepts Jesus as their savior accepts that sacrifice as their own and they are forgiven of their sins and thereafter they are free to pursue an earthly life as Children of God and eternity in fellowship with God Almighty.

The words of God to Ezekiel, and Jesus to His disciples, are the same; they are commissions to hear from God and spread a life saving message. It is the commission of the Church of Jesus Christ to preach the Gospel of Christ, but it is also the commission of that same church to watch for ideas and individuals that could come against people in order to pervert the truth or sway people away from the truth. In our current age there are many ideas and people who are sent by Satan for the express purpose of pulling believers away from the truth and also to bury unbelievers in lies; burying them so deep that they feel so hopelessly covered that they surmise that they can never find freedom.

In Christendom today there are ministries that cater to just about every specific group and subgroup imaginable. People have been delivered from groups or ideals that held them captive and they are led by God to minister to those who remain in what formally held them captive. The church is quick to lend a hand with most of these ministries, slow to accept or lend a hand with others, and still others are shunned and sometimes even feared.

It is a human trait to shy away from and even fear things that are unknown. When something unfamiliar presents itself before us it is good to be wary because it causes us to pull back and study something before that thing is accepted and/or embraced. In all actuality, we do this all the time and many times it seems like second nature to us. Examples are easy to find if we think about it for a minute or two. Most of us won't drive into a bad neighborhood after dark, or we shy away from taking illicit drugs, or we stay away from restaurants where the menu contains

items that most us think of as garden pests and such. A person who is allergic to a certain medication knows not to take certain drugs that contain the drug's ingredients because it could cause them to go into anaphylactic shock and they could die. They look at the ingredient label whenever they purchase a new medication and they make sure that if the medication is a prescription item, that they ask the druggist many questions about the new preparation.

So how does all of that apply to, let's say being a church that can't or won't minister to those in the UFO or alien abduction realm? That is an excellent question that can best be answered by using an analogy. Let's say that you are a druggist and a customer comes into your store with a new prescription. You look at the script and then you enter the order into the computer using the customer's profile. The script is written for a common antibiotic that contains an ingredient that quite a few people have an allergy to. Since the customer has been to your pharmacy before you assume that all of his or her information is in the computer, including a profile of other medications that the patient takes, and all the drug allergies that the customer reported the first time they visited the pharmacy. Another druggist entered all that information into the computer and you assume that they entered the information in correctly. You could look at the customer and say that they look healthy and that there really isn't an infection. With that assumption you could tell the customer that the doctor was wrong that that their illness doesn't exist, that it is all in their head, imaginary. Lacking the diagnostic skills of a doctor you would be wrong in this assertion.

You could assume that the doctor's diagnosis is correct and you can presuppose that the other druggist did his job and that the person's profile lists that he is allergic to this medication. However you're not sure that your coworker did it accurately and instead of asking the customer again about drug allergies, you don't want to deal with it and refuse to fill the order causing the customer to go home without any kind of medication and the customer's condition could worsen and he/she could die.

You could fear that a call to the doctor to change the medication, to get him/her to change the order to a safer antibiotic will get the doctor mad at you. You could fear that the customer will not like waiting the extra time for you to call the doctor and that they will tell their friends that your pharmacy is too slow. You feel that they will tell their friends that they should go somewhere else for their medications. With this in mind you panic and you tell them that you are out of the medication and that they need to go somewhere else to fill the order.

There are a variety of different things that can be done, all wrong and all affecting the customer's health and your business in negative ways. But there is a

right way to do things. You can ask the customer about their drug allergies again. They will tell you that they are allergic to this type of drug, which will confirm to you that your coworker did his job correctly. You tell the customer that the doctor made an error and that you need to give him a quick call to get the script changed to a safer medication. Ten minutes later the customer is walking out the door, safe in the knowledge that you are a good pharmacist, that you care and that they can trust you with their lives. They will tell their friends about you and you will prosper. The doctor will appreciate you for saving him or her from a lawsuit and you gain their respect.

A druggist and a pastor have a lot in common. They hold the very lives of the people they serve in their hands. The information that they possess about their fields of expertise will determine the health of their customers/congregants. The druggist must know about all the drugs that are in his realm and the pastor must have a working knowledge of the entire Bible and he must possess some of the gifts of the Holy Spirit—also the fruits of the same. The druggist must know how to apply the medication to best suit the needs of his customer and the pastor must know how to apply biblical principles in his life and in the life of others. The druggist must know about poisons and how to administer remedies and the pastor must know about false doctrines and how to combat them so that he can guard his flock against them and to warn his local community about them. Finally, the druggist must be compassionate and care not only about the welfare of his customers, but of anyone who might come into his store needing assistance just as the pastor must care about the welfare of his people and anyone else who will come into his fold honestly seeking help. Finally, neither of them should ever consider that they are all-seeing and all-knowing. The druggist must rely on drug information books and software and the pastor must rely on God's Word and the Holy Spirit who interprets that Word.

I think that it would be a disservice if we didn't touch on the reasons why the vast majority of the church has not addressed this subject. If we delve into these reasons then perhaps we could identify with the reasons and maybe even help to educate some in the clergy. We do not want to in any way ascribe blame, but we want to foster understanding, to establish wisdom and to help others who have asked the same questions about the clergy's lack of response, to understand why the church has been slack in this area. Only after something is understood can it be addressed, and if need be, fixed.

Ignorance:

Some are offended by the word "ignorance," thinking that it implies that a

person or a group of people are willfully senseless. Just like many words in the English Language its common usage has evolved to mean just that, but the true meaning of "ignorant," is "unaware or uninformed." In our use of this word our intended meaning is the true meaning.

There are many instances where we know nothing of things, people and places that pertain to subjects that we have either no interest or no exposure to. Recently this very thing happened to me at my place of employment. At my workplace there is a man who can do voice impersonations fairly well. He walks around work talking like famous actors and he makes us chuckle whenever he is present. This week he walked up to me and did one of his impersonations and when he was finished he looked at me like he was waiting for me to acknowledge who it was he was mimicking and he was waiting for a laugh to usher forth from me. When I didn't laugh he asked me if I was aware of the actor that he was imitating and I told him that the voice didn't ring a bell with me. He told me that he was acting like an actor named Keanu Reeves and I asked him who that was. He listed five or six movies that this man acted in and when he got to the last one, *The Matrix*, I knew who he was talking about. He walked away from me like he had just encountered someone just arrived in our present time from a time warp.

Now, if he had imitated Sean Connery or even Mike Myers then I would have guessed it right away, but seeing that he imitated someone who is fairly recent in movies, I was "unaware" of the person he was acting like. Taking into account that I have never been a big fan of Hollywood and that I am also pushing fifty years old were things that helped to preclude me from knowing things more recent in the movie realm. The experience of my ignorance can help us to perhaps understand why pastors and clergy haven't been very knowledgeable about UFOs and alien abduction. A common misconception is that the only thing that pastors do is preach on Sundays and conduct Bible studies and prayer vigils during the week. In actuality, pastors spend the week tending their flocks. Their weekdays are spent working on their messages, but also in answering incessant phone calls from parishioners, conducting counseling appointments, finagling over financial affairs, and many other things. When the day is finished, they head home to tend to family matters. Truth be told, they have very little free time. With these things in mind, it is quite understandable that ignorance plays a part when it comes to a pastor's lack of knowledge of UFOs and alien abduction.

As we mentioned earlier, pastors have to watch out for their flocks. This means that they have to investigate anything that could harm the welfare of their flock, either through direct intervention or through propaganda from unwholesome sources. We could surmise that before the "Heaven's Gate" mass suicide in March

of 1997 that it is possible that some clergy never thought of UFOs and alien abduction or probably never took any sightings or accounts very seriously, if they heard about them at all. In the eleven years that have followed that tragedy, the Christian Church knows all too well that UFOs and the cults that sometimes arise from belief in them are all too real. So, while ignorance was a valid explanation before 1997, it is not a valid one now.

Lack of Knowledge:

There are, no doubt, many pastors and other clergy who have some knowledge about the subject, but not enough knowledge to teach about it. This is true in many of our lives. Take for instance the subject of mathematics. Every one of us knows math to some degree, some have more knowledge and some have less. The majority of the common adult population knows enough math to pay his or her bills, negotiate financial contracts and such and do the other basic things math-wise that life demands from us. If however someone were to approach most of us and offer us an opportunity to teach mathematics to high school students or entry college level adults we would decline their offer because we would find ourselves inadequate to meet the demands that would be set upon us in such a circumstance.

The UFO research field is very similar in scope. On the surface it looks quite rudimentary in an almost nonsensical sort of way, but when one delves farther and farther into the phenomenon they realize that it is a series of roads with dead-ends and switchbacks and many obstacles that have to be overcome in order to make the simplest of progress and to obtain factual evidence to present to one's peers. Simply put, pastors do not have enough time to invest in such research, unless of course they are called to focus on the UFO phenomenon as a full-time ministry. For the most part they rely on Christian UFO researchers who are more than willing to present the phenomenon from a biblical view, who can also explain things from a material standpoint. It is our contention that this is a viable method because it allows the message to be given by an authoritative and reliable source while it allows the pastor to pursue the leading of his flock.

Yet another mindset that could affect whether or not a pastor approaches the topic of UFOs and alien abduction is if there has been any local UFO or alien abduction activity. The mindset could exist that would say that if the UFO activity is in Gulf Breeze, Florida and Mexico City, Mexico and the pastor and his flock is in a small farming community in, let's say Nebraska, then there is no immediate need to bring the subject to the congregants.

What we've found in this regard is that even though UFOs and alien abduction

have not been manifesting locally there is still quite a bit of knowledge that comes to congregants via the news media and also by way of the many documentaries on UFOs that appear to be on some of the oddest (unrelated to the phenomena) channels on cable television. One such outlet has been "The Travel Channel," which by its very name should be an innocuous outlet of travel information, but instead has been known to feature "marathons" of documentaries regarding UFOs and other related paranormal subjects. We've found just by asking in our own churches that there are quite a few of our fellow church family members that have developed opinions about UFOs being a undeniable fact, that there probably are extraterrestrials visiting the Earth and that to them it is an undeniable fact that there is intelligent life elsewhere in the universe based solely on the premise that the universe is infinitely large. We've been told many times that these people believe that taking into account that there are so many planets around other stars in our galaxy that they think that it would be a waste of space by God if He had not placed life on those worlds. These beliefs are not biblical but they had to be implanted into the minds of our friends by some medium, and that medium is the press, radio and television. The subject of UFOs and alien abduction should be presented in a biblical context from the pulpit to counteract these urban legends that are being whispered in the pews and openly discussed in the privacy of the homes of people who are called to be set apart for God.

Fear:

Fear of teaching on the subject is a main factor in the decision not to teach on UFOs and alien abduction. Like we've mentioned earlier, there is still a stigma (albeit not as bad as before) where UFOs and abduction are concerned. Many pastors are anxious about keeping the census high in their congregation because tithes and offerings support the church and the pastoral staff and go to other endeavors such as foreign missions. If a pastor were to teach about UFOs and some of the higher profile givers were to leave the church because they think that the subject should not be taught, it could put the church in financial jeopardy.

Another fear that comes into play is the fear that if a church were to preach on the subject of UFOs and alien abduction it could harm their reputation. For the most part church communities are akin to the secular neighborhood in which they reside. They all hold to the main tenets of the Christian Faith but they all differ in minor areas and this adds a wonderful flair to the community in whole. It seems however that in every town there is one church that stands out from all the other churches because it holds to what the others term an idiosyncrasy. In some communities churches become ostracized because they might dress a certain way, or they dance

during worship or they speak Holy Spirit Tongues or one of a variety of other practices that the majority of people see as quirks. Imagine the stigma that a church would feel if it were labeled as "The UFO Church," or "The Flying Saucer Fellowship." For some, going against convention and the risk of being labeled as "different," is simply unacceptable.

Another avenue that we have to touch on where the "weirdness" of UFOs is concerned is that, as we mentioned earlier in the case of Heaven's Gate, cults have arisen from avid interest in the subject in question. When we were children we played a game called "telephone." Our teachers would many times use this game to teach us that information can become corrupt as it moves along the human chain. Our teacher would line the class up in a single line and would tell the first person in the line something. For the sake of our text, let's say that the teacher told the first person in the line, "The sun is shining and the flowers are blooming." By the time the last person in the line got the information it would be something like, "The hot sun burned the blooming flowers and now they are all dead." Basically the same words are used but supplements were added and the meaning was turned around by the time it reached the final destination. A genuine fear could arise by a pastor who pondered about preaching biblically about UFOs and alien abduction. It is conceivable that a simple phrase like, "The pastor down the street is preaching about UFOs and alien abduction and how it is demonic," could in a short time become distorted to, "The pastor of the church down the street is a demoniac and he's teaching that the Bible says that UFOs and alien abduction is a Godly sign and wonder."

One practice that people utilize in their attempt to cope with what they think as bizarre is to practice, "live and let live." I'm reminded of what my parents would tell me when I would see a bee hive or a wasp nest around our home. I had heard bad things about bees and wasps and didn't like them around and when I would talk about this, my mother would tell me, "If you don't bother them then they won't bother you." This works well for the most part except for one major flaw in this philosophy; nobody was able to convey this message to the bees and wasps, so they didn't know to practice it. They would always seem to fly in the car through an open window or into the house when entered or exited and they would cause a stir. Their invasion of our domain would cause the natural response to help them to exit with an outward motion of the hands, which in turn would upset the creatures and their defense mechanism would cause them to sting.

The "live and let live" doctrine is closely related to the "ignore it and it will go away" doctrine. The Christian Church in the last two hundred or so years has taken this approach to many things. We tend to treat things like they are fads; practices

that people hold to for a short while but soon tire of and then discard. There is some scriptural basis for this method as is illustrated in a scripture in the book of Acts:

> When they heard this, they were furious and wanted to put them to death. But a Pharisee named Gamaliel, a teacher of the law, who was honored by all the people, stood up in the Sanhedrin and ordered that the men be put outside for a little while. Then he addressed them: "Men of Israel, consider carefully what you intend to do to these men. Some time ago Theudas appeared, claiming to be somebody, and about four hundred men rallied to him. He was killed, all his followers were dispersed, and it all came to nothing. After him, Judas the Galilean appeared in the days of the census and led a band of people in revolt. He too was killed, and all his followers were scattered. Therefore, in the present case I advise you: Leave these men alone! Let them go! For if their purpose or activity is of human origin, it will fail. But if it is from God, you will not be able to stop these men; you will only find yourselves fighting against God." (Acts 5:33–39)

Gamaliel was taking the "ignore it and it will go away" approach to the preaching of the Gospel. History proves that it did not "go away" but instead perpetuated over the centuries. While Gamaliel's advice was righteous and his instructions were prophetic there are other times when it is improper to take the "just wait and see" attitude. We have to again remember God's command to Ezekiel, which in turn falls upon every person whom is dedicated to Jesus Christ; that being that we cannot sit idly by and watch evil approach without warning our people. While it is true that the evil that comes about in our physical realm tends to ebb and tide with time, the destruction of souls is eternal. There are no peaks and troughs in the spiritual world, only black and white, righteousness and evil, and we need to look at our actions and their relevance in the whole scheme of things.

While it is true that many fads, like disco music, have had their day in the sun and later died, there are many things that do not die a quiet death, but instead they fester like a wound that spreads and consumes its victim. One of the best ways to illustrate this is to quote the words of Pastor Martin Niemöller, a survivor of Nazi brutality during World War Two. He experienced firsthand the consequences of seeing evil and not addressing it or fighting against it. As we read his words we can only imagine how he felt in his earlier days when he realized the significance of his inaction, and how it must have haunted him for the rest of his living days. Perhaps facing fear at its onset is more bearable then living with the results of having

ignored it:

> First they came for the Socialists, and I did not speak out—
>
> because I was not a Socialist.
>
> Then they came for the Trade Unionists, and I did not speak out—
>
> because I was not a Trade Unionist.
>
> Then they came for the Jews, and I did not speak out —
>
> because I was not a Jew.
>
> Then they came for me—and there was no one left to speak for me.
>
> *Pastor Martin Niemöller (1892–1984)*

Something else must be mentioned about the "fear factor" when it comes to talking about the demonic realm. If one takes the Bible seriously and they have read their Bibles and have seen the personages in the God's Word, especially in the New Covenant joining in the war against this realm, then they have to realize that they will have to join in that same fight.

When soldiers go into battle they need two things for sure; a battle plan and weapons. Contention being that in both of these things, the battle plan and the weapons are spiritual and thus it means that the soldier in this war must have the baptism of the Holy Spirit, along with all the gifts that go along with that baptism. The plans and the weapons have to go together or one cannot battle.

"For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled" (2 Corinthians 10:3–6).

There are some churches that believe that the gifts of the Holy Spirit are not valid for our day and age. They believe that these gifts existed at the birth of the church of Jesus Christ and to aid in that birth and the infancy of the church. They surmise that after the church grew strong that the gifts were somehow taken away by God. Some go even farther and state that churches that move in the Holy Spirit gifts are in error and some go as far as to say that those gifts are counterfeit and

satanic. Care should be taken before making such assertions because if the gifts are genuine, and the authors have every reason to believe that they are, then making statements of their illegitimacy is blasphemy of the Holy Spirit; the one sin that Jesus said is unpardonable.

Simply put, the fear that arises from the thought of teaching about the demonic realm in such a church is the fact that although they might know the battle plan, they do not recognize the weapons that God has given every believer so as to be able to implement and follow through with the battle plan. They are in effect akin to conscientious objectors in the military services, wearing the uniform but refusing to pick up a weapon and fight because they do not recognize that the weapons are real.

There is a chilly current running through some circles of Christianity in our current age. That chill is brought about by an indoctrination taught to them that the demonic realm is extremely powerful, so much so that it cannot be vanquished. Some of this indoctrination has been brought about in the way of documentaries that are aired on television. These secular programs show many different aspects of demonism but like the majority of such programs, they never come up with any clear or concise thoughts one way or the other. In the end people are left with the notion that demonism is an everyday event that is a part of life and that this dogma must be accepted, much like Benjamin Franklin's statement that the only two sure things in life are death and taxes. If the documentaries are correct, then we have to tack on demonic oppression and possession to Franklin's equation.

By far the worse indoctrination tool in Satan's toolbox is the Hollywood movie industry. Far too many movies have been made about demonic oppression and possession and very few of them lead to any victory by the victims over the attackers. By far the best known and most damaging of these movies is titled, *The Exorcist*, a movie whose ending leaves one of the exorcist priests dead from a heart attack and the other dead after he becomes possessed by the demon and the priest kills himself by plunging to his death after jumping out of a second-story window. Another movie, titled, *The Entity*, is supposedly based on a true story about a single mother who becomes the attention of a demon who rapes her repeatedly in different modes and fashions. She seeks the help of a university's paranormal research department that tries unsuccessfully to help her rid herself of her attacker. There is really no help afforded her and at the end of the movie words are splashed across the screen explaining that the victim moved from her home but that the entity followed her and that the attacks still continued.

Many other movies have been produced with themes similar to the ones above. With the media and Hollywood inculcating secular society and an impotent church, giving them the message that demons are all-powerful and cannot be vanquished it

can be understood, but certainly not condoned that there are some churches, devoid of faith, that are afraid to teach about demons.

It Is Demonic and Too Outlandish to Preach About:

Both authors of this book live in the United States. Joe lives on the East Coast and I live on the West Coast. In just about any city and town in America one can find a variety of churches of just about every flavor imaginable. A quick gander at the phone book for the Sacramento Metropolitan Area yielded 586 churches in ninety-one categories of the Protestant movement. Also listed were fifty-seven churches of the Orthodox variety, which included Catholic churches along with Greek and Eastern Orthodox and other such organizations. Not counted were the churches that are considered "cults" and listings for non-Christian religions that were labeled under the "church" section of the phone book. In all, there are 643 churches that recognize Jesus Christ in the traditional form of foundational Christian theology, or they belong to denominations that have, as a rule, held those core beliefs.

For the purposes of what we are trying to mete out in this section we can establish certain criteria to winnow out different churches so as to establish which ones would be accepting to teaching about the UFO and alien abduction enigma and its relationship (and precipitation thereof) to the last days of human government on Earth. There are for instance, some pastors, priests, bishops and even cardinals who accept the alien agenda as being of a benevolent nature and they see the descending of these fallen angels upon the Earth as being close to if not equal to the second coming of Jesus Christ.

"Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness" (2 Thessalonians 2:9–12).

Others fail to hold to the basic foundational truths of the faith in that they deny that mankind is in a fallen state of being and that there is a literal hell to house the fallen angels and all those who deny God. There are some who believe that Jesus wasn't the Son of God and God Himself; instead they cling to the notion that He was just a great man or an ascended master who came as a great teacher. In other words, these pastors, and most probably their congregations bear the name Christian but in all actuality that is all that they bear because they do not hold to the basic

tenets of the Christian Faith. There is very little chance of sharing an Ezekiel sort of message in this type of fellowship because seeing that they hold fast to their notion that there is no hell and no evil then any conceptual thought of fallen angels and demons is moot to them. You can't warn a people about an enemy if they do not believe that their sworn foe is their enemy, or that the enemy even exists. As a matter of fact, the Bible says to have no dealing with such people: "Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away"
(2 Timothy 3:5).

There are some churches where there is a clear division between the clergy and the congregants. In these churches you are either one or the other and there is no crossing over from congregant to clergy without the sanction of the church and years of training in seminaries. These churches disarm the congregants by not preaching about the right of every believer in Jesus Christ to be an effective warrior both in prayer and in deed. They recognize a demonic realm, but the fighting of such a realm is relegated to certain members of the clergy and no one else. Because the clergy chooses to separate itself from the "common folk" they see no need to talk to them about the demonic realm. The congregants are taught that the clergy is supposed to take care of all ministry needs and they're also taught that all they need to do is to show up for services at prescribed times and to support the church with financial gifts and in doing good deeds in the name of the church.

All in all we feel that the churches that think of the subject of demonism as being too outlandish, or those who think that the warfare all believers are call to is relegated to only those who are trained in institutions to do so, are very mistaken. The commandments of Jesus Christ and the instructions of the Apostles as recognized in the authorized version of the Bible, are for all believers, from the homeless person, to the white-collar worker and to presidents, kings, pastors and prophets. The Apostle John tells us:

> Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand. John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven Spirits which are before his throne; And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the Earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen." (Revelation 1:3–6)

It is lunacy and not worth the mention:

Attesting personally, it has been my experience by and large that most in the clergy would rather label the phenomenon invalid and those who take interest in it part of a lunatic fringe. When the subject is brought up in conversation many will get the polite condescending grin on their face, or roll their eyes and some might even make a comment like, "Oh the UFO thing," before they politely excuse themselves and join another conversation.

There are some in Christian church fellowships that have tried to talk to their spiritual leaders about their former (or current) demonic oppressions, alien abductions and such only to be turned away or to be told that they are all messed up that they should just ignore it or pray about it and it will go away. Many times they will come to our website having searched the internet in one last effort to get someone to listen to them, or to see if there are others who have the same problems. They are pleasantly surprised to find our website and they find comfort knowing that they are not crazy, that they are being victimized by demonic and/or fallen angelic beings, and that they can make it stop.

It never ceases to amaze us that many ministries are recognized by the churches at large, but not others. Generally, ministries are accepted in a church in relation to its place in the neighborhood. Not all churches are that way, but the majority is. For instance, a church in an affluent neighborhood would probably be less tolerant of a ministry toward indigent people than a church in the inner city would be. On the other hand, a church in a poorer neighborhood would have a hard time understanding a ministry that is called to minister to rich executives. However, if the pastors of those two churches were to sit down and discuss their ministries they would probably see validity in each other's callings to specific populations.

Chuck Girard, a Contemporary Christian musician from the Jesus Movement back in the 1960s and 70s, tells of an incident that happened to his band when they were just starting out. They were a ragtag group of hippies with long hair, beards, blue-jeans, and all of the other accoutrements that toted around with hippies back in that era. A pastor in a church had heard their music and asked them to come and sing for his church at an event that he was having. When they walked into the building the people there (who were very conservative) saw them and a lot of the congregation were aghast by what they saw. How could these outcasts of society minister to us, and how could such people who looked like they did even be Christians? But, as Chuck relates to the camera, when the music started and the Holy Spirit filled the room many people broke down and tears were running down

the faces of the persons who a few minutes earlier had rejected any notion that Chuck and his band could possible minister in Jesus' name.

I'm sure that there were people, who left and went home when they saw this group of hippies walking into their church. These men didn't fit the preconceived notion of walls that many in the congregation had erected, and those who left before the concert started missed out on a phenomenal time of ministry and blessings from God Almighty. But hasn't this same thing happened many times over during the history of mankind? The prophets who spoke to Israel and Judah were all rejected because they didn't present a message that the people wanted to hear. Enoch was rejected by what possibly was a population of billions of people before the great flood of Noah's time. Jesus Christ Himself was rejected by many of the Jewish leaders because they wanted a Messiah who would conquer Rome and set up His Kingdom, and in that they missed their visitation from God.

Historically, the modern church has always been twenty to thirty years behind the times. We're always right on where the Gospel is concerned, but in the application of the Gospel we tend to lag behind. Thirty years ago society at large thought that the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon was lunacy that was relegated to the mentally ill or farmers who'd had too much of their homemade liquor. As the years have progressed secular society has recognized the relevance of UFOs and alien abduction and most people now take it seriously. The problem is that they only have one view, that being the view of secular people who research the phenomenon from a secular scientific view.

It seems like this has always been the case with just about everything that the church has considered outlandish. When evolution was just starting to challenge Christian doctrine only one church took it seriously and fought it back in 1925 in Tennessee. With that shallow victory everyone just relaxed, thinking that the war was over. The result of that error is that the religion of evolution is now taught in every school in the land, as a fact and not a theory. When homosexuality was in its infancy in our present society nobody thought the homosexual worthy of being ministered to and saved. Ignored and allowed to run amok, the homosexual community now affords a large political agenda that opposes traditional Christian theology and has lobbied against our faith. Islam is another philosophy that was once ignored as the misguided belief of desert Bedouins and that it would never impact the Christian West. The church at large thought the Muslim unreachable so it never made any serious attempt to bring Jesus to them. All of these things were for the most part ignored, but they all knock at our doors now and they are all self - seeking, self serving and all hostile to fundamental Christian theology. Unrighteousness never goes away on its own, and when it's not confronted by the

blood of Jesus Christ, the power of the Holy Bible, and in the fullness of the Holy Spirit, it will always grow stronger.

All Hope Is Not Lost:

I know that the picture that has been painted here doesn't give the Christian Church much credit for doing anything good for abductees. We have to point out that it isn't all doom and gloom and that every month there are churches and pastors who are being awakened by the Holy Spirit and are coming to knowledge about UFOs and alien abduction. Not only are they waking up, but they are taking an active role in bringing the victims of alien abduction into their fellowships and ministering to them and helping them to bring alien abduction to a victorious end.

There are some Christians who are reading this who have spent months and years, and perhaps like myself, decades to find a pastor and congregation that will accept the reality that UFOs and alien abduction are the acts of fallen angels and their demonic hordes. The only advice that we could give is to advise you to keep pressing on in your search for fellowship. The years that I had spent in what seemed like a desert of denial on the part of pastors and fellowships were well worth the wait. In those times I had to rely on Jesus Christ as my fortress and shield. The shaking of the heads, the patronizing pats on the shoulder, and the snickers behind my back only served to make me stronger and more determined to find a pastor and a church home that would accept my calling and my ministry.

It took a quarter-century of walking in that wilderness before God Almighty led me to a wonderful fellowship which I now attend. When I first walked into Last Days Harvest Ministries I felt the apprehension that I always felt and wondered how long it would take before people would start giving me those stares and snickers. This time was different though because a sister in Jesus had paved the road, so to speak. She told the pastor, Tom Mooney, about my ministry and he was excited and wanted to meet me. We met and he expressed to me that he knows that UFOs are real and that they are spiritual and that they're here to deceive mankind. Pastor Tom has been a proponent of my calling by Jesus and he has introduced me to other local pastors that see the UFO phenomenon as demonic and who see my calling as bonafide and just. I can't express the joy that has been found in being led to this group of believers in Jesus Christ.

There are others too who have heeded the call to participate in the liberation of people from the delusion of the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon. Pastor Michael Terone in the New York Metropolitan area is another who has been called by Jesus Christ to preach against the fallen angels in the alien disguise. His boldness

even led him, in addition to performing research on the subject, to having a seminar at his church where he laid out the whole alien agenda and the subsequent remedy for this enigma. Pastor Tony Fadely is the pastor of Whole Loaf Worship Center in Cocoa, Florida; the church where Joe Jordan attends. Tony is well aware of the end day's delusion and how UFOs and alien abduction fit into the mix. He and his church are ardent supporters of Joe's ministry as are pastor Tom and Last Day's Harvest are of mine.

Yes, the Church of Jesus Christ is finally awakening from their slumber. They are finally seeing that there is a satanic agenda in UFOs and alien abduction and they are starting to combat it tooth-and-nail. The interesting thing is that the churches that are joining in the fight aren't the big Pentecostal churches nor are the large mainline churches joining in to any large degree. It is the small churches. Two such churches in Roswell are Hispanic churches that have jumped into the fight without regard to their name being besmirched. They have no real political ties to the town nor do they have any financial stake in joining in the fight against the delusion. They just want to do what is right, regardless of the cost, and they have been kept free from acquiring all the baggage that comes when a church makes alliances with civil authorities or other worldly compromises. So the future looks promising and with Jesus' help, and a lot of fervent fasting and prayer for that help, God's Kingdom will be triumphant in getting the word out about UFOs, aliens, abduction and where it all comes from. More importantly, we will be able to free people from the demonic oppression and possession that ride on the shirt tales of the whole phenomenon.

CHAPTER SIX: Is There Life in the Universe?

The Biblical View

My web ministry is The Delusion Resistance Ministries. We are involved in exposing elements of what the Bible calls the "Great Delusion" to the public. While we offer our articles to the general public we especially want to warn believers in Jesus about the Great Delusion so that they do not fall for the lies that are coming upon the Earth. Whether people listen is up to them and to the leading of the Holy Spirit. If anyone reads what we present and accepts it, then that is wonderful and they will be blessed and prepared. If however someone reads the material and they mock it or just dismiss it then we feel confident that they have received the information and how they handle it is between them and the Lord. As always, we encourage everyone who reads our articles to check them with scripture, just like the Bereans did when presented with the New Covenant.

Since the subject matter of this article deals with enforcing that we are alone in the Universe, and because we use scripture we feel that believers in Jesus will probably be most interested in this chapter of the book. We also know that there are unbelievers who are seeking truth and we welcome you to read this material and ponder it in your heart.

It is evident that there are many thoughts flowing through mankind as a whole as it searches for the truth about our origins. Many ask about where we come from. The main purpose for that question is really the final destination of the linear pathway that our origins flow toward. Mankind is obsessed with the future, spurred on by the question of where we all end up when our life here on Earth ends. Do we just lay in the ground where we are eaten by worms; futility being our final end? If not, is there an answer to the mystery of death? Do we live on, and if we do, what happens in that afterlife? The three monotheistic religions all point to the fact that there is much more after our short life on Earth ends. The problem however is which message to trust. The answer to the question lies in faith and many want the answers to life without having to practice faith. They would rather have someone come to tell modern society the answers to life. They don't want to have to rely on ancient books and dead prophets and eyewitness accounts of people who have been departed for centuries, even millennia. No, divine revelation isn't of any use to them. They would rather have someone come in person to explain the answers to them; someone that they can touch and see. They want front row seats in a live performance and they keep their fingers crossed, hoping that at the curtain fall, their surmised ending will be the one that they witness personally.

Since secular society doesn't believe that the promises of the Lord are true, they are looking for an outside source for the information that they seek. They know that they cannot trust another man because people are faulty and sooner or later they seem to fall to hypocrisy. They look for someone more advanced than humankind, someone who perhaps is so much more advanced than they are; and that this savior is closer to the Lord for that very reason. Enter the search for Intelligent Life in The Universe. For some reason there is an assumption that just because a being might be more advanced technologically it must therefore be advanced morally and spiritually. One just has to look at how mankind acts compared to many animals in the fauna kingdom and that notion will quickly be dispelled. Money would be better spent looking for or propagating intelligent and moral life here on Earth.

When I am asked if there is life in the universe, or when someone declares to me that they believe that there is life in the universe I first have to distinguish what they mean when they use the word "life." We know that there are two kingdoms in this world; the animal kingdom and the plant kingdom. Of course there are some organisms that seem to fall into a middle class because they have characteristics from each kingdom, but for our discussion in this article, there are only two kingdoms. We know that there is a basic intelligence of sorts in both kingdoms. When we say that there is a basic intelligence we are referring to the ability of everything to act in accordance to the way that DNA forms the structure. When we're talking about intelligence, we refer to animals of a higher order that can create things; can communicate with speech, have independent thought and can reason so that they can create technology. On Earth, mankind is the only creature who fits into this mold. We believe that mankind is the only one in the universe who can create in this way because we are unique. We will attempt to prove this using biblical scripture and common sense.

Intelligent Live Versus Non-Intelligent Life:

Many times when this discussion is brought up in conversation the person asking the question will ask me if I think that there is life out in the universe. That question has to be answered by throwing back a question at the person asking them if they are talking about intelligent life or unintelligent life. Sometimes that question will baffle that person because they weren't expecting to answer a question. I'll explain to them that by intelligent life I mean life that is technologically advanced; life similar to human beings who can make tools and reason; beings who can think and reason and apply their thoughts practically. By unintelligent life I mean simple life forms like plants or like animals that exist without really knowing that they exist, like the animal kingdom that lives on Earth apart from human beings (in essence,

animals that have a body and maybe even a soul, but not a spirit).

It is not inconceivable to think that there is unintelligent life in the universe, although my personal thought is that this is not the case. Could there be life on other planets, such as lower life forms that have no spirit? Possibly. Could there be planets that have lush forests and wheat fields as far as the eye can see; again it is possible. But if we're looking for it with any sort of scriptural insight, then we have to suspect that these worlds do not exist. Let's look at what the Bible says about this matter.

Sin Has Affected All of Creation:

To get things started and to see how the fall of mankind threw a wrench into all of creation we first have to look as scriptures pertinent to this fact. The first is found in Paul's letter to the Romans:

"For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope, Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now" (Romans 8:18–22).

We have to realize that when Adam and Eve sinned their sin not only corrupted mankind and Earth, but it corrupted all of creation. The entire universe became a fallen realm. Because the whole of creation is corrupted, the Lord is going to have to create a whole new heaven and Earth. This is found in the two scriptures that follow:

"Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness" (2 Peter 3:13).

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea" (Revelation 21:1).

The Greek word for "heaven(s)" in the two scriptures is "ouranos" and it means either the enveloped expanse of atmosphere around the Earth, or the heavens that we see at night or the place where the Lord lives. Needless to say, there will be a new universe; the creation of a new Earth and the rest of creation. This will not include the third heaven as it is separated from the creation and not part of the fallen order. Earth seems to have a particular significance to the Lord over the other places of the universe. Had the Lord seen Earth as just one of thousands or millions of other inhabited planets then I am sure that He would have had his

inspired writers state this in their writings. Instead, we see a new Earth and a new heaven.

If there were extraterrestrial entities living on other worlds then this judgment would be absolutely unfair to them. To make a point, imagine if you will, a race of beings on another planet somewhere out in the universe. They are living peacefully and perhaps they even know the Lord as their God. Then, one day they don't hear from the Lord anymore and their land doesn't produce food and their once-perfect world starts to decay. They didn't deserve any of this but because a man and woman on a distant planet fell from the Lord's grace, they did too. The Lord is not unjust and he would not subject them to this fate. But, we have to remember that they are part of the same creation and since the Lord has made it quite clear that what happens on Earth affects all of creation, they have to fall under the same judgment.

Let's take things a step farther. If the universe was perfect before the fall of Adam and Eve, which we believe the Bible proves quite emphatically, then the fall of mankind brought difficulties to beings on other planets. In other words, before the fall of mankind there were no asteroid impacts, no exploding comets, no nova or supernova, and there were no black holes. But because of Adam and Eve's fall all the other beings in the universe are now subject to those things? Again, I cannot see nor do I see the Bible providing evidence for such things.

Messiah's Ministry and Death and Resurrection Were For Earth Only:

One of the most wonderful provisions of the Mosaic Law was that of the Goel (go-el) or the Kinsman Redeemer. Without going into some long exegesis about the Goel, we can sum up this Mosaic provision by saying that the Kinsman Redeemer was a close relative who was commissioned to pull his kinsman out of a jam. In a modern day scenario he would be the rich brother who would pay off the loan-sharks, or the lawyer who would represent you in court or perhaps the big brother who protects the little brother from the bullies at school. The interesting thing is that in the Mosaic Law, this person was only qualified to be a kinsman redeemer if he was a blood relative. Let's review the scripture in Romans again to build more upon this: "Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God" (Romans 8:21).

It is quite obvious that the term, "children of God" refers to people who are born of the Holy Spirit through faith in Jesus and by this act they become adopted "sons of God." But notice something important about the scripture. The creation is not delivered from bondage until the people who come to know the Father through Jesus actually attain their sonship. It is only after we obtain our liberty that the

creation can be delivered.

"For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell; And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven." (Colossians 1:19–20).

When a word study is done of the scripture above something interesting is found. We notice that the word "things" is found in this scripture three times. There really is no Greek word for "things" in the Greek text of this scripture. So, it can be written differently without taking away from the meaning of the scripture. The way it could read is: *For it pleased the Father that in Him all the fullness should dwell, and by Him to reconcile all to Himself, by Him, whether on Earth or in heaven, having made peace through the blood of His cross (author's paraphrase).*

This seems to suggest that not only is mankind going to be reconciled back to the Lord, but every atom in the universe will be brought back into the Lord's will. The Greek word for "reconcile," *apokatallassM,* is defined as, "to bring back to a former state of harmony." Someday in the near future Jesus will come back to redeem not only mankind, but all of creation.

Getting back to the kinsman redeemer; we know that he has to be someone who is a close relative. In other words, he has to be a human, or have a human genetic makeup. We see this quite clear in the incarnation of Jesus: "But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons" (Galatians 4:4–5).

Just as it was because of a kinsman (Adam) that we became a fallen race, it had to be a kinsman that would have to redeem us from our fallen condition. Jesus is called "the last Adam," as we see in the following scripture:

"But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive… And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit" (1 Corinthians 15:20–22, 45).

If we turn to the book of the Prophet Isaiah we see that in the fifty-third chapter there is a description of Jesus and his ministry. Interestingly, this prophecy was written more than seven hundred years before Jesus actually walked the Earth. Let's read it and then explore its meaning where our subject matter is concerned:

> He is despised and rejected by men, A Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him; He was despised, and we did not esteem Him. Surely He has borne our griefs And carried our sorrows; Yet

> we esteemed Him stricken, Smitten by God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; The chastisement for our peace was upon Him, And by His stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; We have turned, every one, to his own way; And the LORD has laid on Him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed and He was afflicted, Yet He opened not His mouth; He was led as a lamb to the slaughter, And as a sheep before its shearers is silent, So He opened not His mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment, And who will declare His generation? For He was cut off from the land of the living; <u>For the transgressions of My people He was stricken.</u> (Isaiah 53:3–8)

This scripture talks exclusively about the ministry of Jesus Christ where His suffering is concerned. It is talking about the atoning sacrifice that Jesus performed for us. Notice that the whole passage above is talking about human beings. But we must look at the last sentence that is presented above. The passage says, "For the transgressions of My people He was stricken." Notice that it doesn't say that He was stricken for the transgressions of the whole universe, nor does it mention any other beings, only humans. Looking at *Strong's Concordance of the Bible* we can do a word study of a word in this sentence that should prove who the sacrifice was for.

The word that we will examine is the Hebrew word for "my people." The Hebrew word is *`am and it has the following meanings:*

1) nation, people

a) people, nation

b) persons, members of one's people, compatriots, country-men

2) kinsman, kindred

Notice that the definitions for the Hebrew word for "people" exclusively deal with human beings. There are those who might contend that "by people" could mean any "humanoid" beings. We see however that in the Lord's eyes, and by His definition, He is referring to human beings. This point is driven home by definition number two, which states that "people" doesn't just mean human beings, but it means kinsman, which refers exclusively to the "human family." If you were conceived by two human beings and have only human chromosomes in your DNA then you fall into this category. If you don't then you have bigger fish to fry.

The word "people," is still defined in our modern language as meaning exclusive human family. If one does a study of the word "people," in a modern dictionary one can find the following.

The Cambridge Dictionary defines "people," as:

1: men, women and children

Merriam Webster defines "people," as:

2: human beings making up a group or assembly or linked by a common

interest

3: human beings, persons—often used in compounds instead of *persons*

4: the members of a family or kinship

It would be foolish to argue that in the Lord's eyes, the atonement of Jesus was for anyone other than the human family. So that we can finally drive the point home, let's look at one more scripture that proves that Jesus' atonement is for mankind and mankind alone:

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved" (John 3:16–17).

Notice that the scripture only mentions our world. It does not mention other worlds nor does it mention the universe or any other aspect of creation. To retain fidelity in our message we must study the word "world" in the passage because it could have more than one meaning. The Greek word for "world" in this passage is the word *Kosmos*, and it does have more than one meaning. Let's look at those meanings:

1: the world, the universe

2: the circle of the Earth, the Earth

3: the inhabitants of the Earth, men, the human family

4: the ungodly multitude; the whole mass of men alienated from God, and therefore hostile to the cause of Christ

There are three other definitions but they are totally outside of the context that we are studying here and we've omitted them because they do not apply. There are those who could construe through the first definition that it could mean other worlds in the universe. This meaning however is a generalized term and it is basically using the places of the world and the universe to describe what we in modern times know as space/time, or the material universe. In essence, it is not talking about any certain place or places, only the general creation.

The second definition doesn't fit the context of the passage either because it is in essence narrowing the generalization of the first definition. It is obvious that the Lord doesn't love the material world because it is in a fallen state and the Lord showed John in Revelation that the Lord would someday destroy the universe and create it anew (a new heaven and a new Earth).

The only definitions that fit the context of the passage are the third and fourth

definitions. They are describing fallen humanity as the one needing salvation. Note that again this is exclusively for humans, not any other race.

Since mankind is the only race that is fallen then it is quite obvious that there are no other races throughout the universe. Remember, when mankind fell, his fall corrupted all of creation and all of creation travails and groans for the correction that only the Lord can bring about.

Could it Be That Jesus Goes to Each Planet and Dies for Each Race Throughout the Universe?:

From what we have seen so far it would seem quite bleak for any extraterrestrial civilization that might exist. They would obviously be subject to the fallen nature of all creation and therefore would be subject to the penalty of sin: "For the **wages** of sin is **death**; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord" (Romans 6:23 KJV).

Remember that the gift of eternal life was procured through Jesus for mankind alone. If there were civilizations out in the universe they would be forever lost and would ultimately spend eternity swimming in the lake of fire. Some have proposed a sort of loophole that would allow any civilization in the universe to be saved. That provision would be that Jesus would visit every planet that contained intelligent life (beings with spirit, soul and body) and that he would die a sacrificial death, be buried and would rise again. We believe that the Lord provided scripture because this argument would someday come up. This scripture reads:

"Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God" (Romans 6:8–10).

And:

"For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit" (1 Peter 3:18).

And:

"He then would have had to suffer often since the foundation of the world; but now, **once** at the end of the ages, He has appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself. And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment, so Christ was offered once to bear the sins of many. To those who eagerly wait for Him He will appear a second time, apart from sin, for salvation" (Hebrews 9:26–28).

These scriptures do well to tie things up even more. First, the Lord is telling us that Jesus died once and isn't going to die again. All that He could do has been

done. Second, it implies that there is nobody else to die for. It implies that life on Earth is the only life in the universe. Third, He died on the Earth, solely for mankind.

God Is Not A Polygamist:

One of the beautiful things about our relationship with the Lord is that He considers the church of true believers to be a Bride for Jesus Christ. We can see that in a couple of scriptures where it is so beautifully penned:

"Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish" (Ephesians 5:25–27).

And:

"And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints" (Revelation 19:6–8).

In the beginning, in the Garden of Eden, the Lord made a provision for a man and a woman to be married, and that a wife would have one husband and a husband would have one wife. This is seen in the very beginning, in Genesis chapter two: "Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his **wife [not wives]**: and they shall be **one** flesh" (Genesis 2:24 KJV [Brackets mine]).

If we were to suppose that Jesus would go to one planet after another, dying and raising from the dead then we would have to suppose that He would establish a church on every world. As we saw in the scriptures in Ephesians and Revelation, the church is the Bride of Messiah. That being the case, if Jesus would go to one planet after another to procure salvation and resurrection then He would take unto himself a bride on every planet. The sum of this theory would be that Jesus would have a bride on each planet and in fact would be a polygamist. He would be violating the very precepts that He founded, making Him a hypocrite. The Lord is not a hypocrite and He is not a polygamist.

What Jesus Christ Did Was A New Thing:

There are other things that go against the idea that Jesus is crisscrossing the

universe living, dying and resurrecting on many planets. We learned above that what Jesus did was once and for all. He never has to die again. Since the fall of mankind corrupted the whole universe it would be unfair if other races on other planets suffered because of the human race, and the Lord would not cause others to suffer because of what was done on one planet. Second, Jesus became a kinsman redeemer. He became a human to offer salvation to humans. There is no mention in the Bible that there is life on other worlds nor does it mention that Jesus' death was expiation for any other race than mankind. Some like to use the scripture in the tenth chapter of John and equate it as meaning that there are inhabitants on other worlds: "And **other sheep** I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd" (John 10:16).

As mentioned above, those who hope that there is life on other planets like to use John 10:16 for proof as a trump card to assert their faith in this matter. They try to assert that Jesus was using some sort of code when talking to some of the Pharisees and others who were following him and that in this code he was talking about extraterrestrial life. But first we must look at whom Jesus was talking to. He was talking to a hostile crowd who weren't really taking his message to heart. He wouldn't use any sort of code with those who were really out to trap him and those who didn't care. The Pharisees knew what Jesus was talking about. They knew that he was referring to the gentiles when he referred to the other sheep. He was using the clear separation that the Jewish leaders of the time had enforced; that Jew and gentile were different groups of human beings and he was telling them in no mixing of the words that the gentiles would be welcomed into the Kingdom of The Lord. He was telling the Pharisees something to this effect, "Well, I have spoken to you for some time and you will not accept that I have been sent from Father God and that I am God. Since you refuse to hear, I will see to it that my Gospel is preached to the gentiles and they will hear my Words and they will accept me. I will put them with the sheep of the Jewish fold and they will all be one people and I will be their shepherd."

We have to examine a bit farther the words of the above scripture in the original Greek language. This is necessary so that we can see without the shadow of a doubt what Jesus was saying here.

The first word that we will examine is the Greek word for "sheep." The word in Greek for "sheep" is *probaton*. In its broadest definition it could be any four-footed domesticated grazing animal, but in the New Testament it exclusively is defined as sheep.

The word fold is mentioned twice in this scripture. The Greek word for the first mention of "fold" is *aul,* and instead of meaning the fold of sheep themselves, it means the stable or house that the sheep are kept in. Interestingly, many times when

the Lord addresses Israel in the prophets he refers to them as, “The house of Israel.”

The Greek word for “one” as in “one fold” is *mia*. There is an emphasis in the definition of this word in that it just doesn’t mean “one,” but it means “only one.”

As I mentioned before, there are two times that the word, “fold,” is mentioned. In the last part of this scripture the Greek word for “fold,” is *poimn*. This is the word that is defined as a flock of sheep.

So what Jesus was really telling the Pharisees was the following:

“Other believers I have, which are not of the House of Israel: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice, and there shall be only one flock of sheep, and one shepherd (which is Jesus)” (author’s paraphrase).

The Bible is so much easier to understand when word studies are done in original languages. Things are brought out into much more clarity and we understand the Lord’s thoughts without the conjecture that sometimes comes when humans interpret the Lord’s word using fleshly eyes.

There are other scriptures that bear witness to Earth being unique as the only bastion of life and mankind as a special creation of the Lord. Let’s take a look at just a couple more:

“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified” (Romans 8:28–30).

We see quite clearly in the scripture above that Jesus is called, “The Firstborn among many brethren.” The last time that I looked, the firstborn was the first and this means that there were no others before him. It also means that before his incarnation on Earth, Jesus had never died before and as we saw in another scripture, He died once and for all.

Another scripture that proves that the process of salvation is a new thing can be found in 1 Peter. In this scripture, Peter tells us:

“Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into” (1 Peter 1:10–12).

We know that sometime before the creation of Earth and mankind the Lord created the angels. Angels are ministering agents. The names for angel both in

Hebrew and Greek mean “messenger.” Since the angels are in the Lord’s presence quite a bit of the time it would be assumed that they know much of what the Lord has done in the past. Peter tells us that the gospel is something that the angels desire to look into. This indicates that salvation and grace are new things that the angels have never seen before. If salvation was an act that is perpetual, happening on planet after planet throughout the universe then it could be most assured that the angels would have had a chance to look into it and understand it. If however it is new and unique to Earth then it would even stymie them.

Finally, we have the word of Jesus himself. As he hung on the cross, bleeding and broken because of our sin and experiencing separation from the Father for the first time ever, he uttered these words that prove that it never has to happen again: “After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a spunge with vinegar, and put it upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost” (John 19:28–30).

So in the words of the creator of the universe, it was completed. Adam brought corruption to the universe by bringing the sin nature upon mankind and through no choice of our own we were born with a sin nature that caused us to be rebellious toward the Lord. This same Jesus brought about a remedy and gave a choice to everyone in the world to become right again with the Lord and to walk outside of the corruption. Someday soon He will return to our planet to put an end to the corruption of creation.

What if ET’s Civilization Is Older than Earth and Not Subject to All of This?:

A conjecture has arisen before when I have talked to Christians about all of this stuff. That conjecture is that perhaps there is a civilization that is older than ours and that for some reason the fact that they would predate us would somehow nullify them from the sin of Adam, or perhaps Jesus went there and died first and then came to Earth. Scripturally speaking, that is impossible and we will prove it.

The first thing that we need to look at is the Genesis account of Creation. We’re assuming that people who are reading this text believe that the Bible is Holy Spirit-inspired and has someone has said, “If God says it, I believe it, that settles it.” In other words, we assume that if you’re reading this you believe that the Bible is the Word of God, inerrant, Holy Spirit-inspired and that you take it literal. For instance, when the Lord says “six days” in Genesis then he means a literal six days.

Many people make mistakes when using the English language, especially when

they take some of the words from the King James Bible. It is often forgotten that the King James Bible was written in King James English; therefore some of the words in its pages might have different meanings than they do today. Take for instance some recent words that have had changes or expansions to their meanings. The word "gay" used to mean happy. In our modern vernacular it can still mean that, but the word has been bastardized to mean "homosexual," so much so that almost all people refrain from using it to equate happiness to the person that they are trying describe to others. Today you cannot easily walk up to a person who has a fever and tell them that they look hot because that word has been bastardized to mean that someone is sexually appealing. I think that we understand the idea now.

There are many who have bought into the theory of evolution; yes even many in the Christian realm. I used to be amazed at how many Christians believe that evolution has been used in part by the Lord to bring about the animal and plant kingdom that we have today. This comes from two things; listening to worldly people too much and not reading their Bibles enough. When we start to listen to the world and we believe what they say we start to see their gospel conflicting with the Gospel of Messiah. Over the centuries science has proven to us that it is a viable way of explaining many things and through the centuries men like Galileo and Newton brought scientific truths to this world that can bear witness to scriptural truths and vice versa. The blessings that true science has brought to us have been hijacked by our modern false sciences that have slowly replaced or manipulated the once solid foundation and have built a house on that new and unstable foundation. Where once scientists tried to prove the Lord right and explain scripture through natural processes; now they have proceeded in an unholy quest to prove that everything exists independent of the Lord, and that is taking them down a slippery slope that will land them in the occult mystery sciences.

Because the world and many Christians too have seen the wonderful advances and conveniences that modern science has brought to us, many tend to think that everything science brings to us is good and wholesome. This has caused many Christians to attempt to meld modern science with scripture and that will never be possible, unless the person who is trying to do that corrupts scripture to meld with corrupt science.

One case in point is that there are Christians who believe that a civilization existed before Adam and Eve were created. They assert that there was a wicked creation on Earth and that the Lord had to destroy the whole Earth and start all over again. The scripture that they use for this false doctrine is: "And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and **replenish** the Earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the Earth" (Genesis 1:28 KJV). And they back up their point by using the only other scripture in the entire Bible that uses

the word, “replenish”: “And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and **replenish** the Earth” (Genesis 9:1KJV).

The English language is hard to understand and to dissect. There are many words in English that have the prefix “re” in the beginning, such as “revitalize,” which means to bring new life to, or “renew,” which means to make new again. In essence, when we see that prefix in front of a word, we immediately process that whatever our subject matter is the “re” in front of the word means that a process is going to be repeated. Many have taken this to mean that when the Lord told both audiences to “replenish” the Earth, they were being told that they needed to repopulate the Earth. In Noah’s case this was true, but when the Lord was talking to Adam and Eve this was not the case. If we look at earlier dictionaries of the English language we see that the only meaning of the word “replenish” was to “fill.” In essence, the Lord was telling Adam and Eve, as well as Noah and his sons that the Earth was empty and that it needed to be filled, not refilled, although as was the case with Noah and his sons, the word refilled would be adequate in addition to the true meaning of what the Lord was telling them.

We’re not finished yet though. We’ve looked at the older English in this matter, but what about the language of the original script? What does the Hebrew word in the passages mean? When we find out this meaning we will truly know the true intent of the Lord. The Hebrew word for “replenish,” is *male’ and it’s only definition is “to fill.” The only way to come up with any other sort of definition is through ignorance or deliberate deceit. Every believer in Jesus must come to a truth, and their walk with the Lord will soar to the heavens or fall to the Earth depending on what they believe in this matter. If a believer comes to the determination that the Bible is the Word of God and that it has been uncorrupted throughout the ages and that the Lord says what He means and means what He says, then they will understand the Lord and they will prosper in His Spirit. If however they question the Bible, they question its inspiration. And, if they spend their lives trying to invent new meanings to what the Lord has already made clear, then they condemn themselves to disobedience, and then to iniquity, and finally death.*

Frankly, the premise that there could have been an older civilization that could have been older than Earth and outside of the curse is preposterous. The first issue that is addressed in this topic is that the Earth was created before the moon, the sun, and the stars. Scripture clearly points this out:

> In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be

> light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day… And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day. (Genesis 1:1–5; 14–19)

Looking at the scripture itself we can see that the Lord created the Earth on the first day and He created the sun, moon and stars on the fourth day. Therefore, Earth existed well before the luminaries and therefore it is older. Sure, the Lord created the "heavens and the Earth," on the first day, but He only made the expanse on the first day. He replenished (filled) the universe with stars and our own two luminaries on the fourth day. This proves that if anything, any life that would live in space is younger than the Earth and it would be far less technologically advanced.

Some submit their theory that when the Lord talked about days in Genesis' first chapters, he was really talking about epochs. This is an interesting theory except that it holds some deadly problems for creation. Almost all plants on Earth survive because they make food through photosynthesis. This mechanism's main generator is sunlight. Since the Lord made the plants two days (or many epochs) before the sun then plants would not have been able to survive and the plant kingdom would have died-out and never survived. The gravitational pull of the sun and moon also affect the tides, which regulate many things on Earth that are important to life.

The assertion that the days were really epochs falls into another problem. While it is true that the Hebrew word for day (*yom*) could mean periods of time, there is one problem that those who subscribe to this notion fail to take notice of, or if they do, they choose to ignore. Elohim himself; the one who was there when the world was made and the maker of the universe himself bore witness to the days of Genesis being literal days: "For in **six days** the LORD made heaven and Earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it" (Exodus 20:11 KJV).

The affirmation that the Earth was created in six literal days and that the seventh day is a day of rest is peppered all throughout the Torah, Neviim and

Ketuvim (The Law, Prophets and the Writings) and also throughout the New Testament. It is quite clear that the days of creation were literal twenty-four-hour days and not epochs.

There is another problem for any supposed extraterrestrial civilization. At the end of time and just prior to Jesus' return there will be some celestial events that could be detrimental for any space brothers. The writer of Revelation talks about the sun, moon and stars not shining at one time in the future.

"And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the **stars**; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise" (Revelation 8:12 KJV).

This seems to be the Lord reiterating what He said through the Prophet Joel:

"The sun and the moon shall be darkened, and the stars shall withdraw their shining" (Joel 3:15 KJV).

The Lord tells in Revelation that the stars will fall from the skies:

"And the **stars** of heaven fell unto the Earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind" (Revelation 6:13 KJV).

There is some speculation that the word "stars" here is speaking about fallen angels. We are not contending the meaning, and it might have two meanings, one spiritual, which would be the angels and another physical, which would be the literal stars. If the meaning is literal stars then it is going to be a bad day for ET because without notice their stars will stop shining and their planet will be plunged into absolute zero conditions almost immediately. The Lord's judgment will affect the whole universe and there will be no place that will go unscathed. For this reason and all the reasons that we have illustrated above, we know with surety that there is no life outside of life on Earth in the universe.

There is however other life on Earth that cannot be seen at will; insidious beings that live in other dimensions of our own reality. They have been responsible for many of the ills that have affected mankind throughout our scant six-thousand-year existence here on Earth.

When everything is boiled down and/or shaken together it all comes down to one simple fact, that being whether we have faith in what God said. Can a person trust God that He is powerful enough to protect His Word perfect and undefiled by those who would seek to destroy it? Jesus asked a question that is quite pertinent today: "Nevertheless, when the Son of Man comes, will He really find faith on the Earth?" (Luke 18:8).

Frankly, I have to wonder if Jesus will find faith when He comes back to Earth. My statement is based on things that I have heard from Christians. As I mentioned above, we must believe that the Bible is the Word of God and that its pages have

literal meaning. However, when Christians tell me that they believe that there is life on other planets, or that they believe that God used evolutionary processes to create the Earth over a long period of time, or that they hold reincarnation to be true, I have to wonder where the faith exists if it exists at all. We can only hope and pray for revival and renewal for the Body of Christ, and have faith that Jesus Christ can turn rebellious Christians back to righteousness.

CHAPTER SEVEN: Alien Abduction in Past Centuries?

There is no doubt that everyone reading this book has been exposed to many of the doctrines of the secular community regarding the origins of UFOs and aliens, as well as abductions. Quite a few books have been written, by Erich von Daniken, Zachariah Stitchin and others like them who try to ascribe some sort of "alien visitation" theory to some of the more mysterious happenings in the Bible.

There seems to be no end to the vain imaginations of people like this, who cannot accept scripture as the inspired Word of God, and in that vanity they create stories that, had they been in their right minds, they themselves would not possibly believe. There are two ways that any person can see anything in this life. They can see something for what it is, or they can see something for what they want it to be. There are many who see an event or read a narrative and they seize upon one part of the narrative without taking into account the rest of the narrative and the whole meaning of its content. There is a poem titled "The Six Wise Men of Hindustan" that is a wonderful example of this flaw in human nature:

There were six men of Hindustan,
to learning much inclined,
Who went to see an elephant,
though all of them were blind,
That each by observation
might satisfy his mind.
The first approached the elephant,
and happening to fall
Against his broad and sturdy side,
at once began to bawl,
"This mystery of an elephant
is very like a wall."
The second, feeling of the tusk,
cried, "Ho, what have we here,
So very round and smooth and sharp?
To me 'tis mighty clear,
This wonder of an elephant
is very like a spear."
The third approached the elephant,
and happening to take

The squirming trunk within his hands,
thus boldly up and spake,
"I see," quoth he,
"the elephant is very like a snake."
The fourth reached out an eager hand,
and felt above the knee,
"What this most wondrous beast
is like is very plain" said he,
"'Tis clear enough the elephant
is very like a tree."
The fifth who chanced to touch the ear
said, "E'en the blindest man
Can tell what this resembles most;
deny the fact who can;
This marvel of an elephant
is very like a fan."
The sixth no sooner had begun
about the beast to grope,
Than seizing on the swinging tail
that fell within his scope;
"I see," said he, "the elephant
is very like a rope."
So six blind men of Hindustan
disputed loud and long,
Each in his own opinion
exceeding stiff and strong;
Though each was partly in the right,
they all were in the wrong!

"The Six Wise Men of Hindustan" is a prime example of a man trying to discern something without the aid of senses, in this case, the sense of sight. Each man came up with a determination based on what he was able to ascertain from one part of the elephant. In the cases of von Daniken and Stitchin, they have perfect physical eyesight and they can physically hear fine, but they are blind and deaf where spiritual matters are concerned. The natural man cannot understand the things of the spirit because he cannot see the spiritual and therefore he denies it. The natural man who can see the spirit sees a distorted and convoluted version of the spiritual simply because there are malevolent forces that show them that realm not exactly as it exists. They are in a house of mirrors so to speak, where one image looks enlarged and another looks narrowed and some are broken up into little pieces; so on and so forth. The parts they do see: sorcery, Wicca, necromancy, ESP,

telekinesis, and other such things are the very things that God Almighty told his people to stay away from. They are perversions of the truth.

With this in mind, it comes as no surprise that those who pervert scripture see the taking up of Enoch; the flaming chariot that carried away Elijah; the taking up of Isaiah to Heaven and even the visit of Satan with Jesus Christ during His temptation, as manifestations of alien abduction. Again, this is akin to the blind men and the elephant. I could stand in front of the six men and if they chose to, they could deny that my interpretation of what I can actually see is true. I could tell the man who is near the elephant's trunk that it is an elephant's trunk and if he wants to deny that my sighted affirmation is true, and if he for some reason doesn't want to check the veracity of my assertion then he will never believe, even if I brought him to the other parts of the animal and allowed him to feel the other parts. Instead of realizing that it is an elephant, he will hold to what the others have said and he will think that within those few square feet there is a tree, a snake, a rope, a fan, a wall, and a spear.

One of the perceptions that men like von Daniken and Stichin cling to in order to cause their theory to stick, is to state that the ancients were primitive in thought and deed. They hold the very same prejudices that were used against those who sighted UFOs and reported alien abduction during the middle and later parts of the 20th century. Only fifty years ago, when a person saw a UFO he was immediately put under scrutiny. The first thing that was considered was the education background. If they were farmers, simple fishermen or even truck drivers their accounts were immediately brought into question. It was reasoned that individuals who worked simple jobs or who worked in blue-collar employment were at best high school dropouts or that they liked to drink or take recreational drugs in the evening and that the lack of intelligence, along with the ingestion of mind-altering substances led to the sightings. It was not taken into account that this population consisted mostly of honest, hard-working, church-going people who were not given over to lies or fantasy. It was also overlooked that people who spend a majority of time outside are better able to discern signs and wonders from natural occurrences than are others who might hold college degrees or have military experience.

The same is true with those who think that the ancients were simpletons who were barely smart enough to plant seed in the ground and harvest it in the fall. A quick reading of the Book of Enoch proves that complicated physics was known by the ancients, and many of the things that Enoch talks about were lost for centuries, only to be rediscovered in the last five hundred years. It wasn't idiots who built the pyramids or the sphinx and it wasn't morons who built the Colossus of Rhodes and the Hanging Gardens of Babylon, nor were the builders of Teotihuacán or Machu

Picchu of a low-intelligent quotient. No, in fact, society back then was just like it is now, minus the mechanical contraptions that we have invented during the last century or so. They had farmers and city people, businessmen and carpenters, fishermen and lawyers, theologians and scientists, without all the trappings of modern society. They also had the same prejudices that we have today. Even Jesus Christ suffered from this sort of prejudice, as we see in the following verse:

> And when the Sabbath had come, He began to teach in the synagogue. And many hearing Him were astonished, saying, "Where did this Man get these things? And what wisdom is this which is given to Him, that such mighty works are performed by His hands! Is this not the carpenter, the Son of Mary, and brother of James, Joses, Judas, and Simon? And are not His sisters here with us?" So they were offended at Him. But Jesus said to them, "A prophet is not without honor except in his own country, among his own relatives, and in his own house." Now He could do no mighty work there, except that He laid His hands on a few sick people and healed them. (Mark 6:2–5)

The townspeople's description of Jesus was like the following: "Hey, this is Jesus, and he grew up here. He is a carpenter and we know all of his brothers and sisters. They are a poor family and we know that Jesus never went to seminary or had any formal religious training. Where does he get off trying to tell us how to live our lives and how could he possibly know about God?"

If the Son of God, the very essence of the Almighty Himself, was doubted and belittled then it should come as no surprise when the ordinary people are put through the same rigors. History is littered, and so is everyday life, with people who have wonderful educations, but they have no way to use it practically. Not that they lack employment, but they do not have the skills to adequately use what they have. Such people, although they have the paper hanging on the walls of their offices or homes should not be trusted as credible eyewitnesses. As a matter of fact, it seems to me that those with the better educations sometimes tend to be the persons who embellish their accounts so that they can mold their accounts into what their preconceived notions of life and life's experiences are. Interestingly enough, this is the same thing that secular researchers have accused Christian UFO researchers of doing. The old adage holds so true; "When you point at someone, there are three fingers pointing back at you."

One of the key biblical accounts that people like von Daniken and Stitchin like to use for their theories is a scripture found in 2 Kings, chapter two. The scripture

reads as follows:

"And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a **whirlwind** into heaven" (2 Kings 2:11).

Von Daniken and his proponents like to point out that this is a classic UFO account abduction told by a common man who didn't know how to describe what we would call super technology, back in his day. The thing is that we have to look at Elijah and Elisha (Elijah's student) to see what they were really like. Both men were prophets, so that means that they probably spent a lot of time out of doors and they saw a lot of things. Horses were a common commodity during their time, so they could adequately describe horses and not use them to describe other things. Chariots were a common item in militaries of the time, so that is pretty easy. Fire was another common element during Elijah's time, so that is pretty easy to describe. A whirlwind is an old English word for "tornado," so that is pretty easy to ascertain. Von Daniken and his disciples would have us think that this was a UFO, but when was the last time than anyone reported a UFO that looked like a chariot with horses? When was the last time that someone reported a UFO being taken up by a tornado? Never?

We also have to take into account that men like Elijah, Elisha, Isaiah and others were shown phenomenal things during their earthly commissions and that they were quite adept in their prophetic office. We also have to know that all men of this caliber spent many hours and days receiving words, visions, and dreams from the Almighty and so they were quite capable when it came to discriminating between what is real in a physical sense and what is real in a spiritual sense. It is obvious that since Elisha witnessed this event he was probably the one who penned it so that many future generations could read the account and know that what he saw was a genuine chariot with genuine horses taken up in a genuine tornado and that they are not the machinations of some dumb country bumpkin who had to resort to object association to explain what he saw.

If we look at those who lived in other times as being fairly intelligent and sensible then we will see that the descriptions that they bring to us in their accounts are accurate and that the accounts are to be taken just like they are read. It should be noted that even the mythological accounts that we find with the ancient Greeks have their basis in even more ancient fact. The stories of the Greeks and later the Romans, who inherited those same stories, tend to parallel the antics of the fallen angels before the flood of Noah's time. The gods of Olympus and their behaviors strongly resemble the actions of the fallen angels, while the accounts of the Titans of mythology strongly resemble those of the Nephilim (giants) that are mentioned in

Genesis chapter six. The monstrosities such as the Minotaur, Cerberus and Centaur, all mixings of species of animals in Greek mythology all resemble the descriptions in some of the extra-biblical books that tell about the giants and mankind altering the DNA of animals so that chimeras resulted. These books were revered by the Hebrews before and after the coming of Christ Jesus and they can accurately be used for their historical content. We should always keep in mind that just because an account seems too incredible for the understanding by those in our current era, the accounts should not be dismissed as fantasy or the imagination of a demented people or a perverted society, even if they are associated with such an entity.

Modern man has attained a high degree of technology and we see things every day that would have boggled the mind of our grandfathers and their fathers. But what if, through a natural or manmade disaster, civilization ended tomorrow. In a thousand years all the buildings that now stand would be skeletons of what they are now and in two thousand years they would be, at best, large shards of rock that litter the ground. In three or four thousand years most of the accomplishments of mankind would be distant memories, fables and folklore. If civilization again thrived, the progeny of modern man would find works that would suggest a once-great civilization but would find little more than that. They would be left with the same questions that we have about the ancients and they might come to the same conclusions; that we were primitive and that we lacked intelligence. Just as they would be wrong in their assertion, so are those in modern circles who think that the ancients were backward and slow where technology and knowledge are concerned.

It must be noted that the UFO phenomenon, and that of alien abduction has always tended to fashion itself to accommodate the times in which it has occurred. All throughout history beings of different description have abducted men, but mostly women and children, and great emphasis was always placed on the notion that the abduction occurred in order to acquire blood or organs from the abductee or for the purpose of interbreeding between the human and the abductor.

In the middle ages there were many accounts where beings would lure children or young women into the woods where they would either disappear forever or for hours or days to be returned as “changed people.” Depending on the culture that is studied, the abductors range in characteristics. Some cultures describe them as dwarflike while others describe them as large and reptilian-looking. Some accounts call them fairies and others call them giants. The stories that we read as children, that have accounts of trolls, fairies, dwarves, and other so-called mythical creatures all have their roots in actual accounts recorded in the annals of history throughout Europe, England, Scotland and Ireland.

In June of 1992, a conference was held at the Massachusetts Institute of

Technology. Titled "The Abduction Study Conference," it hosted many speakers on the subject, most of whom had wonderful credentials and who had studied the subject for years and some even for decades. Part of the conference dealt with alien abduction as it is associated with folklore of the past. One of the researchers, Bob Hall, made the following observation regarding folktale abduction and modern alien abduction:

"When you talk about similarities, one thing you didn't touch on in discussing the fairies stealing women and babies, and so on, is that UFO abductions have been going on for centuries, and this is simply another version of the same story, a kind of screen memory for abductions that have been going on for a long time" (*Alien Discussions – Proceedings of The Abduction Study Conference*; 1994, North Cambridge Press; pg. 392).

Another one of the speakers, Dr. John Carpenter, a noted abduction hypnotherapist, made an interesting comment regarding a children's story and how it paralleled an abduction experience:

> "I certainly agree with Bob, I've had the same feeling. If this has been going on for hundreds of years, you wonder what kind of inspiration goes into certain stories. Just in the last year I've been thoroughly intrigued by the story of Peter Pan, where the youthful figure that never grows up comes and visits the children through the window, and teaches them how to float out the window, accompanied by a dancing ball of light, called Tinkerbell. At the end of the movie the father makes an interesting comment as he watches the golden ship sail off. He says 'You know, I think I've seen that somewhere in my youth.'" (ibid. also page 392 – *words underscored in publication*)

In a lighthearted sort of way, this account of Peter Pan mirrors a modern alien abduction account. Balls of light are many times seen before, during and after abduction experiences. Aliens, especially the gray variety, look like little children stature-wise, giving the appearance that they never age. Aliens often come through the window (even closed windows) to conduct their visitations. The father watches the "golden ship" (i.e. UFO) sail off and he makes the comment that he thinks that he's seen the golden ship before in his youth, which denotes the generational aspect of alien abduction, passing from generation to generation.

The interesting thing is that almost all cultures talk about these concealed creatures having habitations in caves or Earthen mounds. When we look at scripture,

we find an interesting passage in the Psalms: “Have respect unto the covenant: for the dark places of the Earth are full of the habitations of cruelty” (Psalm 74:20).

When we look at modern Ufology and abduction accounts there are quite a few instances where the abductees have memories, dreams or recollections about having been taken to underground places where horrible experiments were performed on them. In some accounts, pregnant women have their fetuses taken from them before their scheduled delivery dates. In other accounts, the abductees are shown human bodies stacked like cordwood and parts of human bodies floating in large clear vats of liquid. The interesting thing is that the modern accounts of being taken underground parallel the medieval accounts of people being abducted by elves and fairies to be taken underground. This is just one parallel that we see between the UFO and abduction phenomenon and the fallen angelic manifestations and abductions of old.

One fine research work that we’ve found that goes into great depth about the correlation between the fairy abductions of old and the modern UFO abductions of our current age is a book titled, *Caverns, Cauldrons and Concealed Creatures – A Study of Subterranean Mysteries In History, Folklore and Myth*, written by William Michael Mott. Some of the quotes in this chapter will come from this book. Regarding the “underground” aspect of abduction accounts both in the past and today, Mott observes: “As of late, conspiracy and UFO literature alike abound with similar accounts, the only difference being that the reptilian seducers or rapists are male, and the human victims are female. Often, these accounts also involve abduction to underground bases or caverns, cavern-worlds, or close proximity to a cave or cavern in which the rape takes place” (*Caverns, Cauldrons and Concealed Creatures... 2nd expanded edition*, page 212).

There are many scenarios in the alien abduction realm where the beings who do the abducting have whisked away abductees to a variety of different places of destination for the procedure; including of course outer space, other planets, procedures done on the supposed craft themselves and, like we have mentioned, in caves, caverns, and underground bases. Many times the abductees report that they have seen humans in uniforms assisting the entities in their sadistic procedures. In the UFO research realm, almost anything is accepted as being plausible, except for the reports of being taken to underground areas, as Mott verifies in his book:

“UFO abduction accounts are absolutely filled with stories of people who sincerely believe that they were taken, usually against their wills, into vast cavernous spaces beneath the crust of our planet, or beneath the oceans. Of all modern UFOlogical accounts, these are perhaps the most scoffed at and ridiculed. Another physical reality here on our own, cozy, well known little home of a planet?

Impossible! Absurd! But these stories are nothing new, historically" (ibid. page 290).

And what about what we mentioned just above, that some have reported humans in uniform helping these creatures in their diabolical acts? Can it be that, as we will see below, when we examine Ephesians chapter six, that the "spiritual wickedness in high places" actually has a human element? Whether there is any validity to the accounts of people being taken to cavernous places for the express purpose of conducting violations against their will, can be argued both for and against. If it is real or if it is some sort of spiritual illusion projected at the victim, the case still stands that there are beings of all different shapes and sizes that have the same mode of operation, and not just in recent memory, but it seems to have happened all throughout history.

Author Mott makes a comment that we feel sums up what we have been saying about the many parallels between what the ancients called fairies, trolls, dwarves, gnomes, and other creatures that have visited men and women throughout history:

> After many years of researching these interrelated phenomena, it has become apparent to this writer that the modern abduction phenomenon is the same as the ancient, medieval, and all other "abduction phenomena" which have taken place over the centuries, and which seem to blur the lines between physical reality and various types of "altered states" of awareness. Shamanism's spirit abductors, alchemy's elementals, Christianity's demons, the fairies of rural folk traditions, the various abducting and seducing demons of Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, and pretty much all other religious or mythical traditions exhibit the same types of behavior, preferences, similar appearances, and so on. In other words, the UFO abduction scenario is just a new mask for an old player, a new get-up for forces which have always plagued or hornswoggled us for their own selfish purposes." (ibid. pp. 248–249)

So why go through all the trouble to change masks? Perhaps the messengers of deception wear a different skin so that they can better appeal to the population that they are trying to deceive. To the ancients it would make sense to appear as gods who control the elements and human reproduction simply because farming was a necessary profession, and introducing themselves as the gods over the elements, Ra, Baal, Ashtar, and others would gain the confidence of the people out of necessity for rain for the crops as well as sun for their growth. Appearances as fertility gods such as Aphrodite and Diana would insure allegiance because sexual pleasure is addictive

and nations and states needed to keep large populations for protection and military expansion.

In the Middle Ages they changed their disguise and became the playful little fairies and the sexually appealing nymphs in order to appeal to mankind's desire for an easy, sexually enjoyable life, and because Christian doctrine had replaced and forbidden the belief in false gods and overt displays of passion and lust. Entertaining such beings probably seemed harmless compared to the idol worship that was so rampant during the time before Christianity had taken hold of the known world. During the time of the medieval lukewarm Christian church it was probably much easier for these entities to abduct women and children in the guise of little people who could do their nasty little deeds and then retreat into caves and crevices where the larger humans could not follow.

Interestingly enough, with the approach of the 20th century they changed their guise yet again; this time becoming travelers in airships that were seen all over the United States just before the advent of heavier than air flight by men in their new-fangled airplanes. In 1896, more than sixty years before alien abduction would be known as it currently is, there was an attempted alien abduction not too far from this author's location. The attempted abduction occurred near Lodi, California but failed when the tall, spindly bald creatures covered with a light fur could not lift the larger humans into their airship. The beings literally jumped into their cigar-shaped craft and left the scene.

In the years between the turn of the century until the modern era of UFO sightings and alien abductions there was little to report, possibly because there was little activity, or perhaps, since these beings are fallen angels, they were preparing themselves and their earthly disciples for two world wars that would change this world and mankind forever.

In the 1950s and early 1960s there was a bizarre series of abduction events that lasted for a short period of time. Abduction reports started coming in and the reports showed that the aliens were tall, blonde and some even said that the aliens spoke with German accents. The aliens claimed to come from Venus and other neighboring planets and these claims continued until the Americans and Russians sent probes to all those planets and found that those worlds had conditions that were inhospitable to any form of life. When this knowledge came to light the abduction scenarios changed. From that time and up to the present these so-called space brothers now wear the guise of the gray aliens, the reptilian aliens and the mantis-looking alien. Oh, and guess what else happened! Now they were claiming to be from worlds that are well out of reach of human exploration. Isn't that convenient for them?

So we have seen that all throughout our history there have been accounts of strange beings that kidnap humans to perform procedures on them and to have any number of different sexual encounters with them. The parallels with the accounts in Genesis chapter six are amazing too, and only when the biblical account is added to the mix with the other events throughout history can we make the determination that what had happened in antiquity and what is happening now are the same thing. We can also therefore determine that since the events are the same, the players are the same. Finally, we can see that this phenomenon does not have celestial origins, but were birthed right here on Earth, and they have always resided here. In the next chapter we will look deeper into what the Bible has to say about these entities. We will look at the war and see that it is spiritual in nature and that the spiritual war spills over into the physical realm, and that everyone alive is involved in this war, whether they decide to be combatants or not.

CHAPTER EIGHT: The Conflict and the Combatants

During the 2007 UFO Conference in Roswell there were many speakers. Most of the speakers came from a secular researcher's point of view. Two speakers, Bill Schnoebelen and Joe Jordan, addressed the UFO and alien abduction subject from a biblical point of view. Both speakers were very informative, honest, and thorough. As is usually the case, bringing the Bible into the discussion, and specifically presenting research from a Christian point of view always seems to bring people into the audience who like to throw in their two cents, not so much about the research, but they bring up their belief that the Bible isn't reliable, their doubts about Jesus, and other topics that make discussion times quite interesting, to say the least.

As the conference drew to a close on the last day there was a panel discussion scheduled so that people could attend and ask any one of the speakers a question. The questions were screened by the moderator who read them from the papers that the audience members submitted. Someone had posed a question to Joe Jordan, but was open for anyone to answer after Joe had his turn at speaking. The question that was posed was; "Why do all of these aliens, grays, reptilians, etc., all fear Jesus?" The atmosphere of the room changed immediately, from one of a bunch of tired speakers wanting to just answer the questions and then go home, to one of who could be the top dog at putting an end to this nonsense.

The bell had rung and the first round had started in the ring. Joe took the microphone and calmly explained his point of view on the issue, talking about the power and authority of Jesus Christ and how the aliens were really demons in disguise as well as quite a few other things pertinent to the subject matter and the question that was asked. Without going into a long and drawn out account of all that was said, it could be summed up that for the most part, many of the other speakers who chose to answer the question tried their best to counter what Joe said and to add their ingredients to water-down the message.

The answer that Joe gave was sufficient to answer the question especially considering the time constraints that were in place. The answer to the question that was asked is however a lot more complicated and an extensive study should be done, not just to answer the question, but to answer the questions that are brought about by the questions. It is like taking a watch apart to see what makes it tick. You remove the bezel to have access to the face and the hands but that only gives you a hint of how it works. You know that the watch's hands move and you've even

moved them with your fingers, but what really makes those hands move? To find that out, you remove the back and you see the gears and you wonder what drives the gears and then you discover the mainspring and finally you see that the winding of the stem causes tension on the mainspring and the release of that tension moves the gears which in turn move the hands of the watch. Now you are satisfied that you know everything about the watch.

This is how effective Bible study is done. With the orchestration of the Holy Spirit in this sort of research the study just keeps getting better and better and better. With His help we are able to see how one scripture is associated with another scripture and just like the watch analogy above we start to understand. Of course we cannot understand the whole mind of God Almighty. The watch is the same, but on a finite scale. Once we know what makes the watch tick there are still a myriad of other things to search out if we so choose this challenge. For instance, what metals make up the watch? What sort of crystal is the bezel made from? Who made the watch and are there anymore like it? What is the worth of the watch and are they watches that are known to last a long time? How are the atoms arranged in each of the metals and the list goes on and on, but maybe years later we could know all that there is to know about the watch.

God tells us the following about His ways and His nature: “For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the Earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts” (Isaiah 55:8–9).

Having read the passage from Isaiah it would seem like it would be impossible to know God at all, let alone all there is to know about Him. That is where the Holy Spirit comes into all of this. If one isn’t born again in God through Jesus Christ then a reading of the Bible leads to confusion. That is why so many people run to and fro crying that the Bible is a book filled with contradictions. In effect, the Bible (all of it) is like a message in code. If you read it without the codebook (the Holy Spirit’s interpreting), then you might be of the opinion that it is just a book with wonderful allegories, stories, and parables. But if you have the interpreter then you read a wonderful book that is overflowing with incredible amounts of information about life and about the creator of life. Jesus told us about the code breaker and helper He sends to us:

“If ye love me, keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you” (John 14:15–18).

We've all seen movies where messages would be sent via radio and such and when the untrained ear hears them they are just sentences. For instance, the radio voice might say; "There are big puffy clouds today and the forecast is for a week of the same weather." To anyone listening to this it would be taken to be a weather report. But if a code was being used it could mean that the person on the radio is telling a specific person listening to him that an attack is coming and that it will last for a long time. The key to understanding is to know the code by using a book of code phrases; the Holy Spirit, which God gives to His Children.

In order to study so as to effectively answer the question that was posed at the panel discussion in 2007 we have to look at several things. We have to look at who God Almighty is after which we have to look at the person of Jesus Christ to see who He is. When we know these things we then can look at the other side of the equation to see who Satan is and who his minions are. Only when these things are know can a person understand why the entities who pose as alien visitors from other worlds run for the hills when the name of Jesus Christ is cried out in a time of crisis.

If you're a born again, spirit-filled Christian and you are reading this, then you have an advantage. You know who God is and who Jesus is and you know this because you have hopefully spent many hours of intimacy with the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Spending intimacy with Him is so very important, because when you know the genuine article, you can pick out the counterfeit. We know that some of the information that is presented below is "old school" stuff to many, but we present it for those who haven't learned these things yet, either because they are new believers in Jesus, or they are not believers and know nothing about the nature of God.

If we are to be honest about research from a Christian point of view we have to ask a question that will set the stage for our investigation. We have to ask if there has been and if there is still a conflict that exists between God and some of His created beings. If one believes that there is validity in the scriptures and if one believes that the scriptures can be used to do credible research into the origins of the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon, then we must delve into its pages and study. When we study the pages of the Bible in its original languages, one of the first things that we ascertain is that there is a war waging in the spiritual world. If we could only see into that realm (by Godly means) it would probably be a sight that would stay with us the rest of our lives.

We can get a glimpse of what the warfare looks like by reading a story in 2 Kings, chapter six. During this time in Israel's history they were warring with Syria. In this account the King of Syria would make battle plans against Israel and God would give the plans to Elisha the prophet, who in turn would give them to the King

of Israel. After a few times of waiting to fight the smaller Israelite army and not having them fall into his trap, the King of Syria consulted with his advisors and asked them which of them was the spy for Israel. One of the advisors was tipped off about what was happening and he told the king that none of them was to blame, but that Elisha was telling the Israelite king the plans of the Syrian king. The Syrian king found where Elisha was staying and at night he surrounded the city so that he could find Elisha and take him captive.

From the passage it was clear that Elisha knew what was going on, especially from a spiritual view of the matter. His servant on the other hand didn't know and thought that the end was near. Elisha prayed that God would open the eyes of his servant so that he could see what was really going on. Below is the account:

> And one of his servants said, "None, my lord, O king; but Elisha, the prophet who is in Israel, tells the king of Israel the words that you speak in your bedroom." So he said, "Go and see where he is, that I may send and get him." And it was told him, saying, "Surely he is in Dothan."
>
> Therefore he sent horses and chariots and a great army there, and they came by night and surrounded the city. And when the servant of the man of God arose early and went out, there was an army, surrounding the city with horses and chariots. And his servant said to him, "Alas, my master! What shall we do?" So he answered, "Do not fear, for those who are with us are more than those who are with them." And Elisha prayed, and said, "LORD, I pray, open his eyes that he may see." Then the LORD opened the eyes of the young man, and he saw. And behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha. (2 Kings 6:12–17)

It wouldn't be fair to anyone to not tell the outcome of the account above. Elisha prayed that the enemy would be blinded and when they couldn't see he asked them who they were searching for. They told Elisha that they were there to take Elisha alive to the Syrian king. He told them that he would lead them to Elisha but instead he led them to the Israelite king and his army. Instead of killing the Syrians, Elisha advised the Israelites to throw a feast for the enemy and then to send them back to Syria, which they did and the end of the chapter says that Syria never sent armies into Israel again.

The main reason for using the scripture above was to illustrate that there is a spiritual realm and that there is a constant battle going on between Holiness and

ungodliness, between the goodness of God and the malevolence of Satan. This war has played itself out for millennia in the way of wars, religious persecution, racism and many other ways. So many people tend to focus on the physical manifestations of this war and in doing so they forget that the roots of all conflicts in all of creation are anchored deep in spiritual soil. A study of the Old Covenant shows this to be true but it is shown, shall we say, through a glass darkly. A quote that rings so true and explains this assertion says, "The Old Testament is the New Testament concealed, but the New Testament is the Old Testament revealed." This is borne out by reading both covenants and seeing that the Old Covenant, aside from a small handful of illustrations showing spiritual warfare, shows mostly God's intervention through warfare of a physical nature. On the other hand, the New Covenant shows the warfare between good and evil as being spiritual. Both of these lessons on warfare are correct and when one accepts this notion then all things become much clearer.

There is scriptural evidence to show the spiritual aspect of warfare in the fallen creation. One such scripture is found in the Apostle Paul's letter to the Christians in Ephesus. It reads as follows: "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places" (Ephesians 6:12 KJV).

This is a wonderful example of the warfare that exists, and how although there are physical manifestations of that warfare, the basis for it really lies in what happens in the spiritual realm. As it stands, the scripture is quite clear, but if a word study is done of the principal words in the scripture it becomes very clear who our adversaries are. Let's take a look at these words and then expound on them afterward.

Principalities - ÁÇu - är-kh (ar-kay) - the first place, principality, rule, magistracy of angels and demons

Powers - ¾¿ÅÃw± - eks-ü-s'-ä (ek-sue-see-a) - the leading and more powerful among created beings superior to man, spiritual potentates

Rulers of Darkness - š¿Ã¼¿ºÁqÄÉÁ ÃºyÄ¿Â - ko-smo-krä'-tMr sko'-tos (cosmo-krah-tor skotos) - the lord of the world, prince of this age (the devil and his demons) [who rule over] persons in whom darkness becomes visible and holds sway

Spiritual wickedness High Places - À½µÅ¼±Ä¹ºyÂ À¿½·Áw± À¿ÅÁq½¹¿Â - pnyü-mä-t-ko's po-n-r'-ä ep-ü-rä'-n-os (new-ma-tee-cos/po-nay-ree-a/ep-oo-rah-nee-os) - belonging to a spirit, or a being higher than man but inferior to God, evil purposes and desires, of the stars of the clouds

What we have in the scripture in Ephesians is very powerful and very revealing. The word "principalities" is interesting because it denotes two things. First it denotes a governmental structure, which shows that there are various orders in Satan's kingdom. It shows that, much like in the orders of the holy angels, where there are the higher classes like cherubim and seraphim and then the intermediaries like archangels and then the common everyday angels who minister to the people of God and who have everyday spiritual contact with the affairs of men, a similar order exists in the fallen angelic camp. Second, it denotes that the fallen angels have specific dominions that they are in charge of. This can be found in the book of the prophet Daniel with one of his many dealings with angels. In Daniel chapter ten we read an interesting account:

> Then he said to me, "Do not fear, Daniel, for from the first day that you set your heart to understand, and to humble yourself before your God, your words were heard; and I have come because of your words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me twenty-one days; and behold, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me, for I had been left alone there with the kings of Persia…" Then he said, "Do you know why I have come to you? And now I must return to fight with the prince of Persia; and when I have gone forth, indeed the prince of Greece will come. But I will tell you what is noted in the Scripture of Truth. (No one upholds me against these, except Michael, your prince.) (Daniel 10:12–13, 20–21)

We see a few different personages in the scripture in Daniel. We have the messenger from God who was sent to bring a message to Daniel. This angel tells Daniel how he would have been there sooner, but the angel was delayed because he had to fight against a fallen angel called "the Prince of Persia." He's then told that Michael (one of the chief princes) came to fight the Prince of Persia and it was because of this that he was able to bring Daniel the message. We find out that there is a prince for Greece in addition to Persia. And finally, we find out that Michael the archangel is the prince that is over Israel. It appears, from scriptural evidence that all nations and kingdoms have angelic entities that have charge over their land areas. This appears to be true concerning both holy angels and fallen angels. Interestingly enough, at the time that this angel visited Daniel, Persia had just conquered Babylon and was the reigning world power, but a few centuries later the Greek empire would conquer the Persians and would be master over Israel. Given this evidence we now know that nations have spiritual principalities who contend with other principalities for dominion and prominence.

The next word we'll examine is the word "powers." The Greek word for

powers is actually defined as meaning "spiritual potentates," or in essence, spiritual sovereigns or kings, the highest beings in the spiritual kingdom, infinitely lesser than the godhead, but greater than the other created angels. It can be said that if each principality is over a nation or a province then the "powers" are over the principalities. For instance, if there were a principality over a nation like the United States, then a "power" would be over North America. The "principalities" are princes, but the "powers" are kings. This might figure into the "last days" scenario where the nation-states will be absorbed into the ten kingdoms mentioned in Jesus' Revelation to John.

As we move on we come to the next name that Paul brings to light, the group known as "Rulers of Darkness." In this category we add two more levels to the governmental structure of the ultimate evil empire. In this part of the passage he groups them into a super-category that spans from the greatest to the least. Paul adds the ruler of all these wicked beings; that being Satan himself. Satan isn't mentioned by name, but he is the ultimate ruler of darkness so he has to be included in this category. Another group is added too, and that is the physical darkness that we can experience with our five senses. There are people on Earth who are the physical manifestation of all that is done by evil entities in the spiritual world. These are the men in secret societies and others around the world who are knowingly bringing the wishes of the unseen rulers into fruition. Their thoughts and actions are constantly guided by fallen angels and demons and those humans involved with these entities do so willingly and gladly. They are usually people who are obsessed with money and power and they have been promised those things and granted those things by the entities that they serve.

Finally we come to the phrase, "spiritual wickedness in high places." Before I had done the word study on this passage I had always assumed that it was referring to people in human government who are wicked and oppress those below them. Instead I was interested to learn that it is actually talking about wicked beings in the unseen world. Even more interesting is that the phrase "high places," doesn't mean government, but here denotes the atmosphere and the stars. This is exactly where UFOs manifest themselves, in the sky and in the heavens. It could only make a serious researcher wonder if this phenomenon presented itself during the time of the early church, seeing that Paul uses the word that talks about the atmosphere rather than the universe or as the ancients called it, "the second heaven."

So far we have learned that there is a war going on in the spiritual realm. We've learned that although there are evil people on Earth, and they are controlled by evil in the unseen realm, our battle is not with the evil in fleshly form, but with the entities that control them. There is more however to explain these entities, and

where they practice their deceit. Let us now examine another scripture that enforces the prior passage and illustrates the field of operation for UFOs.

"Wherein in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience:" (Ephesians 2:2).

Again we see that there are some interesting words in Paul's writing to the church in Ephesus. It is as if the large passage that we examined a minute ago has been condensed into a shorter message, just as powerful and packing the same punch. Having found those words to be of value in my research I decided to investigate their meanings. Their meanings are as follows:

Prince - ÁÇÉ½ - ä'r-khMn (ah rakohn) - a ruler, commander, chief, leader

Power - ¾¿ÅÃw± - eks-ü-s'-ä (ek-sue-see-a) - the power of authority (influence) and of right (privilege)

Air - uÁ - ä-'r (a-air) - the air, particularly the lower and denser air as distinguished from the higher and rarer air; the atmospheric region

Spirit - ½µæ¼± - pnyü'-mä (new-ma) - a spirit higher than man but lower than God, i.e. an angel

In a nutshell, the passage tells us again that there is a fallen angel, a ruler or commander angel that wields great power and that he has great authority. It goes further and says that this fallen angel has his dominion in the air. Notice that the definition of "air" means the lower atmosphere where there is thick air. This is precisely where UFOs manifest and where they are seen. While it is certainly possible that these fallen angels have access to outer space it seems that their dominion is in Earth's atmosphere.

It Is All About Lies and Deception:

One of the most effective areas of warfare is through propaganda. Propaganda is used to spread lies and rumors in an effort to demoralize an enemy. Propaganda is also used to bolster the effort of a military by causing civilians on the home front to support military actions of the war in general. In the past forty years we have seen this firsthand. America's "Vietnam War" is a prime example of how propaganda can make or break public support of a war and ultimately bring the war to an end. Every night on television the news networks would talk about the war and they would announce how many soldiers died in the war that day. At the end of the week the networks would give the numbers of weekly war deaths and the same would happen

at the end of every month. After days, weeks and months of hearing about America's sons being killed in what many already thought to be an unwarranted war (which was primarily inculcated by the media) the civilian populace demanded an end to the war.

One world leader back in the middle part of the 20th century mastered propaganda and even bragged about his skill at causing people to believe lies and deceit. Adolph Hitler said the following concerning such tactics:

"By the skillful and sustained use of propaganda, one can make a people see even heaven as hell or an extremely wretched life as paradise."—Adolph Hitler

"Make the lie big, make it simple, keep saying it, and eventually they will believe it."—Adolph Hitler

The lessons that Hitler gave about lying and enforcing the lie does work. Through the infusion of almost any idea a populace can be indoctrinated into believing it. This has been true with the UFO enigma. For many years we heard reports about UFOs and as time increased so did the reports. After a while the media started to produce documentaries and they enforced a reality of UFOs through their constant airing of these programs. At the end of each documentary the producers of the documentary would say something like, "we leave you with evidence and we'll let you make the judgment." It is as if the producers of these programs knew that faith in God was waning and they knew that people wanted something to replace God, so they introduced the possibility of ET as the coming savior, even if they didn't come out and say it verbally.

Soon after the media picked up on the UFO craze then Hollywood picked up on the phenomenon and they've produced movies about UFOs, alien abduction and a plethora of UFO-related subject matter. Back in the 1960s when I was a child most people believed that we were the only life in the universe and that UFOs were natural phenomenon or manmade objects. In our current times, most people have been indoctrinated into believing that the universe is teeming with life, that aliens are visiting our planet and that they're coming to help us. The sad part is that even in the Christian church there is a growing delusion that holds to the same belief where UFOs and intelligent life in the universe is concerned. The lie has gone out for many years and many now believe it. The tactics endorsed by Adolph Hitler have been used and they have worked incredibly well, even on those who should know better.

It shouldn't be surprising to anyone that Jesus Christ told of a great deception that would descend upon Earth during the end of the period known as "The Last Days." He was very specific to warn his followers and subsequently everyone who

read their accounts of Him about what to look out for when it comes to the deceivers. In like manner, His Apostles gave many dire warnings about the same. But before we examine those things, it would be a good thing to look at one of their prophecies concerning the condition of society at the end of days:

> But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away! For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts, always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved concerning the faith; but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was. (2 Timothy 3:1–9)

It is fairly easy to look at the passage above and say that all those markers are present in our present day and age. When such a condition exists it is not hard for a counterfeit religion and counterfeit religious leaders to lead many astray, especially seeing that people in such a condition have no firm faith for a foundation.

With a lack of real faith, and by not wanting to practice a religion that calls people into accountability to a higher authority, namely God Almighty, people will be looking for someone who will preach to them a gospel that is pleasant to their ears; one that will cover over the conviction that they feel for not having fidelity to the one true God. Paul sums it up in one of his letters to Timothy, giving the following instructions: “For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables” (2 Timothy 4:3–4).

A quick Greek word study concerning the word “fables,” yielded the following results. We learn so much more when we know the intent of the words in the original language:

Fables - ¼æ‚¿Â - mü’-thos (moo-those) - a fiction, a fable; an invention, a falsehood

A fiction is a story that isn't based on any fact. A fable is much the same, but it is usually based on a specific culture and it has no historical proof or physical evidence to back up its claim. An invention is a story that is made up form someone's imagination. A falsehood is better known as a lie. In essence, Paul was telling Timothy that in the last days men will not believe the truth, but they will find teachers for themselves who will teach them stories that have no historical basis or physical evidence; that the stories will lack fact and will be the product of perverted imaginations. Many of the teachings that come from the "aliens" are wild imaginations that have no fact or physical substance and are nothing but fables designed to turn people aside from the truth. We will look at their messages in another chapter.

Paul wrote many letters to many churches. The purposes of his letters were many times multifaceted, dealing with issues that specific churches were dealing with and helping them to apply God's word to those things. One of the major issues that Paul wrote about quite a few times was to warn churches about deceptions and delusions. One such letter, to the church in Thessalonica, tells about deceptions and the man of perdition who would fool the whole world by his cunning. Paul knew that this man would be so shrewd that he would take many people by surprise, so Paul told them what signs to watch for. Since Satan is a being that has a method of operation that he seems to follow throughout the ages we can know that these things should be manifest in the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon. Because of this I present the following scripture so that we can all know that the alien abduction enigma is a large part of the end time delusion:

"For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness…" (2 Thessalonians 2:7–12).

Paul addresses a single person and a group of people in the passage above. The single entity that he talks about is what many know as the Antichrist. Almost everyone has heard about this future dictator whom a fallen world will hail as Christ, Messiah, Mahdi, Buddha and one of the many other titles of the savior that the world's religions are waiting for. As an antithesis to the world's expectations, Paul describes this dictator as evil and he says that Satan will be the benefactor of this man. Paul states that we will recognize this man because he will come onto the

scene with power, miraculous signs, and lying wonders. Satan will bring this man onto the scene and cause the whole world to wander after him. He also says that there will be unrighteous deception that will accompany this man in his rise to power.

Now let's think about all those attributes for just a minute or two. If we look back in history about two thousand years ago there was another great person who came onto the scene, his name was Jesus Christ. Didn't he show God's power through healings and even raising people from the dead and casting out demons? Didn't he give us signs by feeding thousands of people with just a few fish and a few loaves of bread and didn't he cause wonder by laying down His life and then raising it back up again on the third day, and his ascension into heaven? But there were other signs. There was the star that was stationed over where He was born. There was the virgin birth and the angels that appeared to the shepherds proclaiming His birth. It isn't hard to see that what will happen very soon in our present history will be a counterfeit of the original Jesus Christ and probably a counterfeit of the Christian Church.

As we mentioned above there were signs before Jesus Christ was born. So if the counterfeit article is to be truly counterfeited then there would have to be counterfeit signs that would precede the man of lawlessness. There have been signs for the past sixty years and we've seen them with our very eyes. We've seen the power of the UFO, how they whisk through the sky and how they defy the laws of physics. We've heard the accounts of abductees as they've told their stories of how they've been taken though walls and closed windows to craft that have been near their homes. We've seen strange signs in crop circles, which many equate with UFO sightings and some even have proof of this in the way of video. UFOs are lying wonders because through them many people forsake the truth that mankind is a special creation of God and they cause people to believe that there is intelligent life on other worlds that happen to be visiting us in these contraptions. And finally there are the messages from these entities that are always in opposition to the Judeo/Christian ethic, the Bible, and born again believers in Jesus Christ. That makes a pretty strong case against them. The biblical teachings testify against the entities and the actions of the supposed extraterrestrials enforce what the Bible says about them.

What always seemed to mystify me about the end of the passage was the statement that "God will send them a strong delusion, that they should believe the lie." In this statement it appears that God is sending a lie, and I could never equate that with the actions of a righteous God. When things like this happen it is best to pray for direction and then to do a study in the original languages. A word study of

the Greek word for "send" is as follows:

<u>Send</u> - Às¼ÀÉ - pe'm-pM (pem-poh) - to send (thrust or insert) a thing into another

So please allow me to paraphrase what is being said in the end of the passage. There is already a delusion occurring with those who are perishing, but their persistence in their rebellion causes God to basically say, "okay, if you want to be rebellious then I will take away anything that I was using to help you to see the truth. If you want to believe a lie, I will let it go full force and not prevent anything. You will have rebellion until your stomach is full of it and it comes running out of your nose." He's not going to offer an opposition to the delusion anymore and he'll give them their fill, making it a strong delusion. In essence, God is not sending the delusion but He is sending his approval for the delusion to perpetuate and by Him doing so He allows the initial delusion to fester. It could be compared to a person having a lower respiratory bacterial infection that you know could very well develop into pneumonia. You have the medication to cure the infection but the sick person won't allow you to administer the cure so after a while you give up. By giving up you are "sending" (so to speak) license for the infection to get worse and become fatal. God will not force His will on anyone and people who are given over to rebellion will be allowed to rebel even if it leads to their demise.

The Creator Himself Warns of the Deception:

It was not just Jesus' followers who warned about a coming deception. Jesus went out of his way several times Himself to warn us. In His discourse on the Mount of Olives Jesus became quite graphic about what the last days would look like and He emphasized that the foundation of these terrible days will be deception. Deception works best if it is worked gently into a society. It can be compared to the boiled frog syndrome. Experiments conducted in the late 19th century showed that if a frog was placed in tepid water and the temperature of the water was raised in very small increments that the frog would remain in the water and not notice that the water was getting hot, and when the water would reach boiling temperature, the frog would boil to death.

Deception, in the sense of spiritual deception works the same way. If it is introduced too rapidly, then those who are being deceived will notice their peril and will recoil back to a safe place. But, if the deception is introduced over a period of years or decades then it goes unnoticed and it even becomes the normal mode of operation for those who are deceived. We'll pick on our German nemesis again and review how Hitler deceived the German people about Jews.

Jewish people have lived in what is now Germany for millennia. There is evidence that they lived there during the time of the Roman Empire and there are still Jewish people in Germany. Throughout their history in Germany (and other places) there were times when they were allowed to integrate into society and there were other times when they were treated as outcasts. During their outcast times Jews would band together in their own neighborhoods, most of the time those areas being the most undesirable parts of a city or town. They would rejuvenate the area, open up their own stores, start schools of education and would prosper. Often, when the gentiles would see their prosperity and their high education, they would again want to associate with the Jews. There were many interfaith marriages between Jews and gentiles and it was known that many Germans had at least one Jewish ancestor in their ancestry.

This was the case in the early part of the 20th century. Jewish stores were respected for their merchandise, Jewish educators were known to be the best teachers and Jews were highly respected in society. There was another faction of German society that hated the Jews. These people were for the most part evolutionists who believed that they belonged to an Aryan race, one that they thought to be genetically pure. There also were Christians who adhered to "replacement theology," thinking that God had forsaken the Jewish people forever and they ascribed God's promises to the Jewish people as promises to themselves. They believed that there was no longer a promise to the physical descendants of Abraham and that the promises in the Bible were now meant for the spiritual descendants of Abraham. This false theology stripped the Jews of their inheritance and started German society on the road to stripping away the human identity of the Jewish people thus classifying them as sub-human. There is a lot more to it, but that is the essential theory. They had several classifications for people who were not Aryan, listing them in percentages of human genetic code that they believed these groups to have. At the bottom of their list were the Jews. Through years of propaganda, telling other Germans that Jews were responsible for all of the ills of the world, that Jews caused the economic problems and that Jews poisoned the water wells of Christians and sacrificed Christian babies during Passover, they polluted the minds of many Germans. By the time that the late 1930s arrived many Germans believe the nonsense and the Holocaust occurred. The Nazis had spread deceit amongst a population that had already had its preconceived notions about Jewish people and it led to the murder of 6 million innocent Jews and millions of others whom the Nazis found to be undesirables.

In the case of Jesus' warnings though, He was referring to those in the future who would come to us claiming that they were Him, or that they have His anointing.

Below is what Jesus said about being wary of a deception that could mislead even His most ardent of followers if they are unprepared:

"And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many" (Matthew 24:3–5).

Jesus started out his whole discourse in Matthew 24 with a warning that deception will be the crux of all that will occur in the last days. After this comment He then told about conditions on the Earth and many of the ills that the world will experience as a result of their rebellion toward God. Jesus thought that the deception would be so enticing that he spends the whole of chapter 25 using illustrations showing the wisdom of being ready for these things and the foolishness of ignoring His warnings. In the Gospel of Luke we are given a parallel of Matthew 24, but there are a couple of additions to the warning in Matthew as illustrated below:

"And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them." (Luke 24:8).

As we will see in the coming chapter of this book, which talks about the messages that come from the entities that purport to be "extraterrestrials," there are many claims from these entities which say that they introduced Jesus into the world or that they are "the collective Christ Consciousness." Through the inculcation of their message they also stress that "Earth changes," and a "spiritual evolution" of mankind is coming very soon to the people on Earth, or shall we say, "the time has drawn near," just like Jesus warned us they would proclaim.

To complete our understanding of what Jesus warns us about we have to return to Matthew chapter 24. In this passage Jesus stresses the severity of the last days, but in addition, He shows us that the false Messiahs will back up their deception by showing great signs and wonders: "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before" (Matthew 24:21–25).

We believe that the beginnings of these "signs and wonders" are what we see in UFOs and alien abduction. What society once saw as lunacy they now embrace and every day there are more converts to the extraterrestrial theory of the UFO

phenomenon. We do not think that this phenomenon will be the only signs and wonders of this deception, but we think that it will be the foundation on which it is built.

Imagine if you will, a world in turmoil that has no hope because it has rejected the only true God. Wars ensue and the economy collapses and many are in despair, at the lowest point they have ever been in their lives. All of a sudden a great deception appears, perhaps in the way of fallen angels appearing in the form of UFOs and then a man appears to have come from one of these craft and he claims that he can solve all the ills of the world. People in droves will accept this man, especially when he is able to manipulate the world's resources in a miraculous way and he delivers on promises that he has made through the messages that were given through channelers and alien abductees for the past sixty years. The world that was in despair would have a solution, a promise of hope and they would echo the words of the first president of the United Nations General Assembly, Paul Henri Spaak, who in 1957 said:

"We do not want another committee, we have too many already. What we want is a man of sufficient stature to hold the allegiance of all the people and to lift us up out of the economic morass into which we are sinking. Send us such a man, and whether he be God or devil, we will receive him" (Dr. Paul-Henri Spaak, the former Prime Minister of Belgium; was also a former Secretary General of NATO and the first president of the United Nations General Assembly).

Mankind in his fallen state wants three things, first to have free license and not to be answerable to a God who they falsely see as a taskmaster. Second they want salvation from the ills of this world, to be treated like gods, so to speak. Third, they want a man to lead them in this effort, a kinsman who they can identify with. Those in the world see Jesus as being far away, impersonal and uncaring and they think this way because they lack faith and want someone that they can see and touch, someone who can show them signs and wonders. They will be given signs and wonders, but from a false hope, a spiritually impotent portent who will have powers given to him by the Prince of the Power of the Air, and the signs and wonders will be in the form of UFOs, alien abduction and even more terrible things that we cannot at this time possibly imagine.

Paul the Apostle echoed the words of Jesus but added to the equation by telling us who the false messengers are; the fallen angels.

"But even if we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than what we have preached to you, let him be accursed" (Galatians 1:8).

One might be concerned about the word "heaven" in the passage, but let's look

at the word to see its true meaning. We want to make sure that the correct place is clear and perhaps it will help to clarify the meaning as well as adding proof to what we have already seen in this chapter. First, we must note that the word is not capitalized, meaning that the heaven that Paul is talking about isn't a proper noun, but just a general area of space-time; it isn't the heaven that is God's abode, which happens to be the other meaning of the word in Greek. The Greek word for "heaven" in this passage is:

<u>heaven</u> - ¿PÁ±½yÂ - ü-rä-no's (ouranos) – the vaulted expanse of sky with all things visible in it; the universe, the world; the aerial heavens or sky, the region where the clouds and the tempests gather, and where thunder and lightning are produced

We see by our word study that the angels that can bring false messages to mankind aren't God's angels who inhabit God's abode, but they are the angels who are bound to the Earth and its atmosphere, the Earthbound or fallen angels.

Incidentally, we must take note that in our present age a pseudo-Christian cult and one religion, Islam, were all started by men who claimed to have angelic visitation, and all both angels, Gabriel (not the real angel Gabriel) who spoke to Mohammed and Moroni (the Mormon Angel) who spoke to Joseph Smith either denied or perverted the true Gospel of Jesus Christ. This is clearly what the messengers of deception have been preaching from the UFO pulpit.

Paul wrote a letter to the church in Corinth in which he described an ability of Satan, the leader of the fallen angels and the demons: "And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light" (2 Corinthians 11:14).

Interesting parallels can be drawn from Satan's ability and UFOs. First, Paul tells us that Satan is able to morph into different forms, one being an angel of light. UFOs can morph. There are many eyewitness reports of many UFOs joining to become one UFO or one breaking up into many. UFOs have also been reported to change shape and to just appear out of thin air or disappear into thin air. The word "light" in the passage is interesting and bears further examination:

<u>Light</u> - ¦öÂ - fM's (foes) - a heavenly light such as surrounds angels when they appear on Earth

We should note that this Greek word is the root word for our present word "phosphorescent." We also have to include in this note that there are many reports of UFOs having a phosphorescent glow about them and there are also reports of "aliens" having a glow about them. This goes beyond coincidence and proves that there is a correlation between manifestations of fallen angels and the UFO/alien

abduction phenomenon. Mention should also be made that the word "Lucifer," which is another name for angel known as Satan, is defined as "light bearer." In the next chapter we will see that the entities that today call themselves "extraterrestrials," also refer to themselves as "light angels" and "beings of light."

The Big Daddy of the Rebellion:

Back in 1983 I was using what was back then a high-tech device called the "remote control" to surf through the channels on the television. My curiosity was piqued when I saw a woman standing by the seashore looking out to sea, her arms extended and chanting, "I am god." I later found out that this woman was Shirley McClain, a well-known Hollywood actress. This movie, titled "Out on a Limb," was Shirley's attempt to announce to the world that she was now a practitioner of the "New Age" religion and that she did indeed believe, like Hindus are taught to believe, that they are gods.

Of course Shirley did not become a god. If you stood her in front of a moving train or dropped her in the ocean hundreds of miles from any land she would perish just like you and me. However, Shirley fell for the lie that so many have fallen for: that she was divine, part of the Christ Consciousness. For humanity, this falsehood started in the Garden of Eden when Eve was beguiled by the *Nachash* (from the root *Nachash, to shine*), better known as the Serpent. This "shining one" whom many (including the authors of this book) equate as Lucifer (Satan) had himself rebelled against God, thinking that he could become God Almighty, and he has been a fallen angel ever since. When he deceived Eve, the part of his dissertation that appealed to her was: "Then the serpent said to the woman, 'You will not surely die. For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil'" (Genesis 3:4–5).

This was the downfall of mankind and the want of "becoming a god" has plagued men ever since. Pride is what entered Satan and it is what caused him to foolishly think that he could usurp God's authority. In Isaiah we find what is commonly known as the "five 'I Wills'" of Satan. Reading it can help one to understand what led to his rebellion and how he fits into the UFO and alien abduction arena:

> "How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations! For you have said in your heart:
> **I will** ascend into heaven,
> **I will** exalt my throne above the stars of God;

I will also sit on the mount of the congregation On the farthest sides of the north;
I will ascend above the heights of the clouds,
I will be like the Most High.
Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, To the lowest depths of the Pit. Those who see you will gaze at you, And consider you, saying: 'Is this the man who made the Earth tremble, Who shook kingdoms, Who made the world as a wilderness And destroyed its cities, Who did not open the house of his prisoners?'" (Isaiah 14:1–17).

What you have just read was the declaration made by Lucifer, whom we know as Satan. He is the leader of the UFO and alien abduction phenomena. He knows that his time is short and when it is over he will be judged and punished. He has determined that since he is going down he wants to take as many people as he can with him. What better way to do that than to have his minions manifest as UFOs and as aliens so that they can get the world to disavow God and believe the lie that he (Satan) has perpetrated.

We have summed up the characters that are on the evil side of this war. We have seen who they are, how they operate and what their agenda is. We've seen that they are not the good guys that some people hold them to be. We've seen that they are the angels who rebelled against God sometime before the fall of mankind. We've done exhaustive word studies to see what the scriptures say about these beings and have seen that they compare exactly to the entities who claim to be extraterrestrial. We've exposed the counterfeit, now we must look at the genuine.

The Good Guys in the Conflict:

In order to get back on focus, just in case someone has gotten off of focus, we need to remind ourselves of the question that was asked at the 2007 Roswell UFO Convention Panel Discussion. The question that was asked was, "Why do all of these aliens, grays, reptilians, etc., all fear Jesus?" We've looked at the perpetrators in this court case, the fallen angels who in our current age call themselves "extraterrestrials." We've seen that they are indeed the angels that have rebelled against God Almighty. By knowing these things it is pretty easy to establish why they run for the hills when the name of Jesus Christ, and the power behind His name are invoked; namely, they know their future and they know that they are ultimately subject to Jesus Christ. In an awkward sort of way we could compare it to the feeling that one gets when they've been through a very bad relational breakup and we come into contact with the person whom we've broken up with. It is very

uncomfortable and we want to be anywhere but there. If that feeling could be taken to its ultimate limits then we might have a little sense of what the fallen angels and demons feel when the name of Jesus Christ is mentioned in their presence; but where our relationships are temporal and in most cases they can heal, the rift between the fallen beings and God is eternal.

It is imperative in this research to take a look at who God is and who Jesus Christ is in relationship with God Almighty. We won't broach the subject of the Trinity, even though the authors of this book adhere to the doctrine of the Trinity and will defend it passionately. This book however is not about Trinitarian doctrine; it is dedicated to talking about alien abduction, its cause, and how to end alien abduction as a life's pattern. Given that, let us research who God is and what we research will show why the fallen angels run from Jesus Christ, His name and His authority.

Many believers in Jesus Christ, when presented with the task of being an apologist to an unbeliever for the person of Jesus Christ will present Him from strictly a New Covenant personae. This is fine and well, but many people are wary of the New Covenant because they make the error of thinking that it is a gentile covenant and therefore they think of it as Christian-specific. They do not realize that it is a completion of the Mosaic Covenant. People should not be held in contempt for making this mistake because even the religious leaders of Jesus' time made the same error. Jesus replied to them in this manner: "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil" (Matthew 5:17 KJV).

Jesus' word that He is the fulfillment of the Torah and Prophets should be enough of a proof that His name and authority are divine, but for the sake of many reading this book, let's delve into scripture a bit more to do our research.

One of the most interesting accounts that can be found is in Genesis, where the names of the patriarchs that lived before the Great Deluge of Noah's time. While it isn't plain to the casual observer, if one does a root word study of the names of these men we see an interesting story emerge. I came to this knowledge by way of a video that I viewed. The video was taped on, of all places, Roswell, during the 1997 UFO Festival and it is titled "The Alien Encounters Conference," the speakers being Chuck Missler from Koinonia House and Dr. Mark Eastman. While we will just skim over the basics in order to save time, the full story can be found at Missler's internet ministry site at www.khouse.org. Below I will list the names and their meanings and then we will put it all together:

Hebrew	**English**

Adam	Man
Seth	Appointed
Enosh	Mortal
Kenan	Sorrow
Mahalalel	The Blessed God
Jared	Shall Come Down
Enoch	Teaching
Methuselah	His Death Shall Bring
Lamech	The Despairing
Noah	Rest, or Comfort

The sum total of the story is as follows: "Man is appointed mortal sorrow. The Blessed God shall come down teaching, and His death shall bring the despairing comfort." God Almighty was telling everyone who could read Genesis that even in the beginning He wanted people to know that He knew that man's situation was hopeless and that He would come down, offer Himself as a sacrifice for our fallen condition and that in that sacrifice, He would give us rest or comfort.

There are other passages in the Torah and the Writings, but the prophetic books are where we find many of passages that foretold of Jesus Christ and His divine nature. In the book of the prophet Isaiah we find the following passage: "Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel" (Isaiah 7:14).

Isaiah was given this prophecy in the 8th century B.C. so in effect God told him about Jesus' virgin birth more than seven hundred years before it actually occurred. The part of the passage that concerns us the most for our research is that God calls the child born of the virgin, "Immanuel," a word that means "God with us." It is quite plain that God wanted His mantle on Jesus because Jesus was God in the flesh.

There are some who could possibly argue (although that argument would be weak, scripturally speaking) that the semantics of the scripture could be seen in other ways. For those who would use such an argument our research then presents the following scripture in Isaiah the ninth chapter:

"For unto us a Child is born, Unto us a Son is given; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His government and peace there will be no end, Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom, To order it and establish it with judgment and justice From that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this" (Isaiah 9:6–7).

It is crucial that we examine the titles given to Messiah in Isaiah chapter 9, as they give us a hint to the origins of Jesus and why fallen angels, demons and "extraterrestrials" fear Him.

Wonderful – äÜÐ- peh'·leh – something wonderful, admirable, a miracle of God

Counselor - Ùâå- yä·ats' – counselor or to give counsel

Mighty God - ÒÑÕè ÐÜ – l-ghib·bore' - God, the one true God, Jehovah - strong, mighty

Everlasting Father - âÓ ÐÑ – ad äb - perpetuity, forever, continuing future; ancient (of past time); forever (of future time) of continuous existence - of God as father

Prince of Peace - éÜÕÝ éè - sar shä·lome' - Ruler of rulers (of God) - peace (from war) and/or peace with God especially in covenant relationship

Now that we have the definitions of the words we can piece the passage together. The first title given to this child is that he would be called "wonderful." One of the meanings of the word "wonderful," is "a miracle of God." Now we have to define what a miracle is. The Merriam Webster Dictionary defines "miracle" as: "an extraordinary event manifesting divine intervention in human affairs." The fact that this child is a miracle ties together with the previous passage where we see that a virgin will give birth. A virgin in itself is a miracle but we have an added miracle that God Himself is with us in the form of this child.

The passage says that the individual mentioned therein would be a "counselor." The word counselor has two meanings that are both applicable. The word "counselor," means both an attorney (and arbitrator) and a counselor, as in one who gives advice or judgment. King David wrote about this very thing in the Psalms and the Apostle Paul in Hebrews:

"The LORD said to my Lord, 'Sit at My right hand, Till I make Your enemies Your footstool.' The LORD shall send the rod of Your strength out of Zion. Rule in the midst of Your enemies! Your people shall be volunteers In the day of Your power; In the beauties of holiness, from the womb of the morning, You have the dew of Your youth. The LORD has sworn And will not relent, '<u>You are a priest forever According to the order of Melchizedek</u>'" (Psalm 110:1–4).

And:

For on the one hand there is an annulling of the former commandment because of its weakness and unprofitableness, for the law made nothing perfect; on the other hand, there is the bringing in of a better hope, through which we draw near to God. And inasmuch as He was not made priest without an oath (for they have become priests without an oath, but He with an oath by Him who said to Him: "The LORD has sworn And will not relent, 'You are a priest forever According to the order of Melchizedek'"), by so much more Jesus has become a surety of a better covenant. Also there were many priests, because they were prevented by death from continuing. But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood. Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them. (Hebrews 7:18-25)

Jesus is forever before God the Father making intercession for us. When accusations are brought against any believer in Jesus Christ in Heaven's court, the Father sees that we have Jesus' covering and that covering is stamped or, "paid in full." He is our attorney and priest in the heavenly realm.

The next title given to "son that is given" is the title "mighty God." This title is associated with what the English Bible translates to be LORD (all uppercase letters). The word LORD is a translation of YHVH (some write it YWHW) or Yahweh pronounced "yah-veh" or "yahweh" and many times Jehovah, depending on preference of the speaker, but the true pronunciation should be "yah-veh." This name of God became popular from Exodus forward, though it was probably known by the patriarchs before this time. In Exodus we find the following:

Moses said to God, "When I come to the Israelites and say to them 'the God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they ask me, 'What is His name?' what shall I say to them?" And God said to Moses, "Ehyeh-Asher-Ehyeh." He continued, "Thus shall you say to the Israelites, 'Ehyeh sent me to you.'" And God said further to Moses, "Thus shall you speak to the Israelites: The LORD, the God [YHVH Elohim] of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob has sent me to you: This shall be My name forever, This My appellation for all eternity." (Exodus 3:13–15 JPS [brackets are Hebrew translations])

The scripture in Isaiah shows that Jesus Christ was much more than a man, He

is God Incarnate. This is yet another reason why the forces of darkness (i.e. extraterrestrials) flee from Him, and they very well should, but one day they will be brought to justice and condemned.

The fourth title for the "son that is given," is "everlasting Father." This term can be confusing to those who do not hold to the Trinitarian doctrine. The word "ad" which in Hebrew means eternal or everlasting could have no other inference but to God Almighty, the one who has always existed and always will exist. The word "Ab" is always defined as father, either as a father of a family or God the Father. There is no way of getting around the fact that God told Isaiah through divine revelation, that the "son that is given," hence, Jesus Christ, would be God the Father. Jesus backed this up several times, two of which we will cite here:

"My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand. My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father's hand. I and My Father are one" (John 10:27–30).

And:

> "If you had known Me, you would have known My Father also; and from now on you know Him and have seen Him." Philip said to Him, "Lord, show us the Father, and it is sufficient for us." Jesus said to him, "Have I been with you so long, and yet you have not known Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father; so how can you say, 'Show us the Father'? Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me? The words that I speak to you I do not speak on My own authority; but the Father who dwells in Me does the works. Believe Me that I am in the Father and the Father in Me, or else believe Me for the sake of the works themselves." (John 14:7–11)

We must pause for a moment to make a very important clarification about interpreting the Bible. As we mentioned at the start of this section of the chapter, we have an interpreter of scripture and His name is the Holy Spirit.

"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things that I said to you" (John 14:26).

It is apparent that there are many in the Christian camp that have not read the scripture in John, or if they have they have not taken it to heart. Jesus clearly said that the Holy Spirit would teach His believers all things. Many however have

decided to place human restrictions on God's Living Word. Some vehemently state that the Mosaic Covenant is to be taken in literal fashion while the New Covenant in Jesus is to be taken spiritually only. We strongly come against this premise. Let's take for instance the commandment that we are to honor our mother and father. Literally that means that we are to listen to them and obey them as well as it means to take care of them physically and financially. Spiritually it would mean to hold them up in prayer, to supplicate for them and to care for them in their relationship with God. Both of these ideals are scriptural and both apply to the commandment that we are given. Leave either of these out and you have offended the commandment.

Furthermore, when Jesus makes the statement that He and the Father are one, there are two schools of thought in regard to that statement. One would say that Jesus meant that He and the Father were one in thought and mission and that is very true. Another would say that Jesus was saying that He is the Father and the Father is He and that would be correct too. Both the literal and spiritual apply in both circumstances we have illustrated and both should be accepted. We hold firmly to the belief that the entire Bible is both literal and spiritual and that the Holy Spirit interprets it in the fashion that He deems necessary in accordance with particular circumstances as they arise.

The final name that is given to "a son that is given" is "Prince of Peace." Arguments have arisen over the past two thousand years about this title. Those who question Jesus' authority and the Bible's veracity will state that there has never been peace in the world, and to an extent that is true in that there is rarely physical peace in this world. There is however a spiritual peace that is given to those who know Jesus Christ intimately, who have received His promise:

"Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid" (John 14:27).

And:

> Rejoice in the Lord always. Again I will say, rejoice! Let your gentleness be known to all men. The Lord *is* at hand. Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, <u>let your requests be made known to God; and the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus</u>. Finally, brethren, whatever things are true, whatever things *are* noble, whatever things *are* just, whatever things *are* pure, whatever things *are* lovely, whatever things *are* of good report, if *there is* any virtue and if *there is* anything praiseworthy—

meditate on these things. The things which you learned and received and heard and saw in me, these do, and the God of peace will be with you. (Philippians 4:4–9)

Yet a day will come with physical peace will come to this world and then the whole scripture in Isaiah will be fulfilled:

Righteousness shall be the belt of His loins, And faithfulness the belt of His waist. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, The leopard shall lie down with the young goat, The calf and the young lion and the fatling together; And a little child shall lead them. The cow and the bear shall graze; Their young ones shall lie down together; And the lion shall eat straw like the ox. The nursing child shall play by the cobra's hole, And the weaned child shall put his hand in the viper's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, For the Earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD As the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be a Root of Jesse, Who shall stand as a banner to the people; For the Gentiles shall seek Him, And His resting place shall be glorious. (Isaiah 11:5–10)

So far we have examined a fair amount scriptural evidence of Jesus Christ's identity and how that identity relates to God Almighty. As to make sure that there is no doubt about whom He is and why the so-called "aliens" flee from His name we'd like to introduce a few more pieces of evidence. Although the scriptures all seem to say the same thing, each one tends to add a bit more to the mix, but just like a good stew; it isn't finished until all of the ingredients are added. A look at two scriptures, one in Isaiah and one in Philippians, help to corroborate the research we have done prior to this:

"Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the LORD? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear" (Isaiah 45:21b–23).

And:

"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father" (Philippians 2:9–11).

So far we have seen how the Mosaic Covenant and those therein spoke of a future Messiah who would be God Himself, the savior of mankind. Now we shall take a look at what the Messiah said about Himself and we'll also look at the testimony of those whom He taught and who lived with Him during his ministry here on Earth.

Jesus was teaching in the Temple at Jerusalem one day and as was the norm when He tried to speak to large crowds, the scribes and Pharisees came to Him to trick Him and when that didn't work they started to debate with Him. Toward the end of the conversation Jesus made quite a remarkable statement that infuriated the Jewish leaders who came to entrap Him. When the subject of his parentage was brought up Jesus told the crowd:

"Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad. Then said the Jews [religious leaders] unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am" (John 8:56–58 [brackets mine]).

The phrase that Jesus used, "I AM," is reminiscent of the words spoken to Moses on the mountain when he asked God the name that he should use when he came to the Israelites in Egypt. A study in the Greek language for the words yields the following results:

I - ³} - (e-gM) - I, me, my
AM - µ0¼w - (-m') - to be, to exist, to happen, to be present

Simply put, Jesus told the religious leaders, "Before Abraham was, I existed." There is an interesting parallel with the name in Exodus. As we can see that the Greek words say that "I exist," and the tense is past simply because He said, "before Abraham was." This denotes antiquity and an eternal state of being. When compared to Exodus this is backed up farther. The words for "I Am that I Am," in Hebrew are: ÐÔÙÔ Ðéè ÐÔÙÔ - Ehyeh-Asher-Ehyeh. The meaning of this phrase has an improper perspective in vernacular so one could say the name in a variety of different ways and all of them would be true. For instance, the name could mean "I Am what I Was," or "I Am what I Will Be," or "I Am now What I Have Always Been and Always Will Be." It is God's way of proclaiming His eternal nature. There are many biblical scholars who feel that when Jesus uttered these words, He did so in Hebrew, which would explain very well why after He said the name they tried to kill Him right there and then, but He slipped away from them, probably by

supernatural means.

Paul the Apostle echoed these sentiments when he was writing to the church in Jerusalem. Paul was formally a Pharisee and a man very learned in scripture. Because of this it was easy for him to see that Jesus was Yahweh. In his letter to Hebrews in Jerusalem he said: "Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever" (Hebrews 13:8).

We will now list two more scriptures that will conclude our research into who Jesus Christ really is, His eternal nature and His divinity, and why extraterrestrials tend to run whenever His name is used in authority:

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made" (John 1:1–3).

And:

"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last" (Revelation 22:13).

Up to this point we have gone through a lot of research and we have submitted a lot of testimony to the jury. The case against the fallen angels who masquerade as space aliens is mounting and it is damning to the defense. Evidence by way of personal testimony will be introduced later in this book and through it you the jury will see that without a doubt these entities aren't from outer space, but they are the fallen angels and also the demons that have plagued mankind from time immemorial. There is another piece of evidence that needs to be presented. Since the defense has had the witness stand for more than sixty years, we can take a little more time to examine some more evidence that is pejorative to the defenses' case. We need to look at instances in the Bible where demonic entities were rebuked either by Jesus Christ, or others who walked in His power and authority.

Are There Accounts of Encounters Between Jesus and Aliens?:

We posed that question at the conference in Roswell in 2008. Seeing that the crowd would probably have a majority of UFO adherents, we didn't see that the question would pose any problems or cause anyone to leave during the talk. Knowing that this book will not only address that population, but many others, including Christians, I had to chuckle as I typed the subtitle onto the page. I got the image of penalty flags being thrown and whistles blowing, much like when a foul is committed in American football. If you were one of those who were alarmed please

be at peace. We are not of the likes of Erich von Däniken or Zachariah Stitchin who paint the picture that God was an ancient astronaut and the ancient prophets were misguided, less-evolved fools who mistook those ancient astronauts for gods. We take the Bible literally as the inerrant Word of God, inspired by the Holy Spirit who wrote through the pens of forty-four scribes over thousands of years.

If you take into account however, that the fallen angels are masquerading around as space aliens and that they've gone out of their way to enforce that agenda, and we've shown that fallen angels and extraterrestrials are really the same players with different disguises then it really isn't wrong to say that Jesus did have encounters with aliens. Something else must be looked at in this mix. They really do not have a home. They were cast out of heaven, their original home and if they follow their leader, who is trying to get back to heaven and usurp God's throne, then you could say that they are aliens and wanderers, the ultimate being without a country. Lest we start to feel sorry for their plight, let's remember that their predicament is their own doing and some day they will find their true home; the Bible calls it "The Lake of Fire."

If our affirmation that the Name of Jesus is effective in chasing away these entities and faith in Jesus stops alien abduction for good, then there must be instances where Jesus' own authority made them flee while He walked on Earth during His ministry. There are quite a few and there are even some accounts of the early brothers in Jesus doing the same. Let's look at some of these accounts and add more evidence to our evidence folder.

The first passage we will examine occurred when Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee. Let's see what happened during this encounter:

> Then they came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the Gadarenes. And when He had come out of the boat, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no one could bind him, not even with chains, because he had often been bound with shackles and chains. And the chains had been pulled apart by him, and the shackles broken in pieces; neither could anyone tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying out and cutting himself with stones.
>
> When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped Him. <u>And he cried out with a loud voice and said, "What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God that You do not torment me."</u> For He said to him, "Come out of the man, unclean spirit!" Then He asked him, "What

is your name?" And he answered, saying, "My name is Legion; for we are many." Also he begged Him earnestly that He would not send them out of the country.

Now a large herd of swine was feeding there near the mountains. So all the demons begged Him, saying, "Send us to the swine, that we may enter them." And at once Jesus gave them permission. Then the unclean spirits went out and entered the swine (there were about two thousand); and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the sea, and drowned in the sea. (Mark 5:1–13)

From the account it appears that although he was filled with demons he still had some self control because he ran to Jesus and worshipped Him. If his demons acted like most do, they knew Jesus was coming long before the man did and they probably told him to stay away from Jesus because He was the Son of God. They probably flooded his mind with so many negative thoughts that it persuaded the man that if they were telling the truth then Jesus could deliver him from Legion. In other words, their persistence backfired on them. It is important to notice that the demon saluted Jesus and called Him "Son of the Most High God." Notice too that prophecy was fulfilled because when the man fell at Jesus' feet (suggestion of bowing) and they, the demon, addressed Him as "Son of the Most High God," they were fulfilling in part the prophecy about every knee bowing and every tongue confessing that Jesus Christ is Lord.

The lead demon spoke to Jesus and told Jesus that his name was "Legion" announcing that they were many. A Roman Legion in Jesus' time consisted of roughly forty-five hundred fighting men. Demons are known to be prolific liars so whether it was speaking figuratively or literally we will probably never know, but we can be sure that there were a lot of them. We know that there were at least two thousand of them because they were cast into the herd of swine that numbered about that number, but if one man could have that many demons infesting him then it is conceivable that more than one demon was cast into each swine. When they were cast into the swine it only delayed their judgment for a few minutes because the swine drown their homes, and they were assigned back to dry places. The important lesson of this scripture is Jesus' authority over not just one demon during a single event, but upwards of forty-five hundred of them. All hail the power of Jesus' name!

When Jesus started His ministry He didn't stick His foot into the pool, so to speak, but He dove into full time deliverance ministry. On one occasion He was in Capernaum teaching and He had an alien encounter as we see in the following account:

> Then He went down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and was teaching them on the Sabbaths. And they were astonished at His teaching, for His word was with authority. Now in the synagogue there was a man who had a spirit of an unclean demon. And he cried out with a loud voice, saying, "Let us alone! What have we to do with You, Jesus of Nazareth? Did You come to destroy us? I know who You are—the Holy One of God!" But Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be quiet, and come out of him!" And when the demon had thrown him in their midst, it came out of him and did not hurt him. Then they were all amazed and spoke among themselves, saying, **"What a word this is! For with authority and power He commands the unclean spirits, and they come out."** And the report about Him went out into every place in the surrounding region. (Luke 4:31–37)

Again we see the demons acknowledging Jesus divine, this time being addresses as "The Holy One of God." As was customary the demon was obliged to come out of the man who was infested with the demon. The thing that I find more interesting is how those who witnessed the event said with certainty that Jesus has the authority to command unclean spirits and make them go away; much like He does when His name is used during an abduction event!

On the very same day another person with an unclean spirit came into Jesus' path and the following was the result:

"Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ" (Luke 4:40–41).

Accounts like the above were not just limited to Jesus, but to many who followed Him, as we see in the following passage:

"And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease" (Matthew 10:1).

This sort of thing was also manifest through the believers in the infant church in Jerusalem some time after Jesus' ascension into Heaven:

"There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were

healed every one" (Acts 5:16).

Another account is shown in the Book of Acts, which tells about the Apostle Philip who had gone down to a city in Samaria to preach the Gospel of Jesus Christ and worked many other things by way of the Holy Spirit and the name and Authority of Jesus Christ:

"And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed. And there was great joy in that city" (Acts 8:6–8).

We hope that with all the evidence we presented to you the jury, you have seen without a shadow of a doubt that the name of Jesus, and the power and authority that come with that name, and especially an intimate relationship with the bearer of that name causes fallen angels and demons to flee.

For some it might be hard to see how this correlates to the alien abduction phenomenon. They demand even more evidence. Maybe it is because in this long chapter we have proven that entities like fairies, elves, ogres and other of the strange entities that have visited people over the millennia are the same beings as fallen angels and demons. But even with all of that, maybe we still haven't provided solid proof that extraterrestrials fall into that category. Where is the proof that the aliens scatter when the name of Jesus is proclaimed? We have not forsaken that proof nor have we neglected to include it in this chapter. That information is still forthcoming, but what good would it do if we show that the alien abduction act has been with humankind throughout our history. Showing the reader that these entities have been with us for a long time helps to establish that just like in earlier ages, these beings are trying to dupe mankind.

If I was invited to a costume party this year and I wore full knight's armor including the hood so that everyone was clueless as to my identity, it would work for the first year. If I wore it the second year it would be pretty easy to know the identity of the man in the suit. If I wore it a third year I would not be fooling anyone and some would probably mock me, asking if I lacked originality. If however I come in a different disguise every year then I can fool just about everyone. Those who knew me or those who might have seen some peculiarity in my character in the previous years could guess who I am without doing much detective work. The reason why they could figure things out is because although I disguised myself

wonderfully, there are certain characteristics that all people exhibit which we cannot avoid very easily. In the Bible this is called recognizing someone by what fruits that they bear:

"Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them" (Matthew 7:15–20).

It sounds fairly easy doesn't it? Good produces good and bad produces bad. Sadly although it sounds like a fairly elementary concept, most fail to see when bad is masquerading as good. Much of the time the reason people ignore a masquerade is because they are afraid of what they might have to do if they were to expose the masquerading entity. A prime example of this very thing is what is currently happening in the Persian Gulf region of the Middle East. The President of Iran, whose name is Mahmoud Ahmadinejad has been labeled by many as a modern-day Adolph Hitler. The world sits and watches Iran build centrifuges to enrich uranium, supposedly for nuclear power plants, and does nothing to reign in this scoundrel. He has not kept it a secret that he wants to eliminate Israel as a nation, proclaiming it almost weekly over the airwaves, yet not one nation lifts a finger to point at him. Every month this madman stockpiles more and more missiles; missiles that could reach just about anywhere in the Middle East or even India, yet no one issues any threat that Ahmadinejad takes seriously. Where have we seen this before? We saw the same sort of thing in Germany just before the start of World War Two. And what happened before that war, did anyone try to stop Hitler from building his war machine? The answer to that is a resounding "no!"

So why did Hitler prosper in his evil back in the 20th century and why is Ahmadinejad prospering in his evil today? Because there is a commodity located in the Middle East that the world needs, even craves; that being oil. In the same way that Chamberlain rolled over and played dead before Hitler, the nations of the world do in our current era. Chamberlain worried that what he perceived to be a weakened England could not survive in a conflict with Germany and in the same way the nations of the world, who have become slaves to Middle Eastern oil, fear that a conflict with Iran would turn off the oil spigot. The world should have learned a lesson from 1930s Europe, but it has not and the end result will be the same, world war.

Failing to recognize the bad fruit that the aliens produce or denying that bad fruit exists will lead to something similar, spiritual slavery to all who cohort with these entities. In the chapter that will follow we will look at them in depth. We will look at their message and we will perform a detailed investigation into their actions, which you will see is far from benevolent. For many years people have been abducted and they have come back with horrific accounts of medical procedures performed on them without anesthesia. They have come back with tales of bizarre sexual encounters and stories of being taken to facilities that look like underground laboratories where they see human body parts in vats of liquid and some have even recounted seeing human bodies stacked like cordwood in these places. No, these beings are not our friends, in fact, they are our sworn enemies and if it were not for the future liberation of our planet by Jesus Christ, our fate would be doomed. Rest assured that there is hope, but only for those who put their faith in the only one who is able to deliver the soul from hell and death—Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER NINE: Three Basic Christian Views on the Alien Abduction Reality

If you were to ask any secular person their opinion about Christian people you would get a variety of answers. Some would say that Christians are loving people, forthright and faithful to their religion. Others would say that they dislike Christians because they have had bad experiences with one or more people claiming to belong to the Christian family. Some would say that Christians are faithful to their cause and others would say that Christians are hypocrites that cannot be trusted. Beauty is in the eye of the beholder, and so is the witness of a Christian believer to the world at large.

Some people might think that all Christians are the same, but we all differ on certain points of view. To be a Christian in the biblical sense, one has to adhere to certain guidelines. These guidelines are the foundation of Christian belief and all true believers hold these foundational truths to be certain. This underpinning is found in the Apostles Creed, which is recited in many of the mainline churches around the world. These foundational truths will be examined later in this book.

Aside from the foundational truths, churches are free to believe in and practice biblical doctrine as long as that doctrine does not change scripture or twist it or become a loophole for the use of unrighteous behavior. A good comparison can be made by using the analogy of a fine meal. The preparer of the meal serves the meal to those who will eat it. He brings a roast on the platter and to compliment the meat he brings vegetables, potatoes, bread, and wonderful gravy. Everyone takes the meat, which is the foundation of the dinner, but some choose not to take the potatoes or some may choose to take one vegetable and not the other. Some may put gravy on their meat and potatoes and some choose not to use the gravy. Some may season the food with salt and pepper while some only use salt and some only use pepper and some use neither. Some want all that the preparer has to offer. They came for a wonderful meal and they will accept all that there is.

In the same way, all that choose to believe in Jesus have the meat, the foundation of the meal, so to speak. Some are content with just that portion and they want no more. Others want a few more things and so they not only take on the belief in Jesus Christ, but they take on worship and prayer and such. Others want the whole meal, so they become born again; born in the Spirit of God, which gives them not only the foundation and a couple of side dishes, but they receive all that the

preparer has to offer, and the preparer, who is willing to give all to those who want all, gives them what they want.

The Christian faith is a cornucopia of ideas and this is why there are so many denominations of the Protestant movement. All have the same foundation, but all have different ideas when it comes to the things that go beyond that foundation.

One way to bring this to light is to examine the two different beliefs in the Christian realm regarding Genesis chapter six. The two schools of thought on the identity of the "sons of God" in that chapter of Genesis are that; 1) the "sons of God" are the righteous line of Seth and that the "daughters of men" are the unrighteous line of Cain and; 2) that the "sons of God" were fallen angels who came to Earth and had sexual union with human females.

Pastors in particular, and others who have gone to seminary or Christian colleges have been taught the "sons of Seth" theory in their formal education by educators who hold the same belief. As far as we know, there really are no scriptures that show without a shadow of a doubt that this is true. Usually, when approached about the subject, individuals who hold this belief will state that they have come to their belief because they feel that angels cannot have sexual union. They usually cite a scripture in Matthew to give authority to their contention:

"For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven" (Matthew 22:30).

While this passage is quite convincing it doesn't take into account that the fallen angels are not angels of God anymore, nor do not inhabit heaven anymore and since they have been cast out of heaven into the space/time continuum they are subject to the laws of this continuum.

One of God's laws in this physical reality is the law of procreation, which God commanded to all physical living things at the beginning of creation and to mankind at that time, but also after the Great Deluge. That doesn't mean that God also commanded the fallen angels to procreate but it means that if they did procreate (and we contend that they did) with human females, that it was in a willful disobedience toward God and this act set the stage for what would be angelic mixing with the human race before the flood and after (i.e. Goliath) and the abduction of humans by concealed creatures (fairies, gnomes, etc.) and modern-day alien abduction; all these things having too many parallels to be coincidental.

Interestingly enough, the words for "sons of God," which are "beni Elohim," whenever used in the Old Covenant, always denote angels. This notion isn't just an Old Covenant idea, but it's also mentioned in the New Covenant in Jude 1:6 which

talks about the angels willfully leaving their abode in heaven to commit evil; 2 Peter 2:4 which talks about the angels that sinned and are in Tartarus in chains; a scripture in 1 Corinthians that talks about a woman having a husband's authority over her so as to not to tempt the angels:

"For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of the angels" (1 Corinthians 11:10 KJV).

Although it might have appeared that the section above was shown to prove that one belief is better than the other, the real intent was to show the reader that there are two schools of thought on one subject. Even though those two schools of thought might seem diametrically opposed to one another it still doesn't negate the biblical account that there were giants in the land before and after the flood or that the giants, along with mankind's decadence, caused God to destroy the whole world with a deluge. It also doesn't counteract the core beliefs in both groups that unite us in the cohesive properties of Jesus Christ.

Now that we are aware that different schools of thought can exist within unity we can get to the purpose of this chapter. Anyone who has studied the UFO or alien abduction enigma has read about UFOs doing strange things. Some have reported that UFOs can travel thousands of miles per hour and make a right-angled turn without decreasing speed. Of course, the laws of physics dictates that any living being inside of such an object would be turned into a mass of gelatinous goo from such a maneuver. It's also a fact that the stress on such an aircraft would be enormous and it probably would not survive. UFOs however are seen making these maneuvers, yet they remain intact. Some UFOs are visible one second and they either slowly fade out or blink-out very quickly. Some UFOs have even been reported to just disappear into the ground. These actions would suggest that UFOs are not solid matter. We contend that when UFOs perform impossible maneuvers, or when they meld into each other or just blink-out, that they are not physical, but a spiritual manifestation that can be seen. Some might ask how a spiritual manifestation can be seen, seeing that they are spiritual and not physical. Many things can be unseen yet can be felt. Every year hurricanes, cyclones, and tornados wreak havoc on people and property and yet the wind that does the damage is not seen. People that are miraculously healed manifest that healing, and although we see the result of the healing, we didn't physically see the Holy Spirit at work doing the healing.

When we read accounts of alien abduction we read of many instances where the beings that perform the abducting tend to walk through walls or float through closed windows. This again would indicate that during these phases of manifestation the entities are not physical, but they are spiritual.

There are three basic beliefs in the Christian UFO Research community regarding the reality of alien abduction. They are as follows:

1: The event is completely spiritual in nature.

2: The event is completely physical in nature.

3: The event is both spiritual and physical in nature.

Before we explore further we have to define what each category really means. Those who believe that the event is strictly spiritual hold to the notion that when the event occurs, it occurs as a spiritual manifestation in one physical place. They contend that the people are not whisked away by aliens in a flying saucer nor are they taken to another location.

Those who hold to the purely physical notion of alien abduction claim that it is a physical abduction where physical beings take a physical victim to a physical place.

Those who hold to the spiritual and physical notion claim that the event is a spiritual event that manifests into the physical, becomes physical and then manifests back into the spiritual. This notion also holds to the idea that abduction can be both spiritual and physical at the same time also.

Spiritual Abduction:

Those who hold to the purely spiritual aspect of alien abduction have valid concerns and evidence to hold to their belief. Evidence is a very powerful persuader and it should always be taken into account when trying to determine the truth.

It's a known fact that people who have experimented with psychedelic drugs have on occasion seen entities that closely if not exactly resemble the entities that are seen during alien abductions. Doctor and researcher Rick Strassman conducted tests in Albuquerque, New Mexico back in the 1990s using a hallucinogenic compound called DMT. DMT is an acronym for the chemical compound known as; *N,N-dimethyltryptamine*. Dr. Strassman wanted to study the drug to see if its effects would have any therapeutic use for the mentally ill or for any other disease-state in humans.

Strassman expected to see many of the mechanisms of action that are found

when other hallucinogens are administered to people; even to the point of the test subjects seeing beings, but he was not prepared for the fact that some of those receiving DMT would actually see the same entities that are observed during alien abductions. He states in his book:

"The resemblance of Mack's [Dr. John Mack] account of the alien abductions of 'experiencers' to the contacts described by our own volunteers is undeniable. How can anyone doubt, after reading our accounts in these last two chapters, that DMT elicits 'typical' alien encounters. If presented with a record of several of our research subjects' accounts, with all references to DMT removed, could anyone distinguish our reports from those of a group of abductees?" (*DMT – The Spirit Molecule*; 2001, Park Street Press; pg. 219 [brackets mine]).

In the May 2007 issue of UFO Magazine there was a very interesting article, which I quote from. The article is titled, "There's a Door in Your Head, Part II: Meetings with Ancient Teachers of Mankind." The authors are Dr. Bob and Zohara Hieronimus. In the article they talk extensively about a book titled, *Supernatural Meetings with Ancient Teachers of Mankind*, authored by Graham Hancock (The Disinformation Company, 2006). The excerpts of the book that we will note deal with Mr. Hancock's ingestion of a compound called by DMT by researchers, but known to the indigenous people of the Amazon as "ayahuasca;" he talks extensively about ingesting the compound and creatures that he sees during those times of altered states.

> "There is a sense of being plunged into a completely convincing parallel world. Initially you see swirling geometric patterns, very regularly repeated, and then you have a sense of breaking through into an absolute other reality where you meet beings. Sometimes these beings look like fairies or elves or grays as we call them today. Very often they are part animal/part human in form.
>
> "For example, I saw a creature that had the head of a crocodile and the body of a human being. I saw a creature that was part jaguar and part human. Everybody in the world who drinks ayahuasca - and doesn't matter where they are - they can be in a western city or they can be in the heart of the Amazon, they are going to see serpents. And these serpents are not just like ordinary everyday serpents.
>
> "They are often gigantic, absolutely huge, and they communicate with you. I know how nuts this sounds, but I am simply reporting the experience: that there is a sense of communication, of dealing with an intelligent entity that

has something to teach you. Fortunately, a lot of good scientific work has been done on this.

> "Dr. Benny Shanon, who is the professor of psychiatry at the Hebrew University in Jerusalem, has personally drunk ayahuasca more than 300 times himself. I have only drunk it 18 times so far. He has compared the experiences of hundreds and hundreds of people from all over the world who have drunk ayahuasca. All of them meet these serpents, and, in fact, they meet a particular entity who takes the form of a serpent. She is thought of as the ayahuasca spirit. She projects deep concern with the state of the environment into the minds of those who drink ayahuasca, and a feeling of love and concern for humanity as a whole."

The point that we're trying to prove in quoting all this information about DMT and its effect is that when a person ingests DMT or they have it injected into their veins, as with the research conducted by Dr. Strassman, a person tends to somehow enter the spiritual realm. They see all kinds of creatures comparable to those seen during alien abduction. The central theme is that the people remain right where they are when they experience these visions or peeps into the spiritual world. This in itself could be proof that all alien abduction is strictly a spiritual event, but let's look further.

Yet another evidence that would work in favor of the notion that alien abduction is strictly spiritual is the fact that there are witnesses that can testify that the person who claims to have been taken away was really stationary the whole time and never left the premises. One such case was noted by Joe Jordan back in the 1990s.

According to Joe, he received a phone call from an acquaintance and during the course of the call the man suddenly told Joe that "they" (the aliens) were coming to abduct him at that moment. Joe told the man to hand the phone to the man's girlfriend and both of them kept tabs on the man, who by this time was lying on the floor with a rapid heartbeat and shallow respirations. His girlfriend also said that this man looked quite pale. During his "time away," Joe kept the girlfriend calm by assuring her that everything was going to be okay. Sometime later the man regained consciousness and got back on the phone. Joe asked the man how he felt and what had happened and the man replied, "They're mad at you!" Joe asked him why the aliens were angry with him and the man answered, "Because they know that you know what is going on." Maybe they were mad because by this action, they revealed that alien abduction isn't really a physical act, but a spiritual act? Who knows?

The argument has arisen in relation to physical evidence on the person or their property after an alien encounter. It is not uncommon for abductees to wake up with strange markings, cuts, bruises, bloody noses and other physical characteristics that would denote a physical act. Those things are also common in ghost haunting and poltergeist accounts too and in those reports the victim never leaves the home, so that sort of physical evidence is pretty well moot when it is being used to refute the "spiritual only" notion. As we've seen, there is pretty good evidence for the argument that alien abduction is a spiritual matter only. But we haven't seen all the evidence in our court and we must do so to be fair in our research.

Physical-Only Abduction:

The physical-only camp in the alien abduction research realm has some very good evidence to back up their claim. Their evidence comes also in the way of physical evidence and eyewitness accounts. Apart from physical evidence, eyewitness testimony is the most powerful testimony that there is, especially if there is more than one witness.

Take for instance the well-known Brooklyn Bridge Incident. At three o'clock one morning, two bodyguards were escorting a United Nations envoy across the bridge when all three looked up and saw a woman being levitated by strange-looking beings from her high-rise Manhattan apartment. The woman, Linda Cortile, has memories of the event and the bodyguards have given their testimony. It is obvious that this was a physical abduction; that cannot be argued.

Another case is that of Travis Walton. While returning home from a logging job out in the woods, Travis and his coworkers were confronted by a UFO. Travis got out of the truck and ran until he was under the UFO, which began to make noises and wobble. As Travis moved away from the object he was struck by some sort of beam and lay sprawled out on the ground. His coworkers thought him to be dead and fear caused them to drive away at high speed but they crashed down the road a bit. They turned around and went back to the site to look for Travis only to discover that he was missing. He remained missing for nearly a week and was found huddling in a gas station phone booth. The testimony of Travis' coworkers and Travis himself lend credence to a genuine alien abduction event; a very physical alien abduction event.

Other little tidbits of evidence lend credence to the notion that alien abduction is of a physical nature. Some people awaken with their clothes soiled or the bottom hem of their pajamas wet, or other indications that they had been outside sometime

during the night. The strange behavior of dogs just before, during, and after abduction events should be noted, as you will see in Bill's testimony later on, although this is not always the case. Waking up with undergarments on backward or having strange puncture marks on one's body is another indication of alien foul play.

Later in this book you will read about people who have experienced this phenomenon. In at least two of the cases that you will read there was a sensation of being dropped, or thrown back into the bed by the entities. Like our witness Catherine states, "If it isn't a physical event then how come they dropped me on my bed?"

Could Alien Abduction Be Both Physical and Spiritual?:

I've had occasion where people have asked me if alien abduction is spiritual or physical, and my answer to that question is "Yes." It is both; it has to be. Why couldn't it be both? I mean, just because an account is only physical and one is only spiritual doesn't mean that the same abductors don't have different agendas for the parties involved.

But what about the entities that conduct alien abduction? How do they appear to be in the spiritual and physical? Well, there have been many cases where the aliens just seem to appear in the room of their intended victim. They also are seen to pass through walls and closed windows. They also seem to be able to change the molecular makeup of their victims so that they can pass through solid objects. In the same witness testimony they have been seen to pass through solids but when they have contact with their intended victim they are able to pick up that person or hold them by the hand. During examinations of their victims the implements that are used cause real pain in the victims and in the next morning the victim wakes up with needle punctures, bleeding of the nose, bruising and tenderness of the genitalia and any number of other key indicators that something happened the night before, or in the case of "awake abductions," after they were returned to their cars, or boats, or whatever location they were at before the abduction. In rape cases where an entity is the rapist, the women feel the penetration and the sexual act occurring. And what about the pregnancies of some of the women who have been taken? Why is there every indication that a living child is inside the womb of the mother and after a few months the child isn't there anymore? We know that medical science calls this a "false pregnancy," but how can all the indications be there and yet the pregnancy be false?

Those questions and many others need to be answered and they are not

answered by the “spiritual-only” proposal of the alien abduction experience. The way that the alien abductors manifest seems to be of both realms, in that they are spiritual when they pass through solid objects but they become solid matter from some sort of manipulation that mankind is yet unaware of. But what does the Bible have to say about this? Has this ever occurred and if it has can it be found in its Holy pages? To be frank, the answer is yes it has, and we will now examine this for ourselves.

First off we should research angels to see what they are capable of. Remember, our contention is that the beings that are passing themselves off as extraterrestrials from other worlds are fallen angels. If our assertion is correct, then the extraterrestrials should have the same abilities as angels, albeit they might have lost some of their abilities as a result of their rebellion toward God Almighty.

Angels are interesting beings. They are spiritual in nature but they still seem to have physical bodies. These bodies are physical, but they are suited for living in another dimension although they can manifest in our realm. We know that when angels manifest in our sphere they are physical, as we can see in Jacob’s account when he wrestled with one of them:

> And Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day. And when he saw that he prevailed not against him, he touched the hollow of his thigh; and the hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him. And he said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me. And he said unto him, What is thy name? And he said, Jacob. And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed. And Jacob asked him, and said, Tell me, I pray thee, thy name. And he said, Wherefore is it that thou dost ask after my name? And he blessed him there. And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved. (Genesis 32:24–30)

There are many ideas as to who this angel was. A word study of the word “man” in the passage reveals that it is just that, a man, a human being. If you look at the passage again you will notice that the word “Man” is capitalized (upper case for the readers under forty) which denotes that this was a very special man. Many contend that this was an angel and this fact is backed up by Hosea the prophet, who says: “He took his brother by the heel in the womb, and by his strength he had power with God: Yea, he had power over the angel, and prevailed: he wept, and

made supplication unto him: he found him in Bethel, and there he spake with us" (Hosea 12:3–4).

There are those who think that this man was a theophany, a pre-incarnate appearance of Jesus Christ. Whoever this being was, we know two things; that he was more than a human being and he was from the spiritual realm. Whether he was an angel or a theophany of Jesus Christ, he was not of this world, and we know that he was sent from God Almighty because he blessed Jacob and gave him a new name, Israel. He was formed of solid matter yet he had the power to just touch Jacob's hip and dislocate it.

We know that angels can eat when they manifest in our physical realm:

> And the LORD appeared unto him in the plains of Mamre: and he sat in the tent door in the heat of the day; And he lift up his eyes and looked, and, lo, three men stood by him: and when he saw them, he ran to meet them from the tent door, and bowed himself toward the ground, And said, My LORD, if now I have found favour in thy sight, pass not away, I pray thee, from thy servant: Let a little water, I pray you, be fetched, and wash your feet, and rest yourselves under the tree: And I will fetch a morsel of bread, and comfort ye your hearts; after that ye shall pass on: for therefore are ye come to your servant. And they said, So do, as thou hast said. And Abraham hastened into the tent unto Sarah, and said, Make ready quickly three measures of fine meal, knead it, and make cakes upon the hearth. And Abraham ran unto the herd, and fetcht a calf tender and good, and gave it unto a young man; and he hasted to dress it. And he took butter, and milk, and the calf which he had dressed, and set it before them; and he stood by them under the tree, and they did eat. (Genesis 18:1–8)

Interestingly enough, a word study of the word "LORD" in the first sentence is YHVH, the same name that God told Moses that His Name would always be. This was a theophany of Jesus Christ who was with two of His angels. The fact that Abraham bowed down to worship Him gives another indication that this was not just an ordinary angel; He was the Son of God! They ate all that Abraham set in front of them, proving physicality again.

Angels can also appear out of thin air, or so it appears to be that way, as we see in the following accounts:

> And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men. (Luke 2:8–14)

I took the liberty of underlining two different places in the scripture above. We see that at the start, the shepherds were sitting around doing things that shepherds do. Then without notice an angel stood before them. It all happened so quickly that it scared the shepherds. These men weren't the weaklings that people often make shepherds out to be. These men had to fend off wild animals from their flocks and they were accustomed to being out in dark fields without the lights that we have at our disposal in modern times. These were tough guys, but they were afraid. Further down in the passage we see that all of a sudden there were many angels who just seemed to come from nowhere. One second these angels were not there and in the twinkling of an eye they were there. Notice also that the first angel appeared to have a glow about him; what we know as the *shekinah* glory of God.

What we have tried to do here is to prove that the spiritual can manifest into the physical and become physical. This is true not only with the Godly forces of the spiritual world, but also with the ungodly forces of the unseen world. There is one thing that seems to be on the mind of Christians who study the UFO phenomenon, especially alien abduction. How can it be that people are seen floating through walls and closed windows? How can matter behave in such a way? While we might never fully understand the process that takes place in these instances, we can see if it is recorded in the pages of the Bible.

> Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains: and the keepers before the door kept the prison. And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off

> from his hands. And the angel said unto him, Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals. And so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me. And he went out, and followed him; and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he saw a vision. When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city; which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street; and forthwith the angel departed from him. And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the LORD hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews. (Acts 12:5–11)

This is an amazing account because in many ways it parallels an alien abduction account. Please note with all certainty that I am not saying that Peter was abducted by aliens, but I am saying that perhaps the same mechanism that the angel used to free Peter from prison is used in a counterfeit manner by the alien abductors of many people in our current age. Just like in alien abduction, there is a bright light in the room and then a presence. Then the person falls into a dreamlike state (Peter thought he was having a vision) during which they are able to do things that in the physical realm are impossible.

We must observe that we are not told how they got out of the prison, but mention is made about when they were outside that a gate opened up by itself. It is interesting that no reference is made of prison doors opening or that passage was made through the prison to get to the outside. Could it be that they didn't leave the cell through conventional manners, but that maybe they passed through the wall and were immediately outside? If this was akin to the mechanism used by modern-day aliens to take their human victims, then it is entirely possible that Peter and the angel passed through solid matter to reach the outside. The passage doesn't say that that happened, but it doesn't disprove it either. There is one more thing that we must take note of because it will prove that Peter didn't leave the prison by natural devices. Further down in the chapter we find the following account:

"Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter. And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judaea to Caesarea, and there abode" (Acts 12:18–19).

Notice that there were "guards" (plural) guarding the cell door. It is highly doubtful that both guards fell asleep on duty, therefore we can rest assured that the angel didn't walk Peter through the cell door and down through the corridors, but most likely, through the walls.

There is another scripture that shows that the physical can be turned into the spiritual for the purposes of moving it from one place to another: “And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing. But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through he preached in all the cities, till he came to Caesarea” (Acts 8:39–40).

The word “caught” in this passage is the same word (harpazo) that is used in 1 Thessalonians chapter four where Paul is talking about what Christians call the Rapture, when all believers dead and alive will be resurrected, be given our glorified bodies, and go to be with Jesus in Heaven. It means to be snatched away suddenly, like in the blinking of an eye. The preceding scriptures to the one above explain that Philip was told by an angel to take the road that goes from Jerusalem to Gaza. Azotus was a town located just about parallel in latitude to Jerusalem, about forty miles due west. There are creeks and tributaries all along this route so the exact location of this encounter will probably never be known; but that Philip was taken at the twinkling of an eye from one location to another proves that it was a trip in the Spirit, not in the physical realm regardless if it was one mile or the whole forty.

One of the amazing accounts that we read about in scripture is how Jesus Christ was able to just appear to people out of nowhere. One minute his followers would be gathered around each other and the next minute Jesus would be in the center of their entire company, as we now see:

> And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat? And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. And he took it, and did eat before them. (Luke 24:36–43)

We really can’t even speculate where Jesus was before He appeared to his followers. Perhaps He was talking to other followers or perchance He had already been in that room, but not in a physical way, but in the Spirit. The thing is, that one minute, He wasn’t there and the next minute He was there. The accounts of angel

visitation in the Old Covenant were the same way, as we illustrated earlier in this chapter with one of Abraham's angelic visitations.

We know from scripture that there will come a time when those who believe Jesus Christ will be changed. It is quite clear that this is a change of the physical body.

"Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed" (1 Corinthians 15:50–52).

We really have no hard data about what is involved in this change of body, but we see that the body will be incorruptible, which means that the curse will be removed and our bodies will be able to operate differently than they do now. I think that the accounts of Jesus' appearing suddenly to his followers are a hint of what we will be like.

But what does this mean where alien abduction is concerned? How does this fit into our course of study? We've pretty well determined that the entities that are abducting humans aren't from the deepest reaches of space, but are bound to Earth because of their rebellion toward God Almighty. Since we don't see angels in our day to day walk through life we have to surmise that they live in another reality that is connected to our own, but unseen to those who live in this physical world. We know that they become physical when they manifest in our reality and they are in all probability physical in their own reality. The angels that appeared to the patriarchs always presented themselves in human form, except for the cherubim in the Ezekiel account and in the visions given to various prophets in holy script. There are many similarities between the way that the Holy angels manifest and the alien abductors manifest, proving without much contest that they come from the same realm; that being the spiritual realm.

Having proved that Holy angels and the alien abductors (fallen angels) operate in the same way proves that the fallen angels still have some of the capabilities that they once had before they fell from God's Holy Will. Having seen Peter's rescue being much the same as an alien abduction account we can assume that the act of changing a physical person in some sort of molecular way is quite possible for the fallen angels. We know from scripture that someday our bodies will be changed and that we will be like Jesus, able to appear into the physical realm from the spiritual realm, and that we will have bodies just like the angels have.

"For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in

marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven" (Mark 12:25 KJV).

The scripture above was told by Jesus Christ because someone had asked him a question about a woman who had been married and widowed numerous times and the people wanted to know who would be the husband of this woman when everyone got to heaven. Jesus wanted to show that there would be no marriage in Heaven. The purpose of marriage on Earth is so that two people can become one for the purpose of procreation. In Heaven there will be no need for procreation. But we have to read more into what Jesus said because there is more. We will have glorified bodies, which will be able to exist in both the spiritual and physical realm. There will also be other responsibilities that we will have, but delving into that could take a whole book, so we will not go further.

Finally, Paul talks about one, maybe two men who he knew that had been taken to Heaven; meaning God's abode, as we see in the following passage: "**2**I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven. And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter" (2 Corinthians 12:2–4).

If we glean nothing else from this chapter we should come to one important conclusion. Just like Paul says in the passage, he didn't know if the man (men) were in the body or in the spirit when they were taken into Heaven and/or Paradise, the thing is that they went there and they saw and heard things that were incredibly wonderful. Paul recognized that both things were possible and that either account could have happened either way.

What we need to focus on, in our research into whether the alien abduction accounts happen in the physical realm or in the spiritual realm, is that they do happen. We have to acknowledge that people are taken against their will by fallen angels and they are being experimented on, raped, impregnated, harassed, threatened and yes, sometimes they are murdered. They are being indoctrinated with New Age dogma and they are being prepared for the kingdom that Satan will someday soon bring upon the Earth.

Each and every one of them must be warned that what they perceive as friendly aliens are evil and malevolent beings that are bent on their destruction and the destruction of mankind. Each and every one of them must be presented the Gospel of Jesus Christ so that they can have a choice of which master they want to serve. It is the job of every Christian to be prepared to encounter someone who claims to be an abductee or a contactee of the supposed aliens, and it is the job of every Christian to tell these people that they can find freedom from what they perceive to be a

lifestyle that is hopelessly lost in the grips of these beings. A little later in this book you will read about people who have heard the truth and who have found the freedom that only Jesus Christ can give.

CHAPTER TEN: Doors

Pathways and Consequences

One of the most fascinating areas of study in the Christian research of UFOs and alien abduction is to see how people come to be harassed and taken against their will. There has to be one or more key indicators as to why the fallen angels single out individuals or families. If one bears in mind that one name for Satan is "Beelzebub," and that this name translates into English as, "lord of the flies," we can have a better understanding of why people are visited by alien intruders. Flies are attracted to death and decay and in these things flies lay their eggs to create the next generation of fly. In the same way, decadence in a person's life, as in regard to living in opposition to God and His commands and precepts leads to death and decay, and in many cases, the passing down of spiritual and physical conditions in a generational manner.

In our line of counseling we look for these things in the lives of people who are seeking to be free from alien abduction and demonic oppression and even demonic possession. The abduction experience is a form of oppression by demons and fallen angels and if allowed to continue, or if it is welcomed into a person's life whether willfully or through surrender after a time of resistance it could lead to possession. Alien abduction or demonic oppression can enter into a person's life through willful disobedience to God's will or it can enter through subtle avenues that the victim never thought to be harmful. Many social norms, if taken to excess can be taken by fallen angels and demons to be invitations into a person's life, and this becomes more the case as society rejects what has traditionally been wholesome and good and puts those labels on things that seem mild to the contemporary mind, but would have made our forefathers blush or strongly condemn.

In our conversations with people we often hear them say that they are good people and they do not understand why they have been singled out for the attention of these beings. We have come to realize that people open doors for the entities to enter. Doors can be opened by the person being oppressed, or they can be opened by family members in a current generation or in prior generations. We will now proceed to explain what we mean by doors, how they are opened and how they can be shut. Later in this book you will read the accounts of real people who have found their open doors and through prayer and repentance have not only closed those doors, but have locked them tight and have sealed them.

What Are Doors Anyway?:

The door is something that everyone is familiar with. It is a conveyance in every dwelling, from the lowliest hut to the grandest palace. They come in all shapes and sizes; from simply built wood structures to armor-plated vault doors. Doors have been around since mankind started building structures. Because of the violent nature of our species, doors have been a necessity and have been installed on every building. Because doors are so important to our lives, and the security thereof, they require constant maintenance and monitoring.

It is important to understand that doors aren't only physical, but they can be psychological and they can be spiritual. Psychologists and psychiatrists, in their attempt to help their patients, will try to open up the door to their minds in order to find the trigger points for certain behavior. This is mainly because human beings tend to close doors in their lives in order to put away events that they have found hurtful. Of course, this action doesn't fix the problem; instead it just closes up the problem in a room of the mind where it will someday have to be encountered again when the door to that room is opened up for whatever reason.

Spiritual doors also exist and they can be opened up to allow entry to malevolent forces or they can be opened to God Almighty, who poses to us the following: "Behold, I **stand at** the **door**, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the **door**, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me" (Revelation 3:20 KJV).

Knowing that this book is dedicated to showing people the "spiritual" nature of alien abduction, and especially the "spiritual" nature of the entities that masquerade as corporeal entities from other worlds, it is important that we approach the study of doors, as they relate to this phenomenon, from a book that has its origins from the spiritual realm, and the creator of that realm, because He is the best authority of every subject, including this one. The book that we quote from and use for our studies is the Bible; complete with Old Covenant and New Covenant, because we not only believe, and we know to be true, borne out in the testimonies of so many witnesses, that it is the ultimate authority in every possible situational event known to men.

Just a cursory study of biblical script shows that the Bible is an authority on doors; the use thereof and the blessings of their proper use, and the malevolence that can result from their improper use. So let's look and see what God has to say about doors.

Doors are used for privacy. They are put at each bedroom and bathroom entrance as to allow people to bathe, change garments, or to be intimate without the prying eyes of others: “But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly” (Matthew 6:6).

Doors are used as demarcation points. When a stranger knocks on the door we examine who the visitor is, and if we don’t want to allow access to them, we still want to have them state their business then we stand in the doorway and talk: “And they came near to the steward of Joseph's house, and they communed with him at the door of the house” (Genesis 43:19).

Doors are used as protection from the elements. They keep the wind and rain out as well as keep dirt and other contaminants from entering our abode; while at the same time allowing us to enter and exit from those elements.

“You shall make a window for the ark, and you shall finish it to a cubit from above; and set the door of the ark in its side. You shall make it with lower, second, and third decks” (Genesis 6:16).

“So those that entered, male and female of all flesh, went in as God had commanded him; and the LORD shut him in” (Genesis 7:16).

Doors are used to keep an enemy outside, protecting us from harm:

“And they said, Stand back. And they said again, This one fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them. And they pressed sore upon the man, even Lot, and came near to break the door. But the men put forth their hand, and pulled Lot into the house to them, and shut to the door” (Genesis 19:9–10).

The History of Doors:

The Bible is also a good chronicle of the history of doors. In its pages, doors are mentioned as early as Genesis chapter 4 and the last mention is Revelation, chapter 4.

“If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him” (Genesis 4:7).

“Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me” (Revelation 3:20).

It is interesting that both scriptures above are used when referring to those who are in rebellion toward God. Cain's in that he was pouting that God had not accepted his sacrifice, with God trying to provide an answer; and the Church of Laodicea where God is telling a rebellious church that he wanted to commune with them if only they'd repent and obey.

Doors are mentioned in Job, the oldest book of the Bible.

"Did I fear a great multitude, or did the contempt of families terrify me, that I kept silence, and went not out of the door?" (Job 31:34).

They had them in Egypt, as evidenced by the command by God for believers to put blood on the doorjamb so that the angel of death could not enter the door.

"And ye shall take a bunch of hyssop, and dip it in the blood that is in the bason, and strike the lintel and the two side posts with the blood that is in the bason; and none of you shall go out at the door of his house until the morning" (Exodus 12:22).

The only place where doors are not mentioned is before the fall of Adam and Eve. There would have been no need for doors before that time as there was no sin; thus no need for protection from harm. Not only that, but the condition before the fall was such that protection from the elements was not necessary. However, take into account that perhaps before the fall of our two progenitors, there probably wasn't even a need for housing.

So we can see that doors have been with us all throughout history and that they have been a necessity in every sense of the word. They protect us from the harm of others; from harm of the elements. They protect our belongings in our homes, offices and even our motor vehicles. In the form of gates they protect our cities and our properties. And, in our banks and other institutions, they protect our financial resources.

Unlocked Doors and Security Issues:

Some of us are security conscious and we take great pains to see that we are protected. We lock our doors and perhaps even install a security system, but we sometimes let what should seem obvious slip past our attention. For some, it might be a window that was overlooked and not locked and for some the garage door might be left open; but now I'd like to relate to you an event that took someone by surprise and had both expense and health implications.

Here in California I worked with a friend whose name will remain anonymous, just in case his relatives read this book. He had in-laws who lived alongside the Russian River in California. He always referred to them as being sort of peculiar but he loved them anyway. He related to me the following story.

His in-laws had a small pet, a dog or a cat, and they installed a pet door in the kitchen door. This is a small door with hinges at the top that swings freely in each direction, allowing the pet to enter and exit. It's more of a convenience device for the pet owner so that they don't have to keep opening and closing the door to allow the pet access to the house.

One night his father in-law woke up and decided to get something to eat or drink from the kitchen. As he approached the kitchen door he noticed that the kitchen light was off but there was clamor coming from the kitchen. Thinking that his wife might be in there, he nonchalantly opened the door and turned on the light. Suddenly something small darted at him and bit him and then retreated to a far corner. He noticed two sets of eyes staring at him and realized that two raccoons had entered the house via the pet door, which had not been secured for the night.

Well, with the knowledge that raccoons many times carry rabies he decided that the two bandits could not be allowed to get away. Not thinking clearly (as my friend said was always customary with this family) the man went to his closet and got his twelve-gauge shotgun and went into the kitchen where he quickly dispatched the animals to raccoon heaven, or wherever animals go when they die, if they go anywhere. The weapon made a mess of the kitchen, not only with the animals remains being blown all over the room, but also the blasts had decimated the kitchen walls and cabinets from the concussion and the projectiles that emitted from the barrel.

Had the door been secured, none of these events above would have happened. Carelessness on the part of the homeowners led to disaster, and if the animals would have had rabies (which they thankfully did not) it could have cost the man his life. This should be a great object lesson about keeping our homes secure, and security comes from making sure that all doors are closed and locked tightly, even doors that we take for granted. This is so true in our spiritual lives. One little door left open or one little window left ajar could be a pathway that an enemy can use to gain entrance.

Our Unseen Doors:

You might be wondering what we mean when we use the term "unseen doors."

You might be thinking to yourself that you've never seen an unseen door in your life! But let's look at some things that can help you to see what I mean.

There are four categories that we can ascribe to the things in this life. Those things are electronic, mechanical, natural, and spiritual; but not in that order of course. We just listed them that way because that is the way that we will approach the subjects. These are the four doors that we will look at.

Electronic Hidden Doors:

We're all abuzz these days with electronics and computers. We've become so enchanted by these mediums that when the electricity goes out we fumble around like lost little sheep, wondering if we can cope without our television, our lights or internet access. Actually, we're technologically smart but common sense stupid.

In the computer realm there are people who are called system engineers and also those who are called programmers. These people design computer systems and write the software that makes our lives oh so comfortable and easy [sic]. These people know that sometimes their creations will malfunction, either through a fault in their systems or software, or through operator error. For this reason, they create what they call "back doors." These back doors are secret passwords or other means that allow them to enter a program or system at any time without hindrance. These avenues are supposed to be for beneficial uses, but some individuals, called hackers, find these back doors and use them for maliciousness. So, keep this in mind as we move on.

Mechanical Hidden Doors:

There have been many mechanical hidden doors throughout the ages that we will only focus on one type. I think that most of us are familiar with the secret passages in old houses, castles and palaces. We've seen them in the movies, mostly in horror flicks or stories about medieval intrigue. These passages, which are only known of by the owners of the buildings, are used to navigate in secret either between rooms or as escape routes. Any way you look at them, they are hidden doors.

Natural Hidden Doors:

When I talk about natural hidden doors, I refer to things in the natural world that aren't built by human hands. God, in all His wisdom has created some very

interesting and wonderful things. Some hidden doors that I can immediately think of are cave entrances. Some caves are underwater and are only accessible by diving, or perhaps when the tide goes out far enough to expose them. Other caves are hidden by waterfalls, and still others are hidden by something as simple as brush or trees growing in front of them.

But the one hidden door that I would like to look at in nature is the one that is manufactured by the trap door spider. This ingenious little creature digs a burrow for itself and then manufactures a door that it makes out of items that are indigenous to its area. The door even has a hinge that the spider fashions to close behind it. Its disguise is very convincing, so much so that it thrives on its unsuspecting victims. When a small insect gets close to the trap door, the spider springs out of the door, grabs the victim and bring it into his lair; the door snapping closed behind it.

Spiritual Hidden Doors:

Our lives are like houses. We open them to things that are pleasant and sometimes we unwittingly open them up to unpleasant things. When a person is not born again in the Holy Spirit, they let all sorts of things into their houses. They let in things like lust, greed, lying, coveting, and all sorts of other things. Believers in Jesus sometimes do this out of ignorance or disregard to what the Holy Spirit is speaking to them. Those things set up shop in our lives (our houses) and we live with them and to some degree, if we are undiscerning, we became fond roommates with them.

But for those of us who are born again, there came a time when we asked the King of All Righteousness to come and abide in our hearts. When Jesus entered our lives and hearts he evicted those residents and then he swept, dusted, mopped, and scrubbed our lives. Our houses, which once were grimy, stained and tainted with all kinds of dirt, by His cleansing, became as white as snow; clean and without spot.

"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new" (2 Corinthians 5:17).

When we were all clean He then closed the doors that allowed the vile things to enter and gave us the keys to the locks on the doors. So why did He give us the keys? It's pretty simple when you think of it. If He would have cleaned everything up and then locked the doors and kept the keys then we would be prisoners. In most cases, people who are forced into subjection never love their captors but resent them and hate them. Giving us the keys puts us in a position of trust, which is something that a friend will do. Jesus calls His followers friends:

"You are My friends if you do whatever I command you. No longer do I call you servants, for a servant does not know what his master is doing; but I have called you friends, for all things that I heard from My Father I have made known to you. You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you that you should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should remain, that whatever you ask the Father in My name He may give you. These things I command you, that you love one another" (John 15:14–17).

But we have to admit that having those keys, even thought it proves His trust for us; will sometimes lead us to stumble. A comparison can be made to what many of us did when we were young and careless. Our parents would leave for a night out and they would entrust us with the house or apartment where we lived. Friends would hear that we would have the house to ourselves and they would entice us into having them over for a party. We thought about the consequences for a brief time but the idea of a fun time with our friends overrode any caution that we entertained. The party occurred and if we were clever enough, we erased all evidence that the party ever happened, but most of the time we left telltale bits and pieces of evidence and we were found out by our parents, and then the heartache began. We were entrusted with the keys, but we faltered and allowed defiance to arise.

For the person who doesn't recognize the power and authority of Jesus Christ, nor do they have a personal relationship with the Father through the Son…well, their doors are on rusted and decaying hinges and there are many who have master keys to enter their homes. Individuals without the protection of God Almighty have to constantly prop themselves up against the door to keep unwanted entities from entering in. They haven't received the security handbook (so to speak) and there are many times that they open their doors unwittingly to strangers who come with a good sounding message, but their message is presented with fine print on their contracts that is impossible for the homeowner to read. All seems to go well until the holder of the contract calls in his marker and then the homeowner realizes that they have been duped. It is a blessing that Jesus Christ is an expert in contract law, and should a person decide that they want out of this contract, and trust in Jesus Christ, then He stamps the contract "paid in full," and He writes His own covenant with the newly freed person.

Gaps in the Doorjamb:

As a child I lived in New Jersey where temperatures drop below freezing many times in the winter; later in life I lived part of a year in North Carolina. Those of us

who have ever lived in the cooler climates know that in the winter we're quick to find out that there is no such thing as a completely sealed door, or a completely sealed house for that matter. Sure, the door might be locked, but there is always some part of the seal that allows a chill to come through and into the house. If there is not some source of heat in the house, the cold would eventually conquer the house. So, although the cold tries to invade, heating stems that tide.

I equate the above to the way that our enemies try to take advantage of some of our doors not being fully sealed. We've all done things, or gotten ourselves involved in not so good practices in the past and sometimes they try to invade our lives by way of loose seals. Picture your front door, locked to the hilt, but also envision a couple of fingers or perhaps a hand trying to reach through the gaps, trying to gain entry. It will never be able to gain entry, especially if the door remains locked, but it still tries.

Now why do I write about such things? Well, I do believe that we've allowed things into our lives both before we were Christians and even after, which we've repented of, and they still try to attach a hold to us. We fight an enemy who knows our weaknesses and will always try to appeal to them, either through fear or temptation.

But What Does This Have to Do with Alien Abduction?:

We live in a society where people strongly resist the notion that there is a price that has to be paid for everything that we think or do. Some things are spoken of as being free, but if enough thought is put into the item, and how it was acquired, some sort of price can be seen as having been paid. Even if a monetary price cannot be seen in the acquisition of the item, things like self respect and possibly even a degree of your personal freedom may have been compromised, and as the old adage says, "If you want to hear the song, you have to pay the piper."

Having interviewed quite a few people about their alien abduction experiences and their lives before their experiences, the authors of this book have found that everyone who has had an alien abduction experience has had at least one of the following events in their lives:

1: An avid interest in science fiction – especially where suggestion of life on other planets is concerned, but it is not limited to that by any means

2: An interest in knowledge of the UFO/alien abduction phenomenon

3: Interest or involvement in the occult and/or New Age

4: Involvement in secret societies – like the Masonic Lodge, Illuminati, Shriners…etc.

5: Illicit drug use – recreational or addictive

6: Generational ties with people involved in the above activities

As you read the testimonies from abduction experiencers, which are provided in this book, you will see that each one of them had involvement in (or their direct ancestors had involvement in) one of these areas, and with many of them, two or more avenues were traveled.

Before we get into the specific areas, we have to look at the generational aspect to the criteria for becoming a candidate for alien abduction.

Most of us have had some exposure to the terminology that psychologists use to describe the behavior of individuals in our society. We've either heard them say or have read their papers in which they talk about people who they feel are prone to violence, abuse or addictive tendencies. The term that they use is "intergenerational cycles of abuse." In layman's terms, this is saying that if your parents abused substances, or people or anything else, then your chance of being an abuser is greater than if they were not abusers. Of course, not all those in the psychological practice believe this to be true, and it is true that if you have three psychologists in a room you will have five opinions; but the majority of them think that this is true and can be borne out through the many case studies that have been conducted.

There are some in our society that say that the Bible is an antiquated book and that it doesn't apply to modern society, but we strongly disagree. The Bible is quite up to date where intergenerational cycles of abuse are concerned; albeit, the terminology might be a bit different, but the substance of the thought is the same. Let's take a look at scripture, shall we?

"I am the LORD your God who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. You shall have no other gods before Me. You shall not make for yourself a carved image—any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the Earth beneath, or that is in the water under the Earth; you shall not bow down to them nor serve them. For I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generations of

those who hate Me, but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments" (Deuteronomy 5:6–10).

The Hebrew word for "iniquity," is *avon* (pronounced a-vone) and aside from meaning iniquity, it can mean fault, and depending on the connotation in which it is being used it can mean that the parents' iniquity (depravity or sin) nature can be passed onto the children, or it can mean that the penalty of the iniquity can be passed onto the children. So science and the Bible agree that bad behavior can be passed onto successive generations. Science can't really describe the mechanism by which this happens, but the Word of God says that it happens to those who hate Him, and it happens as a penalty for that hatred. Science says that the cycle could possibly be broken, yet their jury is still out on that one; but God promises that it can be broken by turning to Him and loving Him. We will discuss how to do that later in this book.

The Doors That Lead To Alien Abduction:

The first doors that we must look at are the obvious spiritual doors that so many people open, whether on purpose, or by way of ignorance. Since the entities that are behind alien abduction are spiritual, fallen angels and demons, it makes sense to see what doors are literal open doors; that is, they are the ones that God Almighty warns us about in a stern manner. He knows these doors to be so bad, so malignant, that He declared a death penalty for those who practiced such things in His nation Israel:

> When you come into the land which the LORD your God is giving you, you shall not learn to follow the abominations of those nations. There shall not be found among you anyone who makes his son or his daughter pass through the fire, or one who practices witchcraft, or a soothsayer, or one who interprets omens, or a sorcerer, or one who conjures spells, or a medium, or a spiritist, or one who calls up the dead. For all who do these things are an abomination to the LORD, and because of these abominations the LORD your God drives them out from before you. You shall be blameless before the LORD your God. For these nations which you will dispossess listened to soothsayers and diviners; but as for you, the LORD your God has not appointed such for you." (Deuteronomy 18:9–14)

We feel that this subject is so important that we need to clarify in modern day

vernacular what these words mean. Here is a list that will bring clarity:

1: Making one's child pass through the fire – child sacrifice

2: Witchcraft – a witch or Wiccan (black or white or any color); one who worships nature and the forces over nature and tries to manipulate these forces; one who affirms the existence of supernatural power (as magic) and of both male and female deities who inhere in nature and that emphasizes ritual observance of seasonal and life cycles

3: Soothsayer – one who predicts the future by magical, intuitive, or more rational means

4: One who interprets omens – one who sees an event or phenomenon and tries to predict a future event from what he/she sees

5: Sorcerer – one who uses an art or practice that seeks to foresee or foretell future events, or discover hidden knowledge usually by the interpretation of omens or by the aid of supernatural powers

6: Conjure Spells – to cast a spell (good or bad) on a person, place, or thing

7: Medium - one held to be a channel of communication between the earthly world and a world of spirit

8: Spiritist – one who believes that the spirits of the dead are trying to communicate with the living

9: One who calls up the dead – a necromancer or the conjuration of the spirits of the dead for purposes of magically revealing the future or influencing the course of events

10: Diviner – a false prophet

A whole book could be written about the things mentioned above and the myriad of other doors that are associated with each one of the major doors mention in our list. Usually when a person is involved in one or more items in the list they are quite cognizant of what they are doing and what they are getting themselves into. This is especially true if the person is an older adult. Sometimes teenagers and young adults explore these doors out of curiosity and gross ignorance. However, no matter what age a person is, dabbling with any of these is opening their door wide and advertising that the door is open. People who delve into these practices in most

cases have spiritual vacuums in their lives, and as every grade school child has learned, vacuums like to be occupied. If God Almighty isn't invited into the vacuum, rest assured that there are others who want to fill the void.

It must also be stressed that although the person who willingly seeks occult powers will most assuredly invite alien abduction or other demonic harassment into their lives; it is most probable that a person who consults one of these people, or those who innocently (they think) dabble in things like séances, Ouija Boards, tarot cards, magic 8 balls and other things akin to this, will someday down the road have an alien abduction encounter. Even if they never have an encounter, they, by dabbling in such things, pass this tendency or the penalty thereof, down to their succeeding generations.

Illicit Drug Abuse:

My work is in the pharmaceutical business. I am the first to admit that drugs are a necessary part of life. If used correctly, and as intended by your physician, then there are no problems with medications.

A lot of drugs are mind-altering. These are the drugs that relieve pain, or the ones that raise or lower moods or reactions. These are drugs that are the most abused. Every person in our society can attest that they were at one time tempted to abuse drugs, or that they outright abused drugs. Drug abuse is a societal norm all throughout the world and each year it increases in scope.

Simply, any time a person takes a mind-altering drug without cause to do so, they open themselves to problems. If you don't have control of your mind, and you willfully give up control, then something or someone is going to step in and take control.

There have been some interesting studies within the scientific community where mind-altering drugs such as LSD and other hallucinogens do to the perceptions of those who ingest them both in short and long term time spans. This is an interesting course of study so we will spend a little bit of effort to understand illicit drugs, specifically hallucinogens, to see how they act upon those who ingest them, and how it leads to spiritual experiences. First, we have to understand this type of drug. A little research yielded the following result in an article titled, "What Are Hallucinogenic Plants?"

In his search for food, early man tried all kinds of plants. Some nourished

him, some, he found, cured his ills, and some killed him. A few, to his surprise, had strange effects on his mind and body, seeming to carry him into other worlds. We call these plants hallucinogens, because they distort the senses and usually produce hallucinations—experiences that depart from reality. Although most hallucinations are visual, they may also involve the senses of hearing, touch, smell, or taste—and occasionally several senses simultaneously are involved.

The actual causes of such hallucinations are chemical substances in the plants. These substances are true narcotics. Contrary to popular opinion, not all narcotics are dangerous and addictive. Strictly and etymologicolly speaking, a narcotic is any substance that has a depressive effect, whether slight or great, on the central nervous system.

Narcotics that induce hallucinations are variously called hallucinogens (hallucination generators), psychotomimetics (psychosis mimickers), psychotaraxics (mind disturbers), and psychedelics (mind manifesters). No one term fully satisfies scientists, but hallucinogens comes closest. Psychedelic is most widely used in the United States, but it combines two Greek roots incorrectly, is biologically unsound, and has acquired popular meanings beyond the drugs or their effects.

In the history of mankind, hallucinogens have probably been the most important of all the narcotics. Their fantastic effects made them sacred to primitive man and may even have been responsible for suggesting to him the idea of deity.

Hallucinogens in Primitive Societies:

Makuna Indian medicine man under influence of caapi (ayahuasca or yaje) prepared from bark of Banisteriopis caapi.

Hallucinogens permeate nearly every aspect of life in primitive societies. They play roles in health and sickness, peace and war, home life and travel, hunting and agriculture; they affect relations among individuals, villages, and tribes. They are believed to influence life before birth and after death.

MEDICAL AND RELIGIOUS USES of hallucinogenic plants are particularly important in primitive societies. Aboriginal people attribute sickness and health to the working of spirit forces. Consequently any “medicine” that can transport man to the spirit world is considered by many aborigines to be better than one with purely physical effects.

Psychic powers have also been attributed to hallucinogens and have become an integral part of primitive religions. All over the world hallucinogenic plants are used as mediators between man and his gods. The prophecies of the oracle of Delphi, for example, are thought to have been induced through hallucinogens.

OTHER ABORIGINAL USES of hallucinogens vary from one primitive culture to another. Many hallucinogenic plants are basic to the initiation rituals of adolescents. The Algonquin Indians gave an intoxicating medicine, wysoccan, to their young men, who then became violently deranged for 20 days. During this period, they lost all memory, starting manhood by forgetting they had been boys. The iboga root in Gabon and caapi in the Amazon are also used in such rituals.

In South America, many tribes take ayahuasca to foresee the future, settle disputes, decipher enemy plans, cast or remove spells, or insure the fidelity of their women. Sensations of death and separation of body and soul are sometimes experienced during a dreamlike trance.

The hallucinogenic properties of Datura have been thoroughly exploited, particularly in the New World. In Mexico and in the Southwest, Datura is used in divination, prophecy, and ritualistic curing.

Modern Mexican Indians value certain mushrooms as sacraments and use morning glories and the peyote cactus to predict the future, diagnose and cure disease, and placate good and evil spirits.

The Mixtecs of Mexico eat puffballs to hear voices from heaven that answer their questions. The Waikás of Brazil and Venezuela snuff the powdered resin of a jungle tree to ritualize death, induce a trance for diagnosing disease, and thank the spirits for victory in war. The Witotos of Colombia eat the same powerful resin to "talk with the little people." Peruvian medicine men drink cimora to make themselves owners of another's identity. Indians of eastern Brazil drink jurema to have glorious visions of the spirit world before going into battle with their enemies.

(Source: http://www.zauberpilz.com/golden/g01-10.htm)

So now we see quite clear that a drug class that our society has touted as being "recently" discovered has in fact been used for millennia by primitive tribes so that they could invoke demonic entities or local gods. Do we see any parallel today when

so-called “sophisticated” people ingest hallucinogenic compounds? The answer is a definite yes!

As we mentioned back in our chapter that talked about if alien abduction is spiritual or physical, there is documentation that talks about creatures seen during times when a particular compound called DMT is ingested. We do not desire that there is any redundancy in this book, but these quotes must be read again to enforce our point about drug abuse being an open door for demonic forces to enter into one’s life. Dr. Strassman, who conducted studies with DMT in volunteers in Albuquerque back in the 1990s concludes:

“The resemblance of Mack’s [Dr. John Mack] account of the alien abductions of ‘experiencers’ to the contacts described by our own volunteers is undeniable. How can anyone doubt, after reading our accounts in these last two chapters, that DMT elicits ‘typical’ alien encounters. If presented with a record of several of our research subjects’ accounts, with all references to DMT removed, could anyone distinguish our reports from those of a group of abductees?” (*DMT – The Spirit Molecule*; 2001, Park Street Press; pg. 219 [brackets mine]).

Such things are also found in articles written in magazines such as UFO Magazine as we see below:

> “There is a sense of being plunged into a completely convincing parallel world. Initially you see swirling geometric patterns, very regularly repeated, and then you have a sense of breaking through into an absolute other reality where you meet beings. Sometimes these beings look like fairies or elves or grays as we call them today. Very often they are part animal/part human in form.
>
> “For example, I saw a creature that had the head of a crocodile and the body of a human being. I saw a creature that was part jaguar and part human. Everybody in the world who drinks ayahuasca—and doesn’t matter where they are—they can be in a western city or they can be in the heart of the Amazon, they are going to see serpents. And these serpents are not just like ordinary everyday serpents.
>
> “They are often gigantic, absolutely huge, and they communicate with you. I know how nuts this sounds, but I am simply reporting the experience: that there is a sense of communication, of dealing with an intelligent entity that has something to teach you. Fortunately, a lot of good scientific work has been done on this.

> "Dr. Benny Shanon, who is the professor of psychiatry at the Hebrew University in Jerusalem, has personally drunk ayahuasca more than 300 times himself. I have only drunk it 18 times so far. He has compared the experiences of hundreds and hundreds of people from all over the world who have drunk ayahuasca. All of them meet these serpents, and, in fact, they meet a particular entity who takes the form of a serpent. She is thought of as the ayahuasca spirit. She projects deep concern with the state of the environment into the minds of those who drink ayahuasca, and a feeling of love and concern for humanity as a whole." (Article titled, "There's a Door in Your Head, Part II: Meetings with Ancient Teachers of Mankind." Authors; Dr. Bob and Zohara Hieronimus, in excerpts from book titled, *Supernatural Meetings with Ancient Teachers of Mankind*, authored by Graham Hancock; The Disinformation Company, 2006)

I find it interesting that the entity they call the "ayahuasca spirit" expresses concern about the environment, one of the main topics abductees are lectured about by the "aliens." We have to acknowledge that taking hallucinogenic drugs, by any avenue or administration, is a definite doorway to the demonic world.

There will be those who read this book who will say that perhaps the hallucinogenic drugs are open doors to demonic oppression, but the other drugs are harmless. This is a very wrong assumption. Any drug that alters the mind, if taken for reasons other than medical condition, offers the same doorway to the demonic world. Many people use opiates illicitly as do many use drugs that elevate the central nervous system. In both cases the drug abuser is relinquishing their facilities to the drug. This surrender of sovereignty is seen by nefarious forces as an invitation to come in and set up shop. Any time any person surrenders himself to anyone or anything other than God Almighty there is increased chance that bad things can happen.

Sexual Deviancy:

Originally we had titled this section "pornography," but we were soon led to title it "sexual deviancy," simply because there are many ways in this category that people invite in demonic oppression. This is mainly because the human sexual drive is one of the strongest forces that comes against individuals and societies. This has always been a problem with mankind; from the Garden of Eden up to this present day, and it will continue until Messiah Jesus comes back to rule the Earth.

What the creator of all things meant for procreation and enjoyment between a man and a woman has been corrupted into many different things. God knew this and He painstakingly laid out guidelines for proper sexual conduct. Sexual misconduct was one of the major contributing factors for God's decision to destroy the world with a worldwide flood that wiped out everything but an ark full of animals and eight human beings. It is why He felt that He had to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah and the other Cities of The Plain. We could go into quite a thesis about this subject but it can all be summed up with one sentence. God meant for a sexual union to be between one man and one woman and anything other than that is an open door for demonic oppression.

Because God had made his rules on this so obvious, mankind began to look for loopholes in God's regulations. Enter pornography into the scene. While this deviance of sexual practice is quite old, it has blossomed in the last two hundred years into a business that nets billions of dollars to its purveyors. God knew that the loophole would become a problem so Jesus clarified God's intent about pornography, thus making it a sin and a doorway for demonic oppression:

"You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not commit adultery.' But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart" (Matthew 5:27–28).

No matter what way you look at it, if a person is involved in sexual deviancy in any way, they are defying God. If they are defying God then they are defying His authority. If they are defying His authority then they are placing themselves outside of God's will and offering themselves to the enemy.

Striving For Money and Power:

Before we begin this section we have to differentiate between two things. There is a natural human desire to live comfortably. This means that we would like a dry roof over our heads, food in our bellies and maybe some things that bring us joy and happiness. There is nothing wrong with these things and in many cases God Almighty blesses people with these things. On the flip side of the coin there are people who, once they have these things, want more and more and their appetite is never satisfied with what they have been blessed with. These are the people who strive for money and power and this is a sin very much akin to gluttony.

You've probably heard the phrase that a person has become "consumed" with a certain activity. That is a very good description for this practice because when a person becomes consumed with something then they are fully ablaze in a raging fire

for what they are pursuing. They begin to serve their desired goal and give themselves over to it. In essence, they surrender their self control to it, the whole time thinking that they have their sovereignty but in effect selling that sovereignty to forces of darkness that gladly take it. Jesus so aptly stated regarding this subject: "No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon" (Matthew 6:24).

Jesus knew what he was talking about. Notice that He gives two instances and in each He says that one will be held to or loved, and the other will be hated or despised. He told us again about riches and the love thereof: "It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God" (Mark 10:25).

Now that might sound a bit impossible if you take the term in a literal contemporary meaning. If however one understands that the "eye of a needle" was actually a gate in Jerusalem's wall and that camels had to get down on their knees in order to pass through it, it then becomes understandable. Jesus wasn't saying that it is impossible for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God, but that it was very hard. It is hard because the rich love their riches and are given over to demonic entities.

We know this to be true because of the next phase that rich people enter when they have all that they want; that is the lust for power. When people have surpassed others by accumulating riches then they want to have power over them. Most people have a hard time understanding why rich people go into politics when they have all of the money that they could ever use. The reason is so that they can have power over the masses and enforce their will (or the will of those who rule over the rich) upon the rest of society. This is how the rich and powerful can open doors to demonic entities.

Bad Music Choices:

When it comes to music we believe in evolution. Good music always seems to evolve into bad music. When my dad was a kid his parents were shocked at the music that he listened to and my dad was equally displeased with the music that I listened to. There was a big difference in our music. While Dad's music was "big band" music and maybe some of the milder rock of that era, the music that I listened to promoted free sex, perverted sex, violence, and many of the groups wrote and sang songs that either glorified Lucifer or mocked God. We rocked to tunes like "Sympathy for the Devil," by the Rolling Stones (whose lead singer is a Satanist);

and “Don’t Fear the Reaper,” by Blue Oyster Cult; a song that told the youth of our time not to fear God or the penalty of sin.

As bad as the music was back in my day, it seems that the music of this current generation goes even farther, telling the youth to see other groups and races as enemies and to kill them. It teaches kids to hate their parents, to beat their loved ones and to break most of society’s laws and all of God’s laws. One has to ask how it has gotten so bad. The answer is simple. The words and music that come from most of the secular singers doesn’t come from them, but from entities that influence them. In an effort to keep this book concise we won’t list the quotes from rock and heavy metal bands that have devoted their lives and careers to Satan, but know for sure that many of them are implicated. A simple internet search will yield many results.

One might ask how Satan can be implicated in this and how he might be influential in opening doors to demonic oppression. The answer is quite simple. In the beginning it was done though subtlety, through back masking and such ways. Today, however, music is riddled with blatant Satanism that cannot be ignored. We know that Lucifer was given wonderful ministries to honor God before he fell, and many theologians believe that Lucifer was the worship leader in heaven, as we see in the following scriptures: “You were the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The sardius, topaz, and diamond, Beryl, onyx, and jasper, Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes Was prepared for you on the day you were created. You were the anointed cherub who covers; I established you; You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, Till iniquity was found in you” (Ezekiel 28:12–15).

We have to remember that God has set down guidelines for proper living and that he expects the world to live by his laws. Listening to music that promotes bad morals, bad sexual practices, murder and mayhem is giving a license to a false gospel. Knowingly listening to anything that goes against what God has prescribed as proper living is actually mocking God because listening to such garbage promotes it in a person’s life. The mocking of God in a person’s life is a big open door for demonic oppression and an early and unpleasant death followed by eternity in torment.

Memberships in Secret Societies:

Everyone wants to belong to something special. For many this desire leads them to join secret societies such as the Masonic Lodge, Knights Templar, Odd Fellows or other such entities. Still others are invited into other organizations like the Illuminati or other of the high-end secret societies. Simply put, such organizations are called secret societies because these societies don't want people to know what they do in the darkness of the shadows.

Many go into organizations such as the ones listed above because they see them as being altruistic in nature. They see the Shriners, a division of the Masons, and how they open up hospitals for children, and how these organizations give out gifts to kids during the holidays, and they see this as a wonderful thing. While it looks good, it isn't really any different from those in the Mafia who take care of those in the neighborhood; many times feeding them, housing them and providing for their general welfare. However, just like in the case of getting Mafia help, the kind deeds that are done are remembered by the givers, and chances are that the tentacles will someday reach out and draw back the person who received the "free" gift.

Initiates to these organizations often see them as enjoyable. They are asked to take blood oaths (something strictly forbidden by scripture) and promise to keep the secrets of the lodges. It may seem to those in the lower levels of such organizations that their member is innocuous, but in the spiritual realm, it is guilt by association. You're not only a lower member, but you have sworn yourself to an organization that is filled at the higher levels with nefarious people who worship all sorts of deities. Swearing blood oaths and secret oaths, along with being guilty by association, is how belonging to secret societies opens doors to alien/demonic oppression.

Belief in Evolution:

Evolution has taken over our society in a panendemic fashion. Simply put, evolution is a secular humanist religion that tries to usurp the authority of God and discredit His Holy Word. Although many have tried to meld evolution's speculations with scripture, the attempts show their flaws and this can be seen by the discriminating eye.

Evolution's god is not the God of the Bible and the gospel that it preaches is a false gospel. Believing its tenets, even in part (aside from micro evolution) is believing that false gospel and putting the god of evolution in the same category as God Almighty, which is something that we are prohibited from doing. Knowing

this, we can see why this is a major door that could lead to alien abduction/demonic oppression.

Other Door Openers:

We could make a list many pages long of the other things that could open up doors to alien abduction but we think that we have proved the point that since these entities are spiritual in nature then they are spiritually opposed to God Almighty. This being the case it is safe to assume that if God Almighty said that practices were wrong and should be avoided, then the observance of these practices, whether on purpose or by ignorance opens up doors to evil entities that masquerade as space aliens. It is the only thing that really makes sense. In the spiritual world, ignorance is no excuse.

A Primer on How to Keep Doors Shut:

There are so many other actions or thoughts that can occur in a person's life that can cause doors to open up for alien abduction (demonic oppression) to come into our lives. A person could really get confused trying to figure out what or what not to do. There is a way to start that is pretty easy though.

Most of us are given something called a conscience. Granted, there are some reprobate people who just cannot understand that, or seem to have been born without a conscience, but thank God that they are few and far between. We all get that feeling when we are about to embark into new areas of our lives that tells us that something might not be right about what we are about to do. If we were to listen to that voice inside of us then we would keep a lot of doors from opening up. Christians have the Holy Spirit that guides us in all truth, but only if we allow him to lead us. So, before we do anything it is wise to consider if God would want us doing what we're about to do. It is that simple. Pray for wisdom about such things and God will grant wisdom.

The only true way to be able to discern right and wrong is if we have the Holy Spirit living inside of us and even better, if we are baptized in His Spirit. This is a reality for believers in Jesus Christ but we're sorry to say that those who do not have Jesus are not afforded this heavenly counselor. The Holy Spirit is only given to those who come to faith in Jesus Christ by being born of His Spirit. You can read more about that at the end of this book.

Closing the Old Doors:

We hope that you're prepared for a blanket statement. We know that these doors cannot be closed without a person having a saving faith with God Almighty through His Son Jesus Christ. It is true that some people are able to cast out demons or rebuke them from an area for a time, but that is never permanent. Jesus himself told a story of this and it was written as follows:

"When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation" (Matthew 12:43–45).

What Jesus was saying is that if a house is cleaned and put in order, and there isn't someone living there who can prevent the old inhabitants from coming back, then those old dwellers will come back and they will invite more in. The only one who can come into the house (our bodies) to protect us is the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit only dwells in a person when that person has accepted Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior through a born again experience. It is really the only way that it works. You can read about this protection at the end of this book.

SECTION THREE: The Proof Is in the Testimonies

CHAPTER ELEVEN: Importance of Testimonial Evidence

The mark of any desirable civilization is the manner by which it meets out justice to its citizens. The law upon which a desirable civilization founds itself must be fair and equitable to all of its population and it must be a system of government that allows all those citizens to decide what is best for them. This is especially true if the people have a belief system that transcends above the government; if they have a figure that they worship and adore and whom they feel and know is all-mighty and all-powerful.

Laws are instituted by governments so that the people can have knowledge of the difference between proper behavior and inappropriate behavior; between what is socially acceptable and unacceptable. In a fair and just society those who are accused of a crime (an infraction of society's laws) are brought to court that is presided over by a judge and there is a prosecuting attorney and a defense attorney. More importantly, there is what is called a jury; a body of individuals that are the defendant's peers, people of equal standing, who belong to the same societal group, who are of the same age, grade or status.

At the start of the trial the presiding judge instructs the jury to make a determination of guilt or innocence of the defendant based on the evidence and the testimony that is presented during the trial. Evidence is divided into two categories, circumstantial evidence and direct evidence. There is an easy way to differentiate between the two types of evidence. If a man was seen entering a house and screams are heard and then the man walks out of that house with a bloody knife, it is circumstantial evidence. If however the witness stands at the window and sees the man kill the victim with the knife then that is direct evidence. The testimony of the man who witnessed the murder is in effect the evidence. If there were two or more witnesses to the crime then the evidence grows stronger and so does the case against the defendant. The testimony is the therefore evidence.

The UFO community has labored for many years on the basis of circumstantial evidence. Because the evidence had been circumstantial it was assumed that it was faulty evidence. This was due to the notion that those witnesses who first came forward weren't really the type of people that scientists and other professionals thought would be able to provide strong evidence. After all, in the early days of the 1940s and 1950s many of the people who went public with their reports were farmers, truck drivers, fishermen and other types of people that the intelligentsia in

the scientific community thought to be a simple sort of people. Anyone in Ufology who took these reports seriously were labeled as fanatics who believed stories from people who were given over to psychotic episodes or substance abuse, or those who were quite good at spinning tales.

Two things happened to change the opinions of both scientists and the average citizen in regard to the veracity of UFO reports and those who reported them. First, the reports became more numerous and UFOs weren't being witnessed by people out in the boondockles of the nations, but in highly populated areas. It is easy to question the validity of one report from one person, but when hundreds or thousands of people witness the same event it is hard to deny. When someone witnesses military aircraft chasing after these objects they know that the government takes them serious and it changes opinions in an instant.

The second thing that brought the UFO into prominence was the fact that highly educated people and people of stature were starting to risk their livelihoods and their credibility to report their encounters with UFOs. Doctors and lawyers started to come forward as well as some scientists such as Jacques Vallée and Stanton Freedman, to name just a couple. Two former astronauts, Gordon Cooper and Scott Carpenter, both have made public comments about their belief in UFOs and have made separate, additional comments alluding to the fact that they and other astronauts have seen unidentified flying objects in space. In the 1990s four researchers: David Jacobs, Ph.D., associate Professor of History at Temple University; Ron Westrum, Professor of Sociology and Interdisciplinary Technology at Eastern Michigan University; Dr. John E. Mack, Professor of Psychiatry, Harvard Medical School at the Cambridge Hospital and Founding Director of the Center for Psychological Studies in the Nuclear Age; and John Carpenter, psychiatric therapist and clinical social worker from Springfield, Missouri; all took an interest in the phenomenon of alien abduction which they all saw as something more than the rantings of a lunatic fringe. When scientists and other highly educated professionals started to express interest, the rest followed their lead.

Yet another series of events that fostered a greater public awareness of the UFO phenomenon was the denial of the government, specifically the military to the actual existence of anomalous signs in the sky. During and after the Vietnam War a great distrust of the government and military was birthed in the minds of the American people and also the people of other nations. This of course was gladly brought to light by an increasingly growing liberal media that loved to make the governments of the world look bad, especially if they were capitalist forms of government. When it came to trust, the government put itself in the coffin and those in the media shut the lid and nailed it closed. With a taste of distrust toward the

government fresh on the pallets of the public they were quick to dismiss government reports that UFOs didn't exist and this attitude is even more prevalent today.

Another accelerator of the belief in UFOs is the movie industry, especially as it is in Hollywood. This industry operates in a vicious circle. First, they acquire information that tells them the subject matter that will most interest people. After they've satiated the hunger of the people they produce movies and other media on a large scale in order to keep the people hooked. It is akin to the drug dealer who introduces the user to a drug and then makes a fortune off of the addiction of the user by supplying what the user needs. So in essence, where UFOs, aliens, and space themes are concerned, Hollywood took the interest of a few that it saw as the lunatic fringe and presented that interest to society at large. If you don't think that this is true, then just look at the table below and see that the space/UFO/alien agenda has been quite a hit on the big screen, making up 20 percent of the top grossing films worldwide.

Rank	Title	Worldwide Box Office
1.	Titanic (1997)	$1,835,300,000
2.	The Lord of the Rings: The Return of the King (2003)	$1,129,219,252
3.	Pirates of the Caribbean: Dead Man's Chest (2006)	$1,060,332,628
4.	Harry Potter and the Sorcerer's Stone (2001)	$968,657,891
5.	Pirates of the Caribbean: At World's End (2007)	$958,404,152
6.	Harry Potter and the Order of the Phoenix (2007)	$937,000,866
7.	**Star Wars: Episode I - The Phantom Menace (1999)**	$922,379,000
8.	The Lord of the Rings: The Two Towers (2002)	$921,600,000
9.	Jurassic Park (1993)	$919,700,000
10.	Harry Potter and the Goblet of Fire (2005)	$892,194,397
11.	Spider-Man 3 (2007)	$885,430,303
12.	Shrek 2 (2004)	$880,871,036
13.	Harry Potter and the Chamber of Secrets (2002)	$866,300,000
14.	Finding Nemo (2003)	$865,000,000
15.	The Lord of the Rings: The Fellowship of the Ring (2001)	$860,700,000
16.	**Star Wars: Episode III - Revenge of the Sith (2005)**	$848,462,555
17.	**Independence Day (1996)**	$811,200,000
18.	Spider-Man (2002)	$806,700,000
19.	**Star Wars (1977)**	$797,900,000
20.	Shrek the Third (2007)	$791,106,665

21.	Harry Potter and the Prisoner of Azkaban (2004)	$789,458,727
22.	Spider-Man 2 (2004)	$783,577,893
23.	The Lion King (1994)	$783,400,000
24.	The Da Vinci Code (2006)	$757,236,138
25.	**E.T.: The Extra-Terrestrial (1982)**	$756,700,000

Source: Internet Movie Database – http://imdb.com/boxoffice

So as you can see, the movie industry has not only taken an interest in extraterrestrial life and perpetuated its growth, but in addition to that they have built themselves a nice little nest-egg of just over 4.1 billion dollars. If one would do an in-depth study of proceeds from all the movies from the 1930s to present day that have dealt with the UFOs and life on other planets, the dollar figure would probably be more than twice that amount. That's quite an impressive amount of revenue considering that the subject matter was previously never very popular and ascribed to an outlandish outcast fraction of society.

The final group that has brought UFOs and alien abductions into the public eye is the group that consists of the abductees themselves. Some have gone freelance, telling their stories to the media and other outlets but others have sought the advice and help from people like Hopkins, Carpenter, Jacobs, Westrum, and the late John Mack. These gentlemen have been at the forefront of trying to bring awareness to the public and to other professionals, telling them that abductions are a real phenomenon and that the people who are abducted want and need help. They have shown that abductees come from all walks of life and that the phenomenon transcends all of society's groups and subsets.

So the next question we must ask is what the outcome of all the conditioning of society has produced; how it has shaped society. In September of 2002, a poll was taken by the Roper Organization at the request of the Sci-Fi Channel. The Roper Poll, number C205-008232 gives us direct evidence of what society now thinks of the UFO and alien abduction subject. This study was conducted by RoperASW via OmniTel, a weekly national telephone omnibus service. The sample consists of 1,021 male and female adults (in approximately equal number), all eighteen years of age and over. The telephone interviews were conducted from August 23 through August 25, 2002, using a Random Digit Dialing (RDD) probability sample of all telephone households in the continental United States. Interviews were weighted by five demographic factors: age, sex, education, race, and geographic region. Weights were applied to ensure accurate representation of the adult population in each of these areas. The margin of error for the total sample is +/- 3 percent.

According to the poll, 56 percent of the American public thinks that UFOs are real and are not just in people's imaginations. The poll showed that 67 percent of adults think that there is other life in the universe. Moreover, nearly half (45 percent) of adults believe intelligent life from other worlds has monitored life on Earth. One in five Americans in general (21 percent) believes that humans have been abducted by other life forms. A total of 14 percent have had or know someone who has had at least one Close Encounter of the "First," "Second," or "Third" kind.

Where the opinion of the respondents in regard to government secrets about UFOs and extraterrestrial life is concerned, the following numbers are remarkable. More than half (55 percent) of all adults say that the government does not share enough information with the public. More than two-thirds of Americans say that the government is not telling the public everything it knows about UFO activity (72 percent) or extraterrestrial life (68 percent). Six in ten adults believe that information regarding UFO sightings (60 percent) and extraterrestrial life (58 percent) should be declassified if national security is not at risk. Another one in ten says it depends upon the situation (Source Sci-Fi Channel Website www.scifi.com/ufo/roper).

When we take all of the numbers presented above and examine them we can see that the sixty years of conditioning by all the concerns listed above in this chapter has changed public opinion about UFOs and extraterrestrials. The defense has presented a lot of evidence, some of it by way of direct evidence but most of it by circumstantial evidence. Pictures and videos are great evidence because, as we all know, one picture is worth a thousand words. Even when the counterfeit pictures and the faked videos are removed there still remains a lot of proof that UFOs are flying through our skies and appearing at will to those who they choose to reveal themselves to. The accounts of so many witnesses have thrown the burden of proof back on the skeptics and naysayers. Those who have strived for years to point public attention to this phenomenon are finally getting their day in the sun. They have suffered through many years of disrespect and ridicule, some losing their employment, some their respectability, and if you believe the reports, some might have lost their lives to bring this subject to the forefront of public awareness.

Those who suffered the rejection, who were thought of as odd or unusual, who were many time ostracized from family and friends and who lost their credibility suffered all of these things because they were willing to investigate something outside of the norm. These people faced adversity but they pursued their investigations and research undauntedly because it was their conviction that their pursuit was honorable. To pursue all that is honorable should be the intent of every individual and it should be respected by everyone, even if some don't necessarily

agree with what that pursuit might be.

Seeing all that UFO researchers have suffered over the years it would naturally be assumed that they would be the most compassionate and accepting people in the universe, especially concerning all ideas or theories about UFOs, their origins, their occupants and their intentions for humankind. For the most part, the modern UFO researcher and the average day Joe will accept just about anything, even the outlandish, but there is one idea that most will shut down right away; that being the idea that there might be a spiritual connection to UFOs and their occupants, and that the Bible might have the answers. It is quite interesting to see the reaction of participants in a UFO study group or even just a group of associates who are discussing UFOs when the subject of the Bible, God or anything pertaining to the God of the Bible is brought up in conversation. It is sort of reminiscent of days long ago while watching Star Trek when the Enterprise would stumble upon something that it considered a threat. The Bible is mentioned and all of a sudden the shields come up and the weapons system comes online. You can almost hear the ship-wide intercom announcing "intruder alert" and see the crew running for cover. At this moment, one finds the people who should be the most tolerant and accepting (because they were treated with such animosity for so many years), acting the same way that their tormentors did in the past. It is quite interesting to observe but at the same time it is sad because they have presented their evidence and now they quash any new evidence that is presented in the ongoing litigation of the UFO trial.

I think that everyone reading this can see that we have a problem here. We have to remember that in a courtroom, all of the available evidence must be presented. During trial proceedings if it becomes apparent that one of the attorneys or any court officer has tampered with evidence, or if it becomes known that one side has suppressed evidence, the opposing side can ask the judge to declare a mistrial. In essence, this is what has happened in the UFO realm. Strong evidence has continually been introduced and it shows that there is indeed a correlation between the entities of these craft, their message, their actions, and their intentions; and that of the demonic realm, their message, their actions, and their intentions.

We've all been exposed to some sort of legal jargon in one way or another, even if it's just in what we see on television dramas concerning such things. We've all been exposed to things concerning law enforcement and investigations conducted by detectives and other officials. One thing that is common knowledge is that people who commit serial crimes all follow their own pattern. For instance, if a serial murderer commits crimes in Boston and then he relocates to Los Angeles and commits another crime the police in both cities can determine that the crimes committed in their cities were perpetrated by the same person because the mode of

operation was exactly the same. We saw this in a prior chapter where we examined the many parallels between the deeds of the supposed extraterrestrials and those who practice satanic ritual abuse. In essence what we have are two different players but the same sort of activity, almost identical and that is because they both have the same origins, the same characters controlling the production behind the scenes, and ultimately the same author.

The best way to determine the actions that were committed in each area of this arena is to get firsthand testimony. The evidence that has been presented to UFO investigators in the traditional sense of the UFO study field has for the most part been circumstantial. Pictures of daytime objects and nighttime lights dancing around in the sky aren't very good to build a case upon and in most cases they bring up more questions than they do answers. Physical traces are circumstantial also because they just prove that something was at one time in the vicinity of the traces. I think you get the picture.

The best evidence though, by far, is the testimony of the abducted individual, especially if there are unusual marks on their bodies that weren't there before the experience. In a courtroom this sort of evidence is the most damning for the defendant. This is especially true in modern day investigations where forensic sciences can find the minutest piece of evidence. The best thing about this sort of evidence is that the victim is also the witness. In a courtroom scenario the victim will recount his/her story whereupon the physical evidence will be brought into the record and labeled as "exhibits." In the case of abduction by entities disguised as extraterrestrials the story of the victim is recounted and what supports their telling of their account are the strange scoop marks, bruises, incisions, puncture holes, and many other things; some much worse. This is wonderful evidence speaking purely from a legal standpoint.

Supporting the evidence there is also the comparison of the victim's account and their physical evidence with the testimonies and evidence from other victims. People can be across town, across the nation or on the other side of the globe and their stories and their evidence are the same, which can only prove that their attacks (yes, an abduction is an attack) were by the same individual or group of individuals who all have the same modus operandi (mode of operation).

The premise of the authors of this book is that the phenomenon of alien abduction isn't extraterrestrial, nor is it our progeny coming back to us from the far future, nor does it have any other corporeal aspect to it. We feel plain and simple that alien abduction is the deceptive action of malevolent angels and demons that are out to deceive mankind at the close of man's reign on Earth. The message, the mission, and the actions of these beings prove very well to our satisfaction that this

is true. But now we are at an impasse in our trial because all the evidence is in and it seems like we can go no farther. Even if these beings would land in every capital of the world announcing that they are friendly and they want to help mankind it would mean nothing because they would have just introduced themselves and perhaps they are liars. They are, by the way. If you were sitting in a park and a stranger walked up to you and said that he was your friend and that he wanted to improve your life and show you the proper way to live you would be quite wary of his or her advances. This is because they are new to you and they haven't done anything to prove their claims. And if they did give you things to try to prove their intentions you should still be wary because they might be setting you up for something very bad farther down the road. So what proof could we present that these entities are evil and that they mean great harm to mankind?

There is proof that we can present that will put an end to this question for good if people will be open minded to the truth. In order to proceed we need to recap, for a minute or so, the testimony that has been presented so far. The lawyer for the aliens has inculcated us for many years with their doctrine that the aliens care for mankind. He has told us that they have come a long way to introduce themselves to us. We have been told that they have nothing but the best intentions for us and that if we let them, they will bring us to the next level in human spiritual evolution. They have claimed that they have either watched over or aided in our physical evolution and some have boldly said that they have created humans. They have also said that there are those on Earth who oppose them and that the spiritual evolution of mankind is being hindered by those individuals. Their attorney has brought into the light that the forced abductions of humans is necessary so that our space brothers can use our genetic material to make us better and some say that they actually want to crossbreed with humans so that both races can better from each other. They have told their captives that the insidious medical procedures, the rape and molesting of men, women and children is all necessary for them to proceed with their plans for mankind's glorious future. And finally, the alien's attorney has pointed to the his little gray, reptilian, mantis, and Nordic clients and has told us that these are faces that we all can trust, if only we surrender our will and let them into our lives.

The attorney for humanity has given a fine closing speech to the jury. He has shown that human law dictates some very fundamental guidelines and he has shown us the fundamental guidelines in the biblical Ten Commandments. He has pointed out that the actions of the alien entities have violated all of those commandments in one way or another. He has pointed out that no matter how much fluff the aliens use to introduce fidelity into their message their actions show them to be liars. He showed us that kidnapping, forced medical procedures, rape, forced pregnancies, murder, and many other infractions can never be excused no matter how much the

perpetrators try to smooth over their intentions. He has also pointed out that the message of these entities is always New Age in nature with foundations in Eastern Mysticism.

The attorney for humanity has raised several interesting questions that have caused us to query who these entities really are. For instance, if these entities are so advanced, why do they need to abduct so many people? If they are so advanced then why do they need to make human/alien hybrids; wouldn't that be akin to a genius wanting to crossbreed with a chimpanzee? Why couldn't they get all our genetic information from just ten or twenty humans? Surely they have the capability to break our genetic code if they are so advanced. Also, if they have aided in human evolution like they say they have, wouldn't they have that information already? Did they lose their files in a hard drive failure? If they are so superior, how come so many of their craft have crashed on Earth? But the question that really makes one think is as follows. Why do they go out of their way to discredit the God of the Bible and leave all of the other religions and gods alone? Why do they go out of their way to either deny Jesus Christ or to lessen His importance by refuting His deity, His message and His mission? Why have they seen it as so important to rewrite everything about Jesus Christ? Well, perhaps it is because they hate Jesus, and maybe it is for a very important reason; that reason being that Jesus is who He said He is. If this is true (and we affirm that it is) then we have to seriously question who the "extraterrestrials" really are, and the answer is quite simple, they are fallen angels and the demons of old who are in league with Satan.

When we consider that the entities that purport to come from other worlds do so much to try to discredit the Lord of Heaven and Earth the only logical assumption that we can possibly make is that they are spiritual in nature. This can be corroborated by the testimony of those who have on occasion seen UFOs disappear into the Earth and by those who have been visited by the entities who seem to just walk through walls. This claim can also be seen in the message of the entities themselves who go to great lengths to say that they want to help mankind go into the next step of its "spiritual evolution." In essence, we have to come to the conclusion that there is a spiritual war going on all around us and that the manifestation of UFOs and alien entities is a fulfillment of prophetic utterance from Jesus Christ Himself:

"And He said: 'Take heed that you not be deceived. For many will come in My name, saying, "I am He," and, "The time has drawn near." Therefore, do not go after them. But when you hear of wars and commotions, do not be terrified; for these things must come to pass first, but the end will not come immediately.' Then He said to them, 'Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And

there will be great Earthquakes in various places, and famines and pestilences; and there will be fearful sights and great signs from (in) heaven'" (Luke 21:8–11).

One can make the argument that all the things that Jesus said have happened all throughout history, but never to the degree that they are happening today. Jesus told us that we shouldn't be deceived. In recent times we have had figures like Jim Jones and David Koresh who have led people astray. They have claimed that they were the messiah and the ones who believed the messages of liars paid with their lives. But there are others who believe the lies of the aliens who also say that they are here to save us, that they have created us, and that they are here to take us to higher forms of spirituality. Jesus mentioned that there would be fearful sights and great signs in the heavens. It is interesting that most people report a fearful sensation when they see a UFO and furthermore, all people who deal with the entities themselves feel an overpowering fear when in the alien's presence. As for great signs in the heavens, this is the phrase that can most aptly describe the sensation that one gets when they witness an aerial display by objects that appear from nowhere and then disappear in the same fashion. A sense of awe is what one gets when they see a visible object defying the laws of physics by making right angle turns at thousands of miles per hour or when it approaches the ground or shoots into the heavens at speeds that would kill any physical being. Now we're not saying that Jesus was talking specifically about UFOs when He told of our times, but there is no doubt that UFOs and aliens were on His mind when he talked to His disciples.

Jesus of Nazareth had quite a few experiences with the powers that are opposed to God. At the start of His ministry He went out into the desert for forty days to fast and to commune with His Father. During that time Satan came to Jesus three times and tried to deceive Jesus to serve him. Notice that Satan didn't come in a disguise like the fallen angels do to unsuspecting people. He came as himself because he knew that his creator (Jesus) could see right through any mask, through any deception.

Jesus came across many people who were possessed by demons. In each instance He cast the demons out of the people in whom they lived. Two of the accounts are quite extraordinary. The first account is found in the Gospel of Luke, chapter eight:

> Then they sailed to the country of the Gadarenes, which is opposite Galilee. And when He stepped out on the land, there met Him a certain man from the city who had demons for a long time. And he wore no clothes, nor did he live in

a house but in the tombs. When he saw Jesus, he cried out, fell down before Him, and with a loud voice said, “What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beg You, do not torment me!” For He had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For it had often seized him, and he was kept under guard, bound with chains and shackles; and he broke the bonds and was driven by the demon into the wilderness.

Jesus asked him, saying, “What is your name?” And he said, “Legion,” because many demons had entered him. And they begged Him that He would not command them to go out into the abyss. Now a herd of many swine was feeding there on the mountain. So they begged Him that He would permit them to enter them. And He permitted them. Then the demons went out of the man and entered the swine, and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the lake and drowned. (Luke 8:26–33)

The second account is equally incredible and without a doubt noteworthy:

Then they went into Capernaum, and immediately on the Sabbath He entered the synagogue and taught. And they were astonished at His teaching, for He taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

Now there was a man in their synagogue with an unclean spirit. And he cried out, saying, “Let us alone! What have we to do with You, Jesus of Nazareth? Did You come to destroy us? I know who You are—the Holy One of God!” But Jesus rebuked him, saying, “Be quiet, and come out of him!” And when the unclean spirit had convulsed him and cried out with a loud voice, he came out of him. Then they were all amazed, so that they questioned among themselves, saying, “What is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authority, He commands even the unclean spirits, and they obey Him.” And immediately His fame spread throughout all the region around Galilee. (Mark 1:21–28)

There are many accounts of Jesus having power over demonic powers. Here are just a couple more to drive the point home, at least for right now.

“When evening had come, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed. And He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick…”

(Matthew 8:16).

And:

"And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God" (Mark 3:11).

In this world we are all subject to some kind of authority. We have laws over us and are subject to those laws. We elect officials and put them on authority over us and those officials hire people to enforce the laws. This is the crux of any advanced civilization. In earlier days, when confronted with a situation the police would yell out, "Stop in the name of the law!" A perpetrator would then have to consider that the policeman was a representative of the law and that the power and authority of the law was on the policeman. Things work pretty well the same way in the spiritual world. As we saw in the scriptures directly above, Jesus has authority over devils (demons) and this is because even if they are in rebellion to his authority they are still subject to it. Jesus has total authority as is evidenced not only in his works, but in his testimony:

"And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, 'All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on Earth'" (Matthew 28:18).

This was a fulfillment of the scripture in Isaiah, which says: "Tell and bring forth your case; Yes, let them take counsel together. Who has declared this from ancient time? Who has told it from that time? Have not I, the LORD? And there is no other God besides Me, A just God and a Savior; There is none besides Me. 'Look to Me, and be saved, All you ends of the Earth! For I am God, and there is no other. I have sworn by Myself; The word has gone out of My mouth in righteousness, And shall not return, That to Me every knee shall bow, Every tongue shall take an oath'" (Isaiah 45:21–23).

The Apostle Paul, by the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, quoted Isaiah and revealed the completion of the scripture by penning the following words in his letter to the believers in Philippi: "Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father" (Philippians 2:9–11).

Now it stands to reason, and it is born out in the words of Jesus and in the lives of many believers throughout the history of Jesus' church that the authority is passed down from Jesus to His believers. We see it manifest in His followers whom He sent out on ministry missions as illustrated in the following scripture:

"And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as

lightning fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven" (Luke 10:17–20).

We also see that He gives this promise to all who believe in Him and who trust Him:

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it" (John 14:12–14).

In the course of our work we have come into contact with many people who have been troubled, harassed and have been treated in every malevolent way by entities who masquerade in the guise of aliens from other worlds. Many of these people have tried just about every idea under the sun to stop their abductions. The foil hats were just a waste of good foil, the use of other devices was just a waste of money and so called "righteous indignation," did not work because if one lacks righteousness they can be indignant till they turn blue in the face and they'll still be taken.

In this chapter we've touched lightly on authority, and especially spiritual authority. Scripture bears out to us that Jesus Christ is that spiritual authority and that even the demons recognize His power over them. We have talked to many people were not Christians who when they used the name of Jesus Christ to stop their abductions have been successful and many have accepted Jesus as their Lord and Savior after their success. They have realized that while using Jesus' name to stop the abduction experience works great it is not the permanent fix that they wanted. They have found that only by accepting Jesus Christ into their heart as their Lord and Savior offers a permanent fix to the problem.

We like to use the following analogy to describe how using the name of Jesus to stop abductions and having a relationship with God through Jesus Christ differ. We all played on the playground when we were kids and we saw the mechanics of how children treat each other. There was always a bully and there was always a child who the bully liked to pick on. The child that is picked on never really has a chance because they are weak and coy and they just want to live their life without trouble. Bullies seem to have a sixth sense about this sort of person. So the coy young man (we'll call him Bob) goes to the playground and once again he's picked on by the bully. This day however he makes a new friend. We'll call his friend Steve. Steve's dad is the chief of police in their town and is respected by the community as a person who is tough on crime; he doesn't fool around. So Steve

sees the bully picking on the Bob and he pulls the kid aside and tells him that he wants to be his friend. Bob is real happy about this and the two quickly become best friends.

The next time they're at the playground the bully comes up to Bob and starts to pick on him again but this time Bob looks at the bully and tells him that he better leave him alone because Steve is his new friend. The bully knows all about Steve and after a short time of bewilderment he decides that the penalty for bothering Bob just isn't worth it, so he finds another person to harass. Bob is so happy because he can finally play in the playground and do so with peace. Over the course of time the bully mulls things over and starts to bother Bob because Bob really isn't related to Steve and he comes to the conclusion that Steve's dad is too busy to bother with such a small affair, so bothers Bob again, not so much, but the harassment still continues.

Steve finds out about this harassment and has a talk with his dad. He explains to his dad that Bob is an orphan and that he really doesn't have anyone to fight for him. He suggests that his dad go to the orphanage and to offer to adopt Bob to which his dad gladly agrees. Bob is called into the orphanage office and he is presented with the offer. He thinks about finally being part of a family, having a mom and dad again, having good food on the table, but most of all, he knows that if he is adopted he will be the son of a police chief. The adoption is finalized making Steve and Bob brothers and both are happy.

The next day Bob goes to the playground and the bully is there. He starts to bother Bob again but this time Bob tells him that he had better leave him alone. He says that his father is now the police chief and that he now has the authority of a police chief's son. The bully backs off, now realizing that his mission is far too dangerous and although he tries a couple more times to bother Bob he finally gets tired and realizes that there are others who are easier prey.

The story above illustrates the difference between using the name of Jesus without the authority and using it with the authority. The Bible is quite clear concerning the adoption that comes when a person is born again in the Holy Spirit:

"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, 'Abba, Father.' The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, and if children, then heirs—heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together" (Romans 8:14–17).

And:

“Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ, just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love, having predestined us to adoption as sons by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, by which He made us accepted in the Beloved” (Ephesians 1:3–6).

The scripture in Romans talks about those who come into the family of God, how they are joint heirs; children of God. In an adoption here in the earthly realm the adopted child takes the name of the adopting parent. With that name comes the rights of being a child of that family and according to the law it is as if the adopted child was an actual progeny of the parents. In God’s family this is true too. Jesus becomes our brother and He will always be the favored of God, but all those who come into God’s family get the whole package, including the right to use His name in times of distress. But instead of telling the bully that we are just friends with Jesus, we can tell him that we are His brother or sister too and that we have the power and authority that Jesus has because He is standing right there with us backing up every word. In the playground story we showed above, Bob is every human being, the bully is Satan, the fallen angels and the demons, Steve represents Jesus and the chief of police is God the Father, on an infinitely greater scale of course.

We feel that before we go into the next section of the book that the reader needs to realize who Jesus really is. Many underestimate Him, thinking that He is meek and mild because in His first coming to Earth He had to be that way. He had to be like He is portrayed in Isaiah chapter 53; a suffering servant who is the Lamb of God who takes away the sins of the world. But the Jesus who comes back in the Second Coming is described as the “Lion of the Tribe of Judah.” John saw Him in Heaven with eyes that burned like hot coals. He created the universe and all that is in it and someday He will destroy all of it to rebuild it again. He will return as King of Kings and Lord of Lords and scripture says that He’ll destroy all of the armies that come against Jerusalem and it says that He’ll do it with the sword of His mouth. Scripture says that He’ll command His angels to throw Satan into a pit and chain him, then later He’ll throw Satan and his angels into a Lake of Fire that will torment them for all eternity, then later He will even throw death and hell in there too. People often ask us that if God is so merciful, then, “Why doesn’t He come down to Earth and put an end to all the strife here?” Well, someday soon He will, that we do promise.

The next section of this book houses the testimonies of people who have found that the name of Jesus Christ is the only effective way of stopping alien abductions.

The people whose stories you will read have had success stopping alien abduction. They have found that the name of Jesus is all powerful and that the entities can't manifest as aliens when they are unmasked for what they really are. We now present to you the testimonials of just a few of those who want their stories known. These people have found the answer. If you are looking for the answer then perhaps their accounts will help you. In their accounts you will see many of their stories share many similarities. You will see that they came to the same realizations and they came to the same answer for ending their dilemma.

CHAPTER TWELVE: Testimony of Joyce

I was born and raised in a small rural community in the southern part of Missouri. I was one of thirteen children, and I experienced what one might call a fairly normal childhood. I grew up the daughter of migrant workers. My parents spent part of the year in northern Missouri working for the nurseries there and then the rest of the year we would come back to our little hometown where my dad would spend the rest of the time as a logger. While I was a quiet child, I was still remarkably happy. At no time during my childhood was I aware of anything out of the ordinary, such as abductions. I do remember sleepwalking and I do think that I may have some minor recollection of time loss during my childhood; however, at this time, I still have no clear memory of it.

The First "Adulthood" Abduction:

The first abduction happened after I was already grown and married and a mother of two children. My husband and I had moved back to his hometown in Iowa. We had gotten there late in the afternoon and we were extremely tired. We had gone to his grandmother's for dinner and then returned to his mother's home where we proceeded to set up bedding for the children and ourselves for the night. I remember going to bed, my daughter had fallen asleep in the crib, and my son had decided to bunk with his grandmother in her room. The next thing that I was conscious of was something akin to a dark void and I then found that I was unable to move. I was screaming out in my mind for my husband to come to help me as I was completely paralyzed and could not move. I was not able to scream out loud. I was only making the noises inside my head. I was finally able to get my eyes unstuck and open them enough to see my husband's shoulder, he had his back turned forward toward me and I could see the wall and the window. This was all that I was able to do at this time and I still could not speak. There was a diffused red light that seemed to fill my immediate field of vision.

Finally I was able to move a little and I turned on my back. This was the first time that I saw a being at the side of my daughter's bed. It was your typical gray, and he was taking her out of the crib. I am saying "he" as at the time, for whatever reason, I felt that it was a "he" that was doing this. He lifted her up and out of the crib. The next thing I realized is that I was sitting on the edge of the bed and I was screaming at him not to take her. Then I started screaming for my husband to stop

him from taking her. Although I was by now sitting on the bed I still could not move. Then I found myself in the living room and I noticed that my mother-in-law was ahead of me and that there was a creature, also one of the grays, leading her in the kitchen, and I followed behind her. I looked over on my right where one of the beings had stepped over to the desk in the living room and picked up the picture of my father-in-law and was looking at it. This struck me as odd since my father-in-law was by this time deceased. So I could not understand why the gray would be so interested in his picture.

I then happened to look behind me and found that my husband had been following me all of this time. However, he had his head down; his body appeared limp, almost giving the impression that he was still asleep, yet he seemed to be following with no problem. I should say he was "floating."

The next recollection was that we were back in bed and what seemed so strange is that my husband and I seemed to have sat up at just the same instant. It was just too bizarre. We sat up and grabbed each other and I said, "What was that?" He responded that he had no idea.

We got ourselves together long enough to have him go and fix the baby a bottle of milk to help her back to sleep. I remember at that time looking at her and her little eyes were just as big as silver dollars. She had to have experienced something to have exhibited the extremely wide-awake behavior that she did.

When I think back on this particular incident now, I realize that it makes little sense to think about how upset as I was initially when the gray was taking my eighteen-month-old out of her crib; for I remember the episode, I did not seem concerned about neither her nor her brother! It just makes no sense.

There were actually so very many strangely supernatural events that took place in that house, now that I look back on it. Things, however seemed to have somehow been triggered by the abduction experience as I cannot recall them having happened before that time.

Although this was the first abduction that I can openly recall, I was later to realize that it was, in effect, *not at all* my first abduction!

Perhaps it was the ongoing nightmares that served to bring on the recollections of my childhood abduction experiences. Along with these nightmares, I was also waking up to find that I had unexplained bruises and needle marks, mainly on my legs and arms. One morning while preparing for work, I noticed that my right ankle had a large bruised area about the size of a silver dollar. There was also a very clear needle mark right in the center of the bruising. I certainly would have remembered

having blood drawn or even just running into some object, but I didn't, because I knew that I hadn't!

It was just about this time that I started remembering, starting having, what one might term, "flashbacks," of other abduction experiences that I had forgotten from so many years ago.

Another thing that now was starting to make sense was a recollection that I had always had of a period of missing time when I was in second grade. I still remember my teacher's name and I remember that I sat second row from the window and third row back from the teacher…

I recall that I went to school that particular day and I was getting ready for class and I also remember looking out the window and then the bell rang. My first thought was, "Wow, first recess already!" I did not remember anything that happened during that time. I then got up and went to line up in the class room to go outside for recess and I thought to myself that the time had sure gone by fast, so when I got up to where the teacher was standing I said, "Gee, is it recess time already?" She patted me on the head and replied, "Oh, no, honey. It is time for you to go home!"

I remember standing outside on the sidewalk waiting for the buses to take us home. I was confused because I had no memory whatsoever of the entire day. It was just as if I had arrived at school and the day disappeared. It was just GONE!

Then I did start having memories, although they did not come in order.

Yes, I do now recall another abduction experience that I had during my early childhood years. This one involved only me. There may have been more than this one, as there seems to be indicators of this, but I just do not recall them at this time.

Thinking Back - My Abduction at Age Twelve:

When I was twelve, we lived on a farm in northern Missouri, and I slept in the same bed as one of my sisters. I remember waking up and looking out the window and suddenly feeling very scared. I then realized that there was what *appeared* to be a coyote looking in the window. Then the room became incredibly bright. However, what I was really looking at, was, in fact…a gray.

He then told me to go outside. I remember walking through the kitchen, out to the back porch and I can remember how the grass felt under my feet. The moon appeared to be so bright that it lit up everything. I could clearly see the dog running in the back of the yard, and it ran from the chicken house to the well-house. I could

see the clothesline and all things in the back yard far too vividly; this seemed so out of the ordinary. The unnatural brightness of the night is what finally brought me to the realization that this was certainly *not* the moon!

The next thing that I was aware of was the strange sensation right under my ribcage and feeling like I was being lifted up. I can remember seeing the top of the well-house, the chicken house, and even the tip of my home from the air. Then I was in a room that was a misty-red all around. In this room were little alcoves that were arched; within them were little seats, which appeared to be recessed, so as not to trip the person walking in front of them; and people were sitting in each of these little alcoves.

The simplest way to relate this is to explain that it was much like a type of doctor's waiting room where people had been picked up, and deposited there, still in their sleepwear. I especially have a clear memory of one woman who was wearing a white pajama bottom that appeared to be flannel-like material and a very small printed, flowery top. Her head was bowed down, her hands were in her lap and she seemed to be very sound asleep.

Next I remember the gray. He was about my height, typical gray actually. He was holding my left hand; I remember looking at his skin as he held my hand and thinking that it should be real rough, but instead was extremely soft; it was soft and gray. He then said that he was my friend and would always be with me. This seemed to imply to me that he was my guardian angel.

Then I was lying on the table, where a taller being, which somehow frightened me, had also been standing there. The one that I assumed was my guardian angel told me that "it was okay and that I would not be hurt." Next, some kind of instrument that I can only describe as a "three-pronged headgear" was put over my head; and immediately what I felt was an excruciating pain. It felt like they had actually split my head open. The taller one, the one that scared me, appeared to be "spreading my brain apart" with his fingers. I remember crying and asking him to STOP! I truly hated this creature. I hated him because he was aware, he knew, every single thought that I had ever had and that was in my head. I was being violated! This was like MIND RAPE!

The next thing I knew, I was back on the ground. The better of the two grays, the one that I thought to be my guardian angel, told me to, "go back to bed." I remember walking into the room, and I went back to bed. This ends the memory of my first abduction.

The Third Abduction Memory:

This abduction came after the one that I described at the beginning of this chapter. We were still in Iowa and the sleeping arrangements were the same basically. I remember this really funny feeling as it was almost a strange type of "premonition." I just knew that they were coming; like I could sense them nearby. The memory is cloudy, but I recall a ghostly type of figure; one that seemed almost like a sheet-covered something and it floated up to my window. The next thing I remember was that I was back on a table and my little "guardian angel" gray was there. He was on my left, the doctor gray, the taller one, was on my right and two other grays that were also present, but they stood a little far off. The tall gray was holding my right hand and asking what I had done to it. I told him that when I was a child I had gotten it caught in the ringer portion of an old fashioned washing machine. To this day, the damage done to my thumb as it leads to the palm area is very evident. He seemed extremely interested in this, as though he thought it to be a strange abnormality or anomaly of some kind; one that he possibly did not often see.

I then got the typical vaginal exam. I felt some type of instrument, which I can only assume was some kind of spreading device inserted into my body. Then he told me that I was going to have a baby. I told him that I could not have a baby because I had had my tubes tied. The taller gray then asked me why I had "done this," referring to the tubal ligation, and I told him that my husband and I wanted to have only two children because that is all that we could afford. He actually huffed at me, indignantly. He said, "Your monetary system is foolish." He also told me that the fact that having my tubes tied would not stop me from having another child. I did not believe him because I knew differently.

I remember nothing until the next morning. I was really excited that morning. I told my husband that I was going to have a baby. We talked about it, but I brought it across to my husband as only a dream. Then I started having symptoms, but no morning sickness. When a woman has given birth she is very attuned to the special ways that her body reacts. I was experiencing these feelings. I knew that I was pregnant.

It was a few months later that they came and "took" the baby. It was the same old feeling, that premonition that says "they are coming." And sure enough, I was no longer pregnant.

A Follow-Up Abduction:

During a subsequent abduction, I recall just standing there and one of the little beings was bringing something to me. It was a baby. It tried to give me the baby but

I wouldn't take it. He told me that it was mine and I said an emphatic "NO." Then he informed me that I needed to hold the baby and I needed to love the baby, because, he said, if I did not love the baby it would die. I told him that I did not care. I told him that I wanted the thing to die.

This creature looked exactly like them. It was disgusting, horrible. It looked unreal. It was tiny and it was skeleton-like with skin that seemed merely to cover the bone structure. It was truly repulsive. I clearly remember to be so disgusted and so sickened and hoping that the thing would die.

I could not tell whether this thing was male or female. Somehow, I had the sense that the gray holding this "thing" was a female gray. Although the grays seem to have no gender, they do appear to have what I would term a "role assignment," one that we might relate to ourselves. These "role assignments" would be much like our own in that they mimic male and female duties. Therefore, the gray holding the child, I took to be a "nurturing" type although it really may have been the run-of-the-mill gray alien.

The Black Box Abduction:

The following abduction is what I call my "Black Box" experience.

On that night, my husband and I were lying in bed, and I was engrossed in a new Stephen King novel. It was in the fall, around 10:30 at night, and I got that "old familiar feeling," as the song says. So I looked over at the window, and there stood a gray looking, staring at me. He told me to "put the book down and lay down." I put the book down, but I did not lie down as he had instructed me to do. Instead, I remained in a sitting position. The next thing that I remember were two of them coming through the bedroom door. At that point, my husband started to rise up out of the bed; one of them took a pencil-like rod thing and I saw my husband fall back down on the pillow. As soon as the rod-object hit his neck, he was out like a light.

They continued to come around the bed and both stood there. One of the grays had a "little black box" in his hands and then he laid the thing in my lap and said, "Open it and look inside." Therefore, I did.

Inside was a crystal globe. I picked it up with both hands and I realized it was a globe of the Earth. One could see the continents. While the globe was crystal, the continents appeared blue. I started to turn it in my left hand and to twirl it around so that I could see all that it had to offer. I remember commenting, "It is the most beautiful thing that I have ever seen."

It was after spinning the globe object that I realized I was no longer in my bed; I was sitting at a desk. In front of the desk was a huge giant screen. Pictures started appearing on the screen. The first one of the Earth; looking as it gave the feeling that it was being viewed from space, or from somewhere above the planet.

The rest of the pictures started coming incredibly fast; pictures of people in a park, just ordinary everyday things that people do. I could see my daughter sleeping in bed with us. Then there was one of my husband with "some" woman, but I could not tell if it was me or someone else. I did have very long hair at the time, but I was unable to see the face. It could have been me; or, perhaps someone else. I am not certain which.

Suddenly, all of the pretty, serene pictures started to take on a very different flavor. There were scenes of battles, war-like scenarios, death, and destruction was everywhere to be seen. There were people with their flesh just melting off of their bones, nuclear bombs were going off and the mushroom effect was clearly visible. It was at this point that I stopped and remarked to them that I did not understand this and was very confused by what they were showing me. Therefore, I remember turning to my left, and the only way I can describe this is to say that what I saw was a waterfall. One of the grays came through the waterfall; he said to me, "You're doing just fine."

The waterfall effect was much like that which is seen on the "Stargate SG-One" series on television. It simulated water and acted exactly like the one on television, however, there was no moisture in the air. This was the one abduction experience that left me in total confusion. What they were attempting to have me understand was not clear, or I was somehow missing the point of it all. I could not tell.

I kept repeating over again, that I *did not* understand. Apparently, this dissuaded them and they must have decided to give up on this venture, because the next thing I knew, it was morning.

—

These are about all of the abduction experiences that I feel comfortable relating. Other things that have happened along the way; things that are not easily explainable in the "normal sense" of things have only served to convince me that these experience were very real and not somehow figments of my imagination.

Little did I realize that down the road I would meet Pastor Joe Jordan, who would help me to understand just what it was that had been happening to me for so many years.

Understanding Abduction and How to End It:

The only thing that I can think to add is how it is that these abductions finally came to an end.

While living in Florida, I met Pastor Joe Jordan one evening. I started to share with him my belief in UFOs and the abduction experiences. He in turn also shared with me some of his experiences as he was then MUFON (Mutual UFO Network) connected, and still is. He then began telling me about what scripture has to say about these things. I was interested, but very skeptical at that time.

He told me that he could show *me* how to stop these abductions. I certainly was all for that! Then he proceeded to talk to me about specific scriptures from the Bible that applied here.

He showed me that what had been happening to me wasn't a new phenomenon, but one as old as civilization itself:

"There were **giants** in the Earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown" (Genesis 6:6).

Joe also showed me the "sons of God" mentioned in the prior scripture were really angels that left their abode in heaven and had relations with human women, going after "strange flesh." He showed me how this is backed up in the New Testament, illustrated by Jesus' own brother Jude:

"And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire" (Jude 1:6–7).

And Joe explained to me that the whole UFO phenomena is just a façade put on by these fallen angels to try and trick mankind, as illustrated in the following passage:

> For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed,

whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.
(2 Thessalonians 2:7–12)

Joe also explained to me that there is a hierarchy of these fallen angels, but also that we can fight against their antics if we are in Christ Jesus:

Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel.
(Ephesians 6:10–19)

Joe showed me that there is power and authority in the name of Jesus Christ and he showed me scripture that proved that authority:

"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in Earth, and things under the Earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father" (Philippians 2:9–11).

Joe also stressed that although using the name of Jesus to stop alien abduction worked for everyone, if it is used by someone who doesn't have a relationship with God through Jesus, it is only temporarily stopping a symptom, not the root cause of the whole issue. He stressed that having a born again relationship with Father God, through Jesus Christ gives the believer authority to use this name, much like being adopted gives a child the authority that stands behind his father's name:

"But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God" (John 1:12–13).

We talked for a couple of hours that first evening and when I was ready to leave, he gave me several copies of testimonies from others with similar experiences that I could read through. After I left the restaurant, I stopped at the stoplight to turn on my street and the light was red, so I rested my head on the window next to me. It was at this time that I experienced a vision of the Earth and it had hands that were gripping it. Right above the Earth I saw what I perceived to be Satan or "the Devil." This creature had red eyes, long fangs instead of teeth – sharp and pointy, and he had horns also. It was at this precise moment that I realized that what Pastor Joe had just shared with me was the truth. I suddenly came to the realization that for the longest time I had been "playing with the Devil;" all along I had been deceived.

Pastor Joe had told me that by simply calling on the Name of Jesus (I did not call Him Yeshua back then) was enough to make them stop and go away. I did not believe, at least not then. I did go home and read all of the testimonies that he had given to me. This was when the warring started in my mind. I really thought that I was losing my mind. It was hard to work and stay focused on my normal daily activities. I desperately wanted some normalcy in my life.

One evening I had gone down to a little café that was right below where I had been living. One of my friends was working at the counter, and then one of my neighbors came in. His name was Yulin. He worked at a local news station as a cameraman. He and another man, Randy, struck up a conversation about UFOs and Travis Walton. Most people will remember him from "Fire in the Sky," which was the movie version of his five-day abduction.

At this point I got really excited since this was a subject that I was quite up on as I had not only experienced it personally, but had also studied on it for about twenty years. I knew all about Travis Walton. I had even been at a conference where he was speaker and had met him personally. I really wanted to get in on this conversation. There were things, I was certain, that I could add to what they were discussing.

I tried to open my mouth and found, much to my surprise, that I could not. I just was unable to speak, or think, or do much of anything at that moment. All I knew was that my brain hurt. It was as if someone had taken my brain and was attempting to wring it out. I am convinced that what stopped me from opening my mouth was God. I did not know that then, but I sure do know it now. For, had I been able to speak, I would have certainly, in no time flat, have won him over to the typical UFO realm.

I now realized that God stopped me. He would not allow me to speak out. He was starting to work in my life. I stood there with my poor hurting brain and realized even then that *something* was happening to me right then and there.

A couple of weeks later however, I did come to believe what he told me was true and that I needed to accept Christ as my personal Savior and Lord. Following this I called Pastor Joe again, and told him that I wanted to do this.

I went over to their house, and there I met Linda his lovely wife, and we talked more and they prayed over me. Linda gave me a cross, which I wore for the longest time. I felt so much better. I vividly remember that Linda said something to me that same night. She had said that I would have lots of warring going on inside my head. I laughed and told her that this had already been happening to me.

After returning home, I gave a great deal of thought to what was said that night. I thought also about the issue of "Satan" and what I had been doing in my life, prior to this. Every day that I would see Yulin walking his dogs, I would think about that incident in the restaurant. My mind was on Yulin a great deal at this time. I remembered that he had said something about a particular book that he had recently read; one which he was extremely interested in called, *The Bermuda triangle in Catholicism*, believe it or not.

Just on a ruse, I thought that I would go and ask him if I might borrow this book. It was a way of getting my foot in the door. I took him a copy of Guy Malone's book titled, *Come Sail Away*, as a type of trade and at the same time as a conversation opener.

Since he was not home, I started to drop the book at his doorstep. All of a sudden, he appeared. I then took the opportunity to give him the book and also apologize to him for not being able to talk to him that time in the restaurant. I explained to him that I had met Travis Walton. He seemed quite interested and asked me if I believed all that had been recounted about Walton's abduction experiences. Telling him that, yes, I did believe it and also shared with him that I too had been an "abductee/experiencer." Then he was very interested.

Yulin then asked me if I minded if *he* asked me questions that he had been grappling with. After I turned down his offer of a beer, opting for tea instead, we sat and had a nice three-hour chat on the topic of UFOs, abductions, and anything else that came to mind. I answered every question that he asked me to the best of my knowledge. There was a point in the conversation, after sharing some things about my own life and personal experiences, which included meeting Pastor Joe, I told him that I felt all of these things had been leading up to my moving to and living in Florida. It had been *no coincidence.*

It seems as though after having listened and having heard much of what I had to say, I suddenly realized that his composure had changed. He went from looking very interested to appearing distraught and he seemed to be focused on one thing alone. "I have been opening so many doors," he said, over and over again. Finally, it was making sense to him, the whole thing apparently hitting home like a ton of bricks. Before I left, he made it a point to tell me how grateful he was that I had come into his life and had shared all this with him. So many issues and pieces of the general puzzle had now fallen into place.

Going home, I went to bed and I remembered feeling so good that I found myself smiling at the thought of the night's events. I was quite pleased that I had been able to help someone else as I had been helped myself.

About two weeks later, I was sleeping and woke up with that "familiar feeling" again. I saw one of the grays coming through my front door. I was trying to scream for Jesus to help me, but my mouth was stuck together and I could not say the words. Finally, I was able to whisper the words… "Jesus help me." I turned to look at him again and he *stopped* about halfway through the doorway. Only part of his body was through the door to start with, and now he started to speak. He said, "I'm not here to hurt you. I just came to check on you!" However, he also did not continue to move forward toward me at all. I continued to say the same phrase over and over, "Jesus help me." Then when I looked up, he was gone.

This was the last attempt at abduction—it has never happened again. Praise God; Praise His Name!

Follow-Up with Joyce:

Joyce, in all of her abductions, experienced all of the common occurrences that are reported in most alien abduction scenarios. Her abductions started at a young age, by entities that claimed that they would not hurt her. Like most, she realized right from the start that the abductors begin their relationship with their abductees

by lying to them. It is true even in the cases where human abductors snatch children from their bedrooms, that the predator tells the child that they will not be harmed, and there is something special waiting for them should they consent to go with them. The question that comes into every researcher's mind when delving into cases like this is, "Why are children taken?" Children really have no culpability. The Bible suggests that children are specially covered and are not responsible for their actions (in God's eyes) until they reach the age of accountability, which many feel is when that child reaches the age of puberty. It is different in every child, but centers mostly when the child is in an age range anywhere from eleven to fourteen years old; most agree that the age of thirteen is when most adolescents reach this milestone.

However, there are other factors at play in the whole scheme of things. The Bible points out that there is an "accountability factor" in familial relationships, which is recognized by believers in God, and by every entity in the spiritual realm. The Apostle Paul, in his first letter to the church in Corinth said the following:

"But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God" (1 Corinthians 11:3).

So as we have seen, God is over Jesus, Jesus sanctifies (is the spiritual covering over) the husband, and the husband sanctifies the wife. Notice that it says that Christ is the head of every man…even men who will not submit to his covering. But when a man will not submit to Christ, and he is a man of iniquity, then there is no covering over his family. In today's world of broken marriages and families where the wife is a believer in Jesus and the husband is not, God has provided a provision in which the wife is the covering over the family.

"But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy" (1 Corinthians 7:12–14).

But to be quite frank, a family without a covering is like a vacuum, a void so to speak. We all know that vacuums want to be filled and in the case of a family (or any person's life for that matter) where a vacuum exists, most of the time it will be filled by forces opposed to God. When a person chooses this condition, in a refusal to acknowledge God's sovereign authority, they set up for themselves and their descendents generational curses, as illustrated in the scripture below:

"The LORD is longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and

transgression, and by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation" (Numbers 14:18).

So one might be asking how all this applies to Joyce. What could have happened in the early stages of her life, or perhaps before she was even born, that could have started her down the road of alien abduction?

Knowing what the scriptures clearly state, I asked that very question. I called and talked with Joyce one day and asked her a battery of questions. The one thing that was missing from her testimony above was the question of if she, or her parents, or anyone in her family line, was involved in anything occultic or any secret societies such as the Masons or Wicca.

So having talked at length with her I proceeded to ask her if she had ever had any involvement with the occult. She told me that to the best of her knowledge, she had never dabbled in the occult. I felt that I had to press in farther with this question. I felt this way because many people have a preconceived notion of what the word occult really means. When most think of the occult they have images of witches, warlocks, psychics, and other things of the like. Yet, there are other things that are involved in the occult; things that seem innocent, like reading horoscopes or fortunes from the cookies at the local Chinese restaurant, and yes, the Ouija Board.

When I finished reading down the list of subtle occult practices it was as though a light bulb had clicked on above Joyce. She said that she did have memories of using a Ouija Board when she was quite young. Like most kids, they just did it because it was a fun way to while away the time; but another thing occurred to Joyce when she was telling about her encounter with Ouija Boards. She told me that one time when she used the board, it told her that she would marry a man, and it gave the man's name; and she married a man with the same name that the board gave to her.

So now we were aware of one door that Joyce had opened up when she was a young child. Because there was no real Godly covering over Joyce or her family, a vacuum occurred and when she opened up the spiritual door by using the Ouija Board, she invited unfriendly forces into her life.

Another one of the things that we needed to explore in Joyce's case was to see if there were any generational curses that might have been carried over from her ancestors. I asked Joyce if she was aware of any familial involvement in the occult or secret societies like the Masons. She thought quite intently about this and at first couldn't come up with anything.

There was one other avenue that I wanted to explore, because it is so very

important. I then asked her if she or anyone else in her family had been interested in science fiction or took interest in the UFO phenomena. It was almost as if I could hear that little chain being pulled just before the light bulb again went on. She told me two more things that were doors that opened up her life to the abduction phenomena.

It is a documented fact that most abductees have an interest in science fiction, and all of them have an interest in the UFO phenomena prior to when their abductions started. You might ask how science fiction could be a door to the occult. Let's look at the main theme of science fiction. The vast majority of science fiction books and films produced for the past fifty years or so deal with life on other planets, either on those planets, or the entities of those planets coming to visit the Earth to help mankind or to subdue mankind. There has been a subtle agenda in those films where the films have been used to condition mankind to accept the notion that there is life on other worlds. With this notion in the minds of many people on Earth it is far easier for angelic entities to make themselves known, masquerading in that role, to usurp the authority of God in the lives of humans. After all, since the Bible shows us that we are unique in the universe, a special creation by a loving Creator, then throwing the space alien agenda into the whole of life's experience causes many to doubt the Bible, and ultimately God's existence, or at least His existence as an omnipotent and omniscient ruler of the universe. In essence, belief in extraterrestrial life is akin to idol worship in that it gives those who believe in it a more tangible reality that can be seen and touched, and worshipped.

So when I questioned Joyce more about opening doors, she expressed to me that she had been a science fiction fan, but that her real zeal was for Star Trek. Well, the main theme of Star Trek was, "To explore strange new worlds. To seek out new life, and new civilizations. To boldly go where no man had gone before." Like most of us who liked Star Trek, we watched it because we were enthralled about what the future held for mankind, and what sort of interesting space brothers might be encountered in such an adventure. We watched the space launches every year; saw our astronauts go to the moon and looked forward in expectation that perhaps we would see something marvelous in our lifetimes. In essence, we, mostly through ignorance, chose science over God, and most of us also chose to believe in UFOs.

But Joyce brought up another memory from farther back in her youth. Her father had an interest in the UFO phenomena. She related to me of having a memory where her father had heard about a large UFO flap (an outbreak of sightings) somewhere distant from their home. She said that he had expressed a desire to pack up the family and take a short vacation where the flap was occurring so that they

could witness what he thought was a wondrous phenomenon. Joyce said that they never did go on this short vacation to see the UFOs.

Some might say, "Well, they never did go, so how did this action invite these fallen angelic beings into her life?" The first thing we have to remember is that the actions of the head of the household have consequences on the rest of the family. When Joyce's dad showed interest in the phenomenon he invited it into his household and all who lived there. You can sort of see it easier if you've ever had Mormons or Jehovah's Witnesses come to your door. If you tell them that you are not interested they will, in most cases, not come back. But, if you express any interest in what they have to say, they will come back even if you later express a desire that they are not welcome anymore. Once the fallen angels see that they have sparked some sort of interest in the mind of a person, they will persistently pursue that person until they wear down that person so much that they are coerced to comply with the wishes of the malevolent beings.

The Proof Is in the Pudding:

We end this chapter by mentioning the most important part of Joyce's testimony; she is free from the abductions and from the entities that harassed her for so many years. Joyce is living proof that the name of Jesus Christ can stop alien abduction. More importantly, her life is proof that having a relationship with God by being born again by His Spirit through acceptance of Jesus Christ into their life can end alien abduction as a life's pattern.

Having talked to Joyce I have seen that there is a boldness in her life. She has taken back the ground that her alien abductors tried to take away. There is such a joy in her when she talks and she has found true liberty. We sincerely hope that everyone who reads this would realize that they do not have to live in fear of alien abduction; nor do they have to live downtrodden lives because of their experiences. All they have to do is to come to Jesus and live a life of meaning and hope. At the end of this book we explain how you can do just that, become free through a relationship with God, the creator of the universe.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN: Catherine's Testimony

-

I have had an interest in UFOs ever since I was a little child. I remember being in my pajamas with the whole neighborhood to watch *Sputnik*. I watched on TV as man landed on the moon. But I was not preoccupied with space or little green men or dinosaurs or any of that stuff kids got into back in the days of *Leave it to Beaver* and *I Love Lucy*. Once, along with three other people, I had a sighting of a UFO one evening at the beach. We even reported it to the police. Several times, over the years, I would have a strange feeling just before going to bed. The kind of feeling you get just before a bad storm comes. When I woke up the next morning, I would have the feeling that something happened during the night, but I just could not put my finger on what it could have been.

During one cold night in January of 2000, the realization of what was happening to me finally was revealed. Just after three o'clock in the morning, I woke up because I had been dropped. My head and right shoulder hit the bed from what seemed like about two feet in elevation. The fall was pretty hard, enough so to wake me up with a start. In the same instant, I opened my eyes and I also felt his breath expulsed on my face. What I saw just inches away was a gray alien. Just to his side stood another, both with their arms still under me as they were carrying me either from my bed or back to it.

I was terrified and my instinct was to immediately roll away to the opposite side of the bed so that I could get away from these beings. I noticed however that the rest of my body was suspended in the arms of at least two other grays. As I ripped my legs from their grip I felt quite a bit of pain and realized that I hurt my knee. So now I was in pain and I was scared to death, but I went back to sleep, which didn't make sense to me at the time, though I discovered later in my research that this is not uncommon. What they did after I fell asleep, I have no clue.

I got up in the morning and was greeted by my son who had dropped by. I told him what had happened the night before; how I had the weirdest dream and my son said, "Mom, that wasn't an alien, that was a demon." Well, a light went on in my head. From that moment on I realized that all that stuff about alien abduction had probably been happening to me for a long time and if they had not dropped me I may never have known they were real and I would never have remembered a single thing.

I got onto the internet, I went to the library; I read everything that I could find

on the subject of alien abduction. There was practically nothing in the public library about how to make it stop. I did read testimonials and I read how one woman had punched a gray in the head and there were others who thought they had successfully made it stop. I still wasn't getting any satisfaction and clear answers until I found a website where I found Joe Jordan and I got in touch with him and talked with him on the phone. He explained a few more things to me and sent me lots of things to read on others who had "made it stop for good." One real good book I read was *Come Sail Away* by Guy Malone.

A couple months later, I woke up because of a very loud noise that would remind you of the whine of a jet engine at a deafening pitch. I opened my eyes and saw four of them in my room; two of them at the door, one halfway across the room and one almost to the end of the bed, and they were coming toward me. And as I immediately went to say "NO," the word almost wouldn't come out of my mouth. The first "no" was an unintelligible "nnoooo," muffled and nearly impossible to make come out of my mouth because I was nearly paralyzed with fear. The second attempt to say "no" was a little more emphatic. The grays stopped moving towards me and started to look at each other. Then after my third "no" I was in full control of my fear and emphatically said "NO." The very next instant they just disappeared into thin air. Again, just as before, I got the feeling that I could sense their panic response to my being aware of their presence. So that is my experience. One realization is that this has probably been happening to me my whole life. My son once had a dream when he was small, about a tall and really skinny man who had taken him by the hand and led him down the street. This made me realize that they had most likely been messing with at least one of my children. This made me really, really angry; it's bad enough that they mess with me, but how dare they touch my children!

In the middle of the night, when these things happen, it is a natural tendency for people to think that it is a dream. But convincing me that it was not a dream was how hard my shoulder and head hit the bed when they dropped me. Then there is the breath I felt on my face; like at that point he lost his balance or his grip on me and expulsed air under the strain (they don't seem very strong anyway). Maybe it was because he was nearly as startled as I was. I do remember there was sort of an expression or maybe I just sensed that he was thinking, *This is not supposed to happen, what do we do now?* Then he turned his head to look at the one next to him when I started to pull my legs away from them and try to get away from this terror. Another convincing point is that I really hurt my knee in the process. I had pain in my knee for months after that.

In my research I have learned that it is typical for those experiencing these

things to just roll over and to go back to sleep. These creatures also do not expect you to remember the next morning what happened the night before. I can usually remember my dreams, but I have never had an alien dream or of spaceships or anything of the sort. This was definitely not a dream.

"And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils…" (spoken by Jesus, Mark 16:17).

I placed my faith in Jesus Christ and my faith has grown even stronger since God gave me power over these satanic attacks.

After my first experience and coming to the realization that these entities were demonic, just like my son had stated, the first thing that happened is that I got angry —madder than spit; how dare they! It is like being spiritually raped. Some people don't believe that abductees are being beamed-up into a spaceship. But if they weren't physically removing me, then they would not have dropped me! My main thought was, *How dare they do this to me, they have no right to do this to me and my children! Even if I believed they were from outer space, how dare they do this to me; but how dare Satan believe that he could get away with this, when I have already given my heart to Christ.*

The thought came to me that Satan does not have to mess much with the people who aren't giving Christ any respect at all. Those people have enough problems on their own. However he does want to victimize those who truly love the Lord. Realizing that my child had most likely been abducted and victimized, I was livid and I was literally ready to cut "ET's" head off, finding out that I could fight and win by embracing Christ and what I already knew about the promises of the Holy Bible. I already had the power and authority to cast out demons; with the faith of a mustard seed.

So I think I was more prepared the next time when I woke up and they were in my room, though I was nearly paralyzed with fear because the first "no" just barely came out of my mouth. It didn't stop me though, and even though I was terrified, I was determined that I was going to make them stop. I began to get those "nos" out of my mouth. If I could have gotten up and started swinging I think I would have. They were never going to hurt me again if I could help it.

I don't think they're gone, though. There was a long time where nothing happened, or maybe I just don't remember it. I know that I can fight, and let's face it, God wins. A while back I woke up for no particular reason. I didn't hear anything. It was like I felt a presence. As I opened my eyes, I saw, moving away from my bed very quickly, what looked like a short, dark gray-green troll thing that looked like it may have been wearing a cloak or a heavy oiled duster. It was so very

quick that it almost could have been a shadow, but it definitely was a solid object. I knew immediately what it was. So rather than freak out, I just prayed, “Okay, God, they’re back and I need you to cover me in your protection.”

When I go to sleep, I either tell God I’m tired and please protect me tonight, or I ask Him to arm me for battle. My terror is no less than it was from the very first moment, because let’s face it I’m fighting the devil, I have a right to be scared, but I am determined and trying very hard to embrace the full power of God. Apparently God thinks I am the right one for the job. God created the universe, so he can definitely get rid of these things. It is not easy and it is not fun, but I am willing and I don’t want to be a victim—I will not be a victim. If I ever wake up and they are there again, I hope I can get my hands on one of them before they get out.

Reflecting on all that has happened, I cannot say for sure if these things have stopped for good. The entity that I saw in my last visitation wasn’t the normal type of alien that people associate with alien abductions (it wasn’t a gray). It appears that since I now know the truth and can fight against them and win, they have taken on a different appearance. Through research I have learned, so I was not surprised that it appeared in a different guise. I knew that type existed. I was startled that it was now a more demonic being than the last two times. I guess I thought that the next time I would get to duke it out and it would be a gray, but it was surprising; scarier and different. I got the feeling that these troll things are tougher, smarter, and more vicious than the grays. The moment only lasted a second and then troll was gone. I do remember though, feeling that no matter what, I could have stood up to that thing.

Joe Jordan explained to me that through his research and the research of his colleagues, that there are basically three doors, or areas of our lives where these things might get a foothold. He explained that some people ask for the experiences to happen, out of a curiosity, or by thinking that it would be cool to fly around in a flying saucer or have some sort of communion with aliens. He said that the second way for them to come in is by unwittingly getting into occult practices or other things that seem innocent, but are actually call signs to aliens. He then said the third way is if there is a generational aspect, like if a relative is involved in secret societies or the occult.

I had basically all three of those doors open. My father was a Freemason, which is a secret cult. The Bible says not to do that. I was fascinated with ghosts. The Bible says not to do that too. (When the movie “the Exorcist” came out, I slept with the lights on for months after seeing it.) I was not totally void of discernment, though. I had a friend who got a Satanic Bible. I never read it or even opened its cover and I told her she should get it out of her house.

I would like to clarify that although I went to church as a child I was not what I now recognize as a real Christian. I don't remember my parents attending church much. They just dropped me off at Sunday school. My mother, although she didn't regularly attend church, did teach me to say my prayers at night. So I know that she knew about God, but I don't know if she ever embraced a real relationship with Him or not. I am grateful for the foundation that she made sure I received. If a mother never teaches a child to say their prayers to God at night, then the seed may never get planted in that child's heart. My father never taught me anything about God, nor did my grandparents. God just wasn't talked about around the dinner table. Christmas was about getting presents, and Easter was about the new dress and a basketful of candy.

When people talk about aliens from outer space, I tell them, "ET is real, but he's not an extraterrestrial, he's a 'spiritually-terrestrial.'" I am however careful about who I talk to about these things. Let's face it, you can't talk to just anybody about aliens and UFOs. I have to keep it simple when they ask me, "Where are they from?" I tell them about the angels that were cast out of heaven with Satan. When they consider this it usually piques their interest and makes them consider something that has never occurred to them before.

If they're interested enough and want to know more I go into some scientific basis. Scientists state that travel to Earth from a distant galaxy is impossible for biological beings; carbon-based cells simply cannot survive the trip. If people I talk to are believers in Christ then I tell them that they're more desirable for the devil than someone who doesn't give God a second thought. It is the greatest deception; how better to get the world's attention away from God, than to make people think that they're being invaded from outer space?

People have asked me what I do with those "ET" people; those UFO people that I know. I simply tell the truth; because there are a lot of people who are being victimized and need to know they can make it stop. My job is to let them know the true nature of these experiences.

One man that I remember talking to at a UFO conference wanted to tell us that we were not seeing the big picture when it comes to outer space. I reminded him that we were following the creator of outer space. I asked him if he had ever experienced unconditional love and when I did, he started to cry and left. This man's reaction spoke to me. I understood his pain. I know God touched his heart. He was searching for love and hoping to find it from space invaders. People look to the occult, to false religion, to cults, to wherever they think they can find unconditional love. They are searching for that magic combination that is going to

answer all their questions, and they are all pointed in the wrong direction.

I'm not presumptuous enough to think Christians have all the answers, because God's ways are not our ways, and His thoughts are not our thoughts. We will not understand Him completely until we get to Heaven. However, I can sure try to explain to these hurting people that they are not going to find unconditional love in aliens from another planet. The only way, the only true, pure love is Jesus Christ.

I am happy to say that my children are happy and mature Christians. I mentioned earlier my son had a dream when he was a child and in that dream a tall man took him by the hand and led him away on a walk. Because of the details of the dream I have made the determination that this was a five-year-old's description of a probable abduction experience. The dream terrified him and that was totally out of character for him as he never had nightmares. Aside from this one account, none of my children have told me that they have been harassed in any way. My husband and children have been supportive of me. We are not only a family, we're a team and we pray for each other and with each other. My children are grounded in Jesus Christ and they are serving Him in such a great way that I never really have to worry about them, and I find a great peace in that. I am confident of their true commitment to the Lord and of their salvation.

I would also like to note that I am confident that my children are competent in spiritual warfare. They are all familiar with my experiences and what I have done to fight against the enemy. If any of them were to wake up in the middle of the night and found anything evil in their room they would know exactly what to do. Even if they experience terror, their first instinct would be to call on the name of Christ.

Concerning the warfare I have to mention this. The night that they disappeared into thin air, I never even mentioned God's name, I just said "no" but I had already grounded myself in the promise of God's Word that He has already given us the power and authority. As His representative, I spoke whatever I could manage to get out of my mouth and all that I could say was "no." Now when they disappeared, did they go away or did they just become invisible? I don't know. I do remember getting down at the side of the bed, on my knees and praying, "Thank you God, for saving me."

I don't know for sure if these attacks will ever happen to me again, or to anyone in my family, but I wouldn't put anything past the devil. So we shall see what happens.

As the years progress, taking into account the way the world is now, there will be no avoiding telling my grandchildren about spiritual warfare. Evil is prevalent, and it will be even worse as the years pass. Just look at the nightly news broadcasts

and you will know the battlefield is in our own neighborhoods. It seems pretty clear to me that we are in the last days. After all, it has been two thousand years, and how much longer can God put up with things the way they are now and it keeps getting worse every day. Sooner or later "something has got to give." I expect God to appear any time now and put His foot down. His patience is long but, not forever.

I want to stress how important it is to find a church where people are fed with love and the Word of God. My church has a wonderful pastor who preaches from the Bible. He is a realist and does not candy-coat the truth about being a real Christian. He lets us know, this walk is hard and his sermons always end with a salvation message. No apologies.

Our church also mentors new believers. In some churches there is an invitation to come to the front to receive Christ; now sign up for Sunday school, then you're left on your own. We match new believers up with a mentor to answer questions and encourage you. We are reminded often that reading your Bible and spending time with God every day is the way to stay plugged into the power of God. We believe you should never leave a new Christian unarmed and unprepared. Too often believers fall away simply because they are not mentored and cared for by the church.

You can turn on the TV tonight and I'll just about guarantee that you will find something UFO-related to watch. All those reports and opinions never really answer any questions. There are only the basic questions left. What is it and why are they here? Who on all these programs is talking about the Christian explanation for the alien abduction experience? We need bold witnesses, even if they themselves are not victims in this way; people who are willing to say that there is no gray area with God.

When you get in front of the Father on Judgment Day, you're either going to get a warm welcome or a nonchalant rejection. There will be no "good try," because everything you've done in your life will amount to nothing without the saving grace of Jesus. Either you gave God all your respect or you did not. God is not fire insurance. You cannot wait until the last moment and expect Him to come to your rescue. You either really love God or not.

At the risk of embarrassment and ridicule, I will stand up and say what I can to help others who are looking for the truth. I am truly sorry that more Christians aren't even aware of this truth. They sure don't teach this stuff in Sunday school. But if you really study the Bible in depth, you will find plenty of spiritual warfare, and the keys and answers to win the battle.

As a victim, I felt terror, as though I had been raped in every sense of the word.

I realized that it had probably been going on for a long time and I was unaware of it. I felt defeated and angry, and far more than that, livid anger. Then I became determined; I was going to make it stop. There had to be a way and I was going to find it and I did find it in the power of Jesus Christ. Now I am resigned to this task. I am in God's army. I am on the front line. I am on the battlefield. I am so grateful for what God has done for me. No matter what I had done or who I was, Jesus was brutalized and murdered for me and I want to show Him my gratitude. No matter what people say about me; people made fun of Jesus too. It is an honor to serve Him no matter how hard this task may be. God proved His love for me. This is the least I can do for Him.

I am willing and able to stand against these satanic visitors. It isn't me though that has the strength. It is Jesus living inside of me that allows me and empowers me to fight on. I know the truth and no matter what people say about me I know there are people out there who need to hear my story.

Be safe in Christ.

CONCLUSIONS:

Just like in all of the cases that we have studied, there were open doors in Catherine's life; some that were opened by her, and at least one that was passed down to her by her adopted father.

Upon review of the videotaped interview of Catherine, conducted by Joe Jordan, Catherine told of her young adult years and expressed that she participated willfully in what society termed a culture of "sex, drugs, and rock and roll." It is important to stress what is meant by the first two items in the phrase "sex, drugs, and rock and roll." It might be misconstrued that we are saying that sex and drugs are to be abstained from by everyone to keep the doors from being opened. No, we are not saying that at all. What we are saying is that sex, when it is performed by a married couple, is perfectly okay, and in fact it is an act condoned and encouraged by God Himself. When however, it is performed outside of marriage it falls outside of the scope of practice as ascribed by God and then becomes sin.

Furthermore, when we examine drug use we can say with confidence that when legal medications are prescribed by a physician and taken as prescribed, there is no offense, but when used in an illicit manner then rebellion occurs and that opens up a door to the enemy.

When asked if she had any involvement with the occult, either outright or with what so many see as innocuous, she mentioned that she had been involved in many aspects of this area. Again we see open doors by which the so-called “aliens” could gain entry into her life.

While it is important to focus in part on what caused this dilemma in Catherine’s life, it is imperative to focus on the positive things that have occurred for her. First and foremost, Catherine decided that she wasn’t going to languor in her dilemma. She decided that she wasn’t going to let it continue. Like most mothers, she is protective of her children, and when she came to the realization that these entities were most probably bothering her children she became enraged. God Almighty has instilled into the instinct of all mothers, not only in His special human creation, but in the higher animals of His creation a fierce protection mechanism for a mother’s children. In many cases of alien abduction the women have been spurred into action when their offspring are threatened.

Once Catherine identified that what was happening to her wasn’t a dream or a hallucination, she started her search of how to terminate these experiences both for herself and her children. She researched the phenomenon and God in His infinite love and grace led her to Joe Jordan who had the answers. With the information at hand she started her warfare against the entities that were harassing her and with the name of Jesus Christ she fought them and she won. With the information that she now possesses she continues to fight, knowing that there will probably be more battles; but she has identified the enemy and she knows that in the end, the war is won by the side that she is fighting on.

And finally, Catherine knows how it feels to be helpless, what it feels like to not have the answers. She wants all people, both men and women to know that these entities can be overcome. She knows their true identity and where they come from; and she wants to help others to become free. This is the mark of a true soldier; one who will fight for the freedom of their own family and for others also, and one who wants to equip others to join in the fight so that we can all march on to victory. If you are having experiences and want them to stop, and you want to fight that intrusion into your private and personal life, then a personal relationship with God through Jesus Christ is the answer. You’ll find out more about that at the end of this book.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN: Bill's Testimony

During autumn of 1977 I had just started working at the Kennedy Space Center. During that time, I was married to my first wife and we felt the need to have Jesus in our lives so we started to attend a Baptist church at which time I made a profession of faith in Jesus and I was born again by His Spirit. I was raised as a Roman Catholic, so the Baptist church was all kind of new to me. We started going to this church and we really enjoyed this church. I really liked the pastor; he was a nice man and he was teaching us a lot. We never really received good teaching from Catholic school or the Catholic Church. One thing that we liked about this church is that every week a different family would have a Bible study in their home. After we became established in the church we decided to have one of the Bible studies in our home. A lot of the people who were attending this church were good friends of ours so that made it even more palatable to have a Bible study at our house. I think that this was some sort of trigger in my life. Before then I had had an interest in UFOs and paranormal things, but after I came to faith in Jesus things really started to happen.

It was just a short time prior to our having the Bible study at our home when I had my experience. On this particular day I had a normal day at work. As best as I can remember, this event happened on a Friday; it had to be a Friday because I had planned to do something the next day, and weekends were the only times that I didn't have to work. I got home from work that day and did the normal routine. I had my evening chores to do and I had to tend to our dogs. I think that I might have even gone out to the backyard to chop some wood because I noticed the coolness in the air and thought we might need the wood for a fire to keep us warm. It was just me and my wife at the time; this was before we had any children.

One of the things that I did at this time of the evening was I would go into the living room and sit in my chair to watch television. What I particularly liked to watch were the news programs. So I would stay up at night and watch the news at eleven o'clock. This particular night my wife had already gone to bed. My television was located in the corner of our living room and next to it was a big picture window that faced to the north. To the north of the house, across Highway 50 there was a big area of woods, that if my memory serves me correctly, was roughly thirty-nine thousand acres.

As I sat and watched television I noticed that outside my window there was a light that came down and settled over the woods. I was thinking at that time that the

light probably belonged to a helicopter and that maybe it was searching for drugs or something like that. This sort of thing was prevalent at this time, as it was the mid 70s. I tried to watch television, but my attention was always drawn back to that light above the woods. It was a very bright light, so much so that it shined brightly through the sheer red curtains that were in front of the window. The intensity of the light was like someone was pointing a bright searchlight at me. There looked to be an object that gave off light in all directions, but bright enough to look like a single, focused beam. Finally my curiosity got the best of me and I got up out of the chair and went to the window to look.

As I watched the light I noticed that an orange light came out of the bottom of the bright white one and it went down below the woods, behind the trees. I can only describe the color and intensity of the orange as being like the orange mercury vapor streetlights. I thought that this was sort of weird, but then I thought that perhaps it was a helicopter that lowered some people down to a marijuana field that might have been over there. Soon afterward, the big bright light that had been hovering over the woods went down below the trees too, like it was landing. When it went down, the woods looked sort of strange. The glow that came from behind the trees was sort of eerie. The glow resembled when you're driving at night and you are coming close to a large city and can see the overall illumination that the city lights make in the distance. Knowing that the next day was Saturday I decided that I would take my dogs for a walk in the woods the next day to see if I could find anything. It was getting late, so I closed the curtains, turned the TV off and I went to bed.

I can't remember how much time elapsed, but I lay in bed for what seemed like a very long time, trying to get to sleep. To make matters worse, my dogs started to bark a lot. The dog pen wasn't too far from my bedroom window so I opened up the window and yelled at my dogs, telling them to be quiet. They would quiet down but would soon start barking again. This process went on for a while and I must have yelled at the dogs three or four times. I was getting pretty tired of this process. Finally, I went back to bed and all of a sudden I felt like I was frozen; like I was paralyzed. I was getting scared and to further complicate things I noticed that everything was turning gray. I couldn't see anything but a gray fog, a gray smoky fog all around me. It felt like there was someone around me; someone other than my wife who was lying beside me. So I didn't know what was going on. I tried to holler to my wife to help me but because I was paralyzed nothing was coming out of my mouth. Inside, in my mind, I was yelling, but nothing came forth from my lips. I was so afraid; I've never been that afraid in all of my life.

I started to feel like I was being lifted up off of the bed; well, not really lifted,

but like I was levitating or floating up. I kept getting more and more scared and I kept trying to scream out, but still nothing was coming out of my mouth; my vocal cords were paralyzed too. While I was floating there above the bed something even worse happened to me. I had a feeling like someone had stuck a pole up my rectum and was holding me up on that pole. I was so scared, so hysterical and I didn't know what to do. At that time, I don't know why, I can't even tell you how I knew how to do this; I called out the name of Jesus. I said, "Jesus," or "Jesus help me," or "Jesus, Jesus, Jesus…" I can't remember really exactly how I said His name. But I have to say that when I did cry out for Jesus, it was like that word absolutely horrified or hurt that entity, or whatever it was that was holding me up on that pole. At the same time that I sensed that the entity had been harmed by the name of Jesus, the pole that held me up was removed and I was thrown back into bed. My wife woke up and asked me why I had been jumping on the bed. I looked at her and told her that I had just had the worst nightmare that I had ever had in my entire life. I tried to explain it to her the best that I could but she looked at me like I was crazy. I was just lying there with sweat dripping off of me; lying there sweating in the cool of the nighttime and she could not understand. She's now my ex-wife, but to this day she doesn't want to discuss any of this sort of stuff. To this day, if someone walks up to her and tells her that I have been talking to them about this stuff she'll tell them that I am crazy.

I have no reason to lie about all this. It happened to me and I know that it happened. It has affected my life. It affected my marriage and a whole lot of other things in my life. There were a lot of questions for a long time that I could not figure out. Just a short time after our divorce started is when I got in touch with Joe and Wes. I wanted (and needed) to talk to somebody about this stuff. I really wanted to understand what had happened. For a long time I thought that I had been abducted. Even though I knew what I did to stop it, and it didn't happen after that, I still kept feeling like it was aliens who did this to me; this was an alien thing. I didn't want to look at the fact that what happened to me was a spiritual thing. I knew it, but I wouldn't confess it as being such.

The fear of the experience stayed with me for quite some time. I lived my life in terror of being home alone at night or of walking by an open window when it was dark out. The curtains and the drapes had to be closed after sunset. I was afraid to go outside of the house when it was dark. If my wife wanted to go out at night to do something I would just refuse to go. Whenever she went anywhere at night she went by herself because I would not go outside. This fear was in me for three months or more.

At this time I had a good friend at work whose name was Leroy and he was a

Pentecostal minister. I shared this story with him and it scared him to death. I never really shared my experience with my pastor or anyone in the church because I didn't want them to think that I was crazy. I asked Leroy to come over to my home, which he did and he put oil in the corners of the house. To this day I don't know what he was trying to do, but I do know that he was trying to help me so that these things didn't happen again. He was scared to death the whole time he was at my home. I think that the fear came from two different sources. The first source of fear came from what I had told him about the experience and the second source came from the fact that our neighborhood was quite rural. We had just come out of the 60s with the civil rights movement and our area had a lot of people who I guess you would call "Rednecks" who didn't like black people and Leroy was black. He had come over in the evening and he wanted to get out of the area before it got dark. He never really wanted to talk about my experience after that time. Leroy has long since passed away. He was a good man who cared about my welfare and I miss him.

We became quite involved in the church that we were attending. We had the Bible studies at our home and we learned a lot from them. Also, the pastor, whose name was Tom was very knowledgeable and he taught me a lot about the Bible and a lot about God. Even with all of this new knowledge about God and His Word, I was still hesitant about attributing my experience to a spiritual incident. As strange as it might sound now, I actually thought that the extraterrestrial hypothesis sounded a lot more intriguing, dare I say that it sounded "cooler." But to take it a step farther, I have to say that I can never remember any church that I attended before that time ever teaching us about demons, or demonology or fallen angels. We had learned about Satan, Adam and Eve, the fall of mankind, and Jesus being tempted by Satan, but we were never taught much if anything about the spiritual realm. I don't know if they neglected to teach about those things out of disregard for the subject; I think that perhaps they just didn't understand about them and didn't want to teach on something that they had no knowledge of. As knowledgeable as Pastor Tom was, I think that the spiritual studies were just something that he didn't want to touch on. I have found that just about every church that I have been to over the years has taken the same attitude toward this subject. They don't see the similarities between the things that happened then and the things that are happening today. I have to admit that it took me a long time to put it together too. But even when you (Joe Jordan) put the connection together and you came to me with the answers I just shrugged you off because I thought that you were trying to throw a "religious" angle toward me and I wasn't going to go there. I thought I had an understanding of how God was, and that was my understanding and I wasn't going to let people push religion on me. I know that I used the name of Jesus to stop the terror that happened to me that one night, but for some reason I never put it together.

I truly think that the experience that I had that one night wasn't the first time that I had been harassed by demonic forces or fallen angels. I think I need to clarify some experiences that happened to me when I was younger. I think that these things might have been what got me curious about the paranormal, or UFOs or things like that.

My father died when I was three years old. A lot of people tell me that it is impossible to remember things that far back, but I remember that night. I remember the night when the ambulance came to take him away. I remember it explicitly. When I was three years old I was having bad dreams; that is what we called them back then. Back in those days my mother and father slept in two twin beds in the same room. When I would have these bad dreams my father would come in and get me, and he would bring me into their room and put me into bed beside him. The night that the ambulance came I had another one of those dreams, so I was in bed with my dad. I guess that I had better explain the dreams.

During that time we lived in southern Illinois and there were many times when I would find myself sleeping out on the front lawn, not a typical thing for a three-year-old kid. And while I was there I would see the big lights moving toward me, coming to get me. I would try to hide by something out by the road so that these big lights would not be able to get me. This was a nightmare that I had repeatedly. That's also the same dream that I had the night that my father came in to get me to bring me into bed with him. That night my father woke up with a very severe headache. My dad told me to go and wake my mother up and tell her that he was sick. I did what he told me to do. A little later the ambulance came to take him away and it was the last time that I saw him. The autopsy revealed that he died from a malignant brain tumor. From what I understand now, the tumor was a *schwanoma*, a tumor that forms on the nerves either in the extremities or in the brain. But getting back to the dreams; I have to say that they were the first strange things in my life.

After dad died my mother had to work. She worked in a nursing home that was just up the street and there were many nights when I was alone. When I went to bed I would always have a radio next to me. When I crawled into bed I would always pull the covers over my head because I was afraid to look out and see what was out there. You see, I had always remembered the dreams about the lights coming to get me and I was always afraid at night.

There was another incident that I remember. I had a friend named Butch that I used to pal around with. Butch's father owned a Gulf service station in our area. Butch was the oldest of eight kids and he was my age so we became friends. They lived way out in the country, north of our little town in Illinois. He would invite me

out to his home sometimes on the weekend and I would spend the whole weekend with him and his family. I liked it out there; it had a big barn and other neat things.

I remember this one particular night. His dad had this Mercury car, and it was one of those cars that the entire back window would go up and down. We had to have been eleven or twelve years old or somewhere around there. One night around ten o'clock Butch's dad closed up the gas station and the three of us got into that Mercury; Butch and I got into the back seat. When we got out of town his dad put that window down and Butch and I would climb halfway out onto the trunk of the car and lie on our backs and look at the sky. We used the calf portion of our legs to keep from falling out of the car, placing them like braces on the tops section of the seats.

This particular night we were on the trunk looking at the stars when all of a sudden this big, bright light lit upon us and on the whole car. Butch and I got scared, really scared, because it was like this spotlight was shining down on us. We couldn't hear anything but the wind blowing past the car as Butch's father drove. All of a sudden we heard Butch's father yell out, "What in the world is that?" Butch and I were so scared that we were on the floorboard of the backseat, hiding. We answered his dad by yelling out that we didn't know what it was; all we saw was the light. Butch's dad was trying to stick his head outside the window to see what was making the light.

To get to Butch's house we had to turn off of the main road, onto a gravel road and then we had to make a couple of other turns before we got would finally get there. When we made the first turn there was a sheriff behind us in his car. He was right behind us and he was staying with us; all this time the light still lighting up our car. We finally got to Butch's house and the sheriff pulled in right behind us. When we looked, the big light that had been above us was across the road, just hovering. So we were all standing there and the sheriff said, "What in the world is that?" We were all standing there talking about it. We honked the horn and everyone came out of the house to look at it with us. The object was the size of a basketball held out at arm's length and it looked like one of those marbles that has the swirling inside of it, but it was turning and swirling. It was orange and blue and had all different colors of swirls. One of Butch's older family members made the remark, "What *is* that?" and upon hearing that the sheriff said, "I don't know, but it doesn't belong here," and he reached into his car and got his shotgun out. He raised the gun up and pointed it at the object and when he did, the object just blinked out and wasn't there anymore. We all stayed up a long time that night talking about what we saw.

As I mentioned earlier, after my encounter in 1977 I wanted to know what happened to me. I was a born again believer in Jesus Christ; having been baptized

and for a while I even taught a Sunday school class. I was however uncomfortable with the thought that what happened to me was a spiritual encounter. It was far easier and a lot cooler to believe that I had had an encounter with extraterrestrials from another world. Thinking back I have to say too that when the alien abduction event is seen through an "extraterrestrial" window it doesn't seem as scary to the natural man as does the notion that this thing might be a spiritual thing. When the word "demon" is injected into a subject it makes it sound dark and mysterious and downright frightening.

Before I came to know Jesus as my savior I actually thought that it would be cool to be visited by aliens. I held on to this thought until the day that I had my experience and felt the dread and terror that night. For the longest time I would look at the universe and think what many people think; that the universe is far too vast for us to be the only life forms in it. There just had to be aliens out there, and if there was, why couldn't they be my friends? I wanted that to happen to me, until after that night.

After my encounter with terror and after the initial shock of the experience wore off I quickly suppressed my thoughts and feelings about what had happened. Many things happened to me between the time of the experience and when I finally listened to God and got my life right with Him. I want people to know that although I was born again, I still looked for other reasons for what happened to me and I didn't trust Jesus to be my Lord.

One of the things that happened is soon after my experience my wife (my first wife) became pregnant. I don't know if this has anything to do with what happened to me, but if it has anything to do with the UFO realm, you know what people in this field surmise, then perhaps it's related to what happened that night. About six weeks into the pregnancy my wife woke me up one night and she told me that she was bleeding. She said that she needed to go to the hospital and I got dressed and rushed her to the emergency room. The doctors took her into the emergency room and after a short amount of time the doctor came out and pulled me aside. He told me that he was at a loss for an explanation for what he had just seen, but that what he saw does happen sometimes. He said that my wife had all the signs of being pregnant; there was a placenta, there was everything there and in place, like she was pregnant, but there was no child. I was puzzled and questioned him some more. He responded saying that they don't understand it, but sometimes it happens. I don't know what happened, but after my UFO experience, and looking at it from that looking glass, I started to research stuff like this. I read a lot of stories about people being abducted, and about them (the aliens) taking women and impregnating them and then removing the babies and I thought that perhaps this was an explanation for what had

happened to my wife. I talked to my wife about this and she would never accept that this might have been the case in her losing our first baby. Not long after that my wife became pregnant again and later she gave birth to our son. Fifteen months after he was born she gave birth to our daughter.

For a long time I was confused about what had happened and I would try to research it and analyze things in my mind but after a while I just decided to push that stuff to the back of my mind and deal with everyday life. It was a good thing that my children were born because they became the focus of my life and it allowed me to get away from obsessing about the whole UFO arena.

In the mid 1990s my wife and I were having some problems and after a while we decided that we would separate; eventually we divorced. After we were divorced, and for a long time, I would tell my ex-wife that she needed to take a deep look inside to see what was going on with her. Well it hit me one day that I needed to take a good look at myself so that I could get answers for why I was the way I was. At that time, my curiosity was sparked for what had happened the night of my alien encounter; what happened to us, and what transpired that night. It was something that was real in my life, and I knew that it was real, and I wanted to get some answers.

About 1996 I started to read John Mack's book, *Abduction*, and it fascinated me when I read some of the similarities between what had happened to me and what happened to some of the people in the book. I wanted to find someone local that I could share with and I felt led to go to the MUFON (Mutual UFO Network) website and I found that they had a local meeting. So I decided to go to the meetings to get some answers. I called a friend from work, who was also an old high school friend and we decided to start attending the MUFON meetings together. This was all beneficial because I met some interesting people at these meetings. Two people in particular, Joe and Wes, listened to my story and we did a taped interview. Later they took that interview, condensed it and it was published in quite a few articles and papers.

At or about this time I was working out at the Kennedy Space Center. On this particular day a space shuttle had just landed and I was indirectly involved in the process of maintaining equipment for the landing procedure. I had worked a regular shift that night and after I had finished up I went home to rest because I had to come back into work later that night. The shuttle had been rolled up to the building and all of the equipment for the post-flight check was still running. I had been reading a book that night because the process is boring and I needed to entertain myself. I was alone there and as I sat there it felt like some familiar experience was starting to happen to me. As the feelings came over me I felt that I should just sit there and let

the experience play out. I wanted to stay alert so I could know exactly what would happen. I felt as though I was being lifted up and I was going through the floor of the loft that was above in the building. It was as though everything above me had opened up and I was going through that floor, and then it was like the roof opened up and I was going up in this light that above the building. That is the last thing that I remember. The next thing I know, I was sitting behind the wheel of the vehicle that I drove while I was at NASA. I was a good three miles or more from where I had been with my book at my worksite building. I was sitting at the gate and realized that the guard at the gate was talking to me, telling me that he would let me into that area so that I could do my job. I was thinking to myself, "How did I get here?" I didn't remember driving the three miles from my office to the gate where I was now sitting.

I do remember one thing. When I got out of the vehicle I felt wonderful. I felt good, like I had a lot of energy. I did my job, left the area, the guard closed up the gate and I was on my way down the highway. However, as I drove along I noticed that my ear felt strange. As I reached into my ear with my finger, I felt something hard in there. I took a rag that was sitting on the seat and I used it to wipe the inside of my ear. When I looked at the rag I noticed that what was sitting on the cloth was a bloody scab. At the same time I felt something running down my face, coming from my nose. Well, all of the bleeding soon stopped and I went back and finished my job for that night.

One day I was working at my job out at the Kennedy Space Center, the day of the second Mars launch, and a well-known NASA official came up to me and asked me, "Did you see them?" Now I don't know why this man, whom I really didn't know, would walk up to me and ask me if I had seen something that was obviously incredible. I guess that he had seen me reading John Mack's book about abduction and he realized that I was interested in the UFO/abduction phenomenon. I asked him what he was talking about. He said, "You didn't see them out there?" He said, "Yeah, these planes were out there chasing these lights all over the place before the launch." Later on I found out that there were more than fifty witnesses to the event that day.

Another thing happened that I feel is noteworthy. I worked at another position at the Space Center and I had a work partner that was a woman. This woman was very religious and she made it very clear to me that unless I wanted to talk about God, or the Bible, she didn't want to talk to me. This is a very difficult work relationship to have with someone you work with day after day. She certainly didn't want to hear about my interest in UFOs and stuff. One of our jobs was to visit a site on the center and to ensure that it was closed and locked up before a launch. We had

to inspect the site so that we didn't lock anyone in the there. As we were departing the site we came to a little mound that we had to drive over and as we approached the top we could see one of the shuttles on the launch pad with all of the floodlights on it. As I looked I saw an orange light fly in from the ocean and over the space center. I asked my partner if she had seen it and as she looked up the orange light made a u-turn right around the launch pad; I mean it was right at the height of the shuttle and it shot right back out over the ocean right where it came from. My coworker saw it and the words that came out of her mouth were, "What the heck was that?" I didn't know what to say, but I remarked to her that it was my guess that they (the aliens) gathered more information from that one pass than we can in months and months of research and study. After this sighting, even my coworker started to see things.

One day in 1995 or 1996, a guy who drove truck for our site didn't show up for work. Because he didn't come in I had to drive the truck that night. My coworker (the same woman mentioned above) drove shotgun with me that night. We had to go to a site to pick something up and she was standing behind the truck to guide me because I had to back up. I looked in my rearview mirror to get directions from her and when I looked, I saw her just looking up in the sky, her eyes affixed on something. I leaned out the window and asked her what was wrong, but she just kept staring up at the sky. Then I noticed that her head had turned and she was looking up, but in the opposite direction. A asked her again what was wrong and she said to me, "You didn't see that?" I said, "See what?" Then she said, "There was this big black triangle thing and it flew directly over the top of us, flying slowly. It blocked out everything up above it and it flew right over the top of the VAB (Vehicle Assembly Building) and just coasted off." I told her that I didn't see anything like that and she was curious how I could miss something that obvious.

I know that these things are real. I don't understand how some people see them while other people don't. I don't understand how two people can be standing side by side and one will see it and the other won't. I had a friend who was a commercial fisherman and he would tell me of all sorts of things that he saw that he couldn't explain.

As I was searching for answers it came to my attention that the whole alien abduction phenomenon, what I now know to be demonic or fallen-angelic harassment, comes our way because of doors that we, or our ancestors, have opened. Joe Jordan told me about this and it caused me to do some soul-searching as well as some genealogical studies. In one of our interviews, Joe asked me if I had ever been involved in secret societies, like the Masons, and at the time I told him that I wasn't aware of any familial involvement in such things.

Recently, I have discovered that my grandfather was really high in the Masons, like a 32nd- or 33rd-degree, something like that. My father wasn't involved, as far as I know. I know that the Catholic Church really frowns on Masonic membership, and my father was in the process of joining the Catholic Church when he died. Anyway, I wanted to do a family history, to do a family tree sort of thing, so I was looking around and I discovered that my great, great grandfather was involved in the Knights Templar. It was the Civil War era and I found some sword on some Civil War preservation site that has his name on it. All of this was new, and kind of a shock to me because I didn't know any of this stuff. I found out recently from a family member about my grandfather being a member of the Masons. That explains why my mother's side of the family wasn't really thrilled about my mother marrying my father, because my mother's family was very strict Catholic.

I find it quite interesting that there are a lot of Masons working out at the Space Center. It is also a fact that every director of the Space Center, since its inception, has been 32nd- or 33rd-degree Masons. I have personally been approached twice by people out there who have wanted me to join the Masonic Lodge. I have declined both invitations. I have tried to get information on my great, great grandfather and I have been blocked on every avenue I have approached for information. I am told that this is because the Knights Templar is a very secretive organization.

I want to go more in-depth as to what this experience did to me, how I searched for answers, and how it affected me between the time of my horrifying experience and the time that I finally "got it" and understood as well as could accept what had happened, and who in fact had done this thing to me. As I mentioned earlier, deep down in my mind I knew what had happened to me, and who had done it to me, but I suppressed this because I wanted it to be aliens from outer space. There was a sense of notoriety in the notion that my experience was related to the UFO craze, whereas if I had told people that it was demonic, they would have labeled me a religious fanatic and would not have wanted to hear the story, let alone want to talk about it. The few people whom I shared my experience with thought that I was crazy, but thinking that it was of extraterrestrial origin sort of whet my ears. It confirmed my belief that there must be something more to this UFO/abduction phenomenon. I felt special because I felt like I was given some sort of insight that there was more out there, that life had more meaning than the normal "human experience."

For the most part, I felt that people didn't want to hear about my story. Life has taught me that people like to live their own cozy lives and they don't want to be bothered by outside influences. Because my story was extraordinary, people don't want to look at it, and many of them looked at me like I was crazy because of what I

said happened. I knew that it happened, and I could not deny it. I wanted somebody to believe me, but even my own family treated me like I had gone off the deep end. They don't want to look into such things because these things are scary. We hear many people say, "Why don't these aliens, or whatever they are, come down and land on the White House lawn?" or "Why doesn't the government come clean and tell us what is going on?" Well, I don't have a reason, except to say that most people just don't care. People are sort of like sheep. They just want to go out in the field and feed and get what they need. They don't want to hear anything that will make them uncomfortable. We just want to follow the shepherd around and we don't want to deal with anything that is bigger than ourselves. And this kind of thing; if we're talking about demons and demonic possession, or if we're talking about aliens coming down and taking people from their homes and doing experiments on them… that is pretty big for some people to have to deal with. I understand why people don't want to come forward to report these things, because they are afraid. They will have to admit that there is something more and what's even scarier for them, they will have to deal with it.

That is the way that I felt for a long time. I just pushed it aside and went on with my life, living life as I saw fit. But just like with our faith in Jesus, we tend to stray away, but He'll always jerk us back to walking on the straight path. He'll let us go out to the end of our rope but He will always pull us back in. It is the same way that people approach things when they are dealing with things that are a lot bigger than them (i.e. the UFO/abduction phenomenon), especially if they are not Christians. If they are not believers in Christ Jesus, then the world presents them with a myriad of things that it could be. They're given scenarios that say that they can be aliens, or they can be inter-dimensional creatures, it could be people from time travel; it can be all of these different things and that is a big thing for them to have to deal with.

Yet, if these things happen to a Christian and they study the Bible, they can see how this parallels things that have happened before in biblical times; how these things are similar to UFO experiences. This sort of study makes it plain that what *is* happening is Satan, and his plan to deceive mankind in order to get what he wants.

Between the time of my initial experience in bed that one night, and the time that the Holy Spirit finally got through to me it seemed that I walked in a big circle. In my search for the truth about UFOs I walked down several different avenues. I tried Silva Mind Control for a while in search for the answers and I tried other things as well. I researched about mind vibrations and how that might help me to get the answers. I studied subliminal messaging for a short time. I read about Hemi-Sync to see if that would afford me a doorway to the supernatural. I even thought for

a time that we were remnants of an extraterrestrial race, whose memory of their distant ancestors was washed away with time. Thinking about what made me look for answers outside from where I should have gone, I think I have to say that my search came primarily from two sources: a seduction by the enemy, and the fact that most Christians (who are supposed to be the prime authority on spiritual warfare) really didn't have any answers that could adequately explain what the UFO trend was, let alone the abduction experience.

I have to be honest though and place some of the blame on myself. I did have people like Joe Jordan and his associate, and people like him who were trying to tell me the truth. While they were Christians and they did have the correct answers and motives, I wasn't ready to hear the truth. I was convinced that there had to be something more to all that was happening and it couldn't be as simple as the devil and his emissaries trying to deceive me. I was convinced that in such a vast universe, there had to be other creatures out there. I used to think, *Who's to say that we're the only ones or that we're the greatest thing going?* I still didn't want to believe that God created us as a very special creation. I thought that perhaps God just created us and then took a "hands off" attitude toward us. I thought that perhaps He created many other peoples all over the universe and was tending to them while He waited for us to evolve into whatever He wanted us to be. If there was something else out there then I wanted to look for that something else.

It was definitely a seduction and seeing that I am a Christian, and I have to be honest, I have to admit that there are times when I feel like I am being drawn back to that seduction. Many people tell me that since I am a believer in Jesus that I will not see UFOs anymore, but I do still see them and that is why I carry my camera with me all the time and I take pictures of what I see. I show them the pictures and they tell me that they can't identify what I have photographed. I tell them that we then have to classify it as a UFO because it is an object in the air that they can't identify. While it is hard for a lot of Christians to believe that these entities are actually angelic or demonic, if they believe that they exist at all, it is even harder for the person without Jesus Christ. They go to people of the world for answers and are given a myriad of explanations; that these entities might be aliens, or inter-dimensional creatures, it could be people that are time traveling; it can be one or more of all of these different things. This is a lot for them to deal with when they are confronted with the UFO/Alien thing. However, if you're a Christian and you do a lot of studying you can see that this isn't anything new; that it happened before the Flood of Noah, and after the flood too and that all of these things are similar to the UFO experiences, and it says right there that this is Satan and the deception, that he is deceiving mankind in order to get what he wants.

I have asked myself many times why I have been harassed by these entities. I have been told by many well-meaning people in the Christian community that if I was truly born again, I would not see these things and would not experience what I have experienced. In my quest to know why these things happen to me and not to other people I have been presented one scenario that I feel best explains why I keep seeing UFOs and why I had all of my experiences *after* I became a believer in Jesus. The simple answer is that I am a threat to the enemy. I am a cause of consternation to the powers of darkness and because of this I am targeted for harassment. It has been explained to me that the people who are going through life, who are doing the symbolic "religious" things... Even some who are doing the right things and who have a relationship with Jesus Christ, who are going through the ritual motions (going to church two or three times a week, Sunday morning and Sunday night, who are maybe active in their church); they're not a threat there to the enemy. A person becomes a threat to the enemy when they take the Gospel of Truth outside of the church and take it to the people of the world.

Now, this is where I have been a threat. I have decided to become vocal and to tell people that these entities aren't extraterrestrial and that they aren't here to help mankind. I've decided to go through life without the blinders on and I am actually observant of things that are going on around me and because of that I walk a different lifestyle than a lot of other people. I've heard of other illustrations from other people like myself, people in their same family, all God-fearing Christians (some of which are able to look at the broad scope of what is going on both in the physical world and the spiritual world and are able to put together what they see from a biblical view), and others in the same family who when presented with such things seem to deny what they see and retreat back to the safety bubble of what might be called denial.

As I mentioned before, between the time that I had my initial experience in the bedroom that one night and the time that I finally understood what a relationship with Jesus Christ was, I had walked in a large circle. During that time I was in denial that the so called extraterrestrials were actually spiritual in nature and that the answer to my dilemma was as simple as walking in fellowship with my Lord and God and believing in the power of His name, even though His name is what ended the terror of that night so many years ago.

What brought an end to that circle walk is a story that totally renewed my faith in Jesus and made Him so real in my life that it still makes me quite emotional when I tell it to people. It was around Thanksgiving (late November) of 2005 that my son, who was twenty-six years old at the time, came to me with some very bad news. He told me that he had been having pain in his leg, and that his girlfriend made him go

to the doctor. The doctor had him go to the radiologist where they took an x-ray of his leg. He was then referred to a specialist because the x-ray revealed that he had a tumor in his leg that was actually eating the bone. This news devastated me. I have always been the type of father who has been very protective of my children. I've always had the attitude that, "You can do anything you want to me, but don't touch my kids because if you do you are in trouble." Well, all of a sudden this thing had come into our lives and I felt so helpless; there was absolutely nothing I could do.

So we went to the doctor and my son had MRIs and many other tests to find out exactly what sort of tumor this was. All of the tests confirmed the same fact, that my son had chondrosarcoma; a malignant bone cancer. They said that it was possible that he had this tumor since he was an infant and that it had kept growing slowly as he grew into manhood. The tumor was in the little bone that runs down the shin from the knee.

To make matters worse, my son didn't have any health insurance and neither of us had any extra cash lying around to help pay for everything that would have to be done to cure my son. I wasn't walking with God at the time and had pushed Him out of my life, so at this time I really didn't think of relying on Him for anything in this new crisis. We finally found a doctor in Orlando and he agreed to take on this case, but he told us that we would have to pay him in cash every time that we brought my son in for an appointment. So I went ahead and cashed in a lot of my retirement savings and sold some things. I told my son that we were going to fight this thing no matter what the cost would be.

Well, on December 18th of that year the Holy Spirit got a hold of me. The day before this I told my wife that we needed to go back to church. We hadn't been to church in a long time, a very long time. She was surprised, but very willing to go back to church. Since my wife was Catholic, we decided to head down to the Catholic Church down the street. It's the same church that I went to when I was a teenager. When we were at the church I just sat in the pew. I didn't feel like doing all of the Catholic traditional things that are done during a service. I did get down on my knees and when I did, I started to cry a lot. I cried just about the whole time I was there. When we got outside after the mass one of my friends came up to me and when he saw how I looked he got one of the priests to come over and talk to me about what was going on. The priest told us that he would pray for us and pray for my son. I really appreciated his sentiments.

When we left, my wife wanted to head on over to Wal Mart so we drove over there. We were walking around there and I was feeling very depressed. I was in a daze about everything. I couldn't see why God was allowing this to happen to my son. In my mind I thought that my son had never done anything wrong and that he

was a good boy; why would God allow this? I guess that I was blaming God for all that was going on. As I walked around I heard a “still small voice” (I believe it was the Holy Spirit) that told me to go to the vitamin aisle and inside myself I questioned why I would even need to go to the vitamin aisle for? My wife came to me and said that she was ready to leave but I told her that we couldn’t go yet, that we needed to go to the vitamin aisle; it was a compulsion that I could not resist. So I arrived at the vitamin aisle, the whole time trying to rationalize why I was even there. I thought that perhaps my son was lacking some sort of vitamin and God would show me what to get for him.

While I was standing there a man walked up to me and he started to talk to me like I was an old buddy or an old friend. I had never seen this man before in my life, but I will never forget him. He had on an orange and yellow plaid shirt, which I thought was as ugly as can be and he wore a pair of blue work pants and some work shoes. He was kind of scruffy and unshaven but he was very friendly. He talked to me and told me that he used to have cancer but that it was now gone. This struck me as sort of strange, that he would bring up such a subject to a stranger right at the start. So I asked him what he meant when he said that he had cancer but that it was now gone. He told me that he is a Christian, and then he pointed to his left shoulder and said that he once had a large melanoma there. He then explained that the melanoma had grown fingerlike things deep within his body and that it had spread to other parts of his body too. He mentioned again that he was a Christian, and he told me that the elders of the church had come to his house and that they put their hands on him and prayed for him. His wife had gotten some stuff that she called black salve and that every night she would put the black salve all over the melanoma. After two or three weeks he had woken up one morning and he noticed that the tumor was lying on the sheet of the bed. He looked at his shoulder and there was a big hole there, and it was the ugliest thing he had seen in his life, but the tumor was out. After a few weeks the hole just healed up. He said that he went back to the doctors and that after a few tests the doctors told him that there was no sign of melanoma anywhere in his body. That was his story.

About that time his wife walked up. What was really strange is that my wife is from Central America and having been raised there she speaks fluent Spanish. This gentleman’s wife was from Peru so they were off to the side talking to each other. After a couple of minutes the gentleman’s wife turned to me and told me that she wanted me to go home that afternoon, to take my Bible and to read three Psalms and then she stressed that it was important that I do what she said. So we finished our conversation, parted company and my wife and I went home.

Well, I got home and didn’t do what she told me to do. I just wanted to sit and

wallow in my own sorrow over the whole situation with my son. I was sitting on the couch watching television, flipping through the channels and enjoying my misery I guess. While I was sitting there my wife came out of the bedroom and she threw my Bible across the room at me and she told me, "Here, read those Psalms that the lady told you to read!" Well, I caught the Bible and it literally had dust all over it. That is how long it had been since I read the Bible. I told my wife that I would read the Psalms and I turned the television off and opened the Bible to read the Psalms that the woman told me about. As I read the Psalms it seemed that there was nothing there for me, absolutely nothing! To me, it had nothing to do with my situation; I didn't understand it, I didn't get it. I got very angry and disgusted. I thought, *I'm at the lowest point of my life and I feel so helpless.* There was nothing that I could do to help my son. I had gone to church for answers, and although I felt good when I was there, I never did get any answers there, and now this lady gave me these three Psalms, and I thought that maybe there was a chance that I'd get an answer, and then I read them and there was nothing there for me.

Feeling mad and helpless I took the Bible and I threw it on the couch beside me. I lost it and told God that I had never felt so bad in all my life. I told Him that I had never felt worse and that this was the lowest point in my life. I told Him that He needed to do something to encourage me because I need encouragement real bad. I asked Him what He wanted from me and told Him that I just didn't know…that I just didn't get it. I told Him, "I'm so stupid that you're going to have to hit me in the head with it, because I just don't get it! And while you're at it, how do I talk to my son about all of this because he doesn't even want to bring up the subject. He thinks he's going to die. He's scared to death, I'm scared to death and he gets upset when we talk about what we need to do. I need to know how to talk to him!"

The next thing I know (and this is not me, the thought never crossed my mind and I wasn't thinking anything), my hand literally reached out for the Bible that I had thrown down on the couch. My hand went there, outside of my control, and I was literally in shock about that. All in one movement I reached the Bible, threw it open, and then my hand went down and stopped on a page. I was scared because I had never had anything like this happen to me before. So, I said to myself that I had better see what is going on, and I pulled the Bible over to me and looked underneath my fingers. The words that were underneath my fingers said, "I will not leave you or forsake you." At that moment I felt as if God had come over to me, picked me up and given me a hug. I knew that God was real. I knew that my son was going to be okay. Maybe his problems weren't going to instantly go away, but I knew that he was going to be okay.

So I jumped up off the couch, crying, and ran back to my wife who was in the

bedroom. I was trying to choke out my words to tell her what had just happened. Now, since my wife is a Latina and her English is not that good, sometimes it is a bit difficult for us to understand each other, but it was as if at that moment that she instantly knew that something big happened to me. She cried when I explained to her what had just happened. All that night I had such a peace, a peace like I had never felt before, like all of that weight had been lifted off of my shoulders.

The next day I headed off to work and I brought my Bible with me. I work for the Kennedy Space Center and they frown on people bringing their Bibles out there. I think that it's because when people have gotten together before for Bible studies out at the space center they have gone overtime and stuff on their breaks, so they frown on us bringing God's Word there. I brought my Bible with me anyway because I was feeling wonderful and wanted to study God's word more and at every chance that I could get. I heard that "still small voice" again and this time I felt impressed to look at the scripture that he had given me the day before. As I looked again at the verse I noticed that my Bible made reference to two other verses. The first referenced verse was Joshua 1:5–9 and it amazed me because this was an answer to one of the questions that I had asked Jesus the night before (the verse in Joshua tells us to keep His Commandments). This was an answer for me. After this, the Lord had me open up to another scripture. You see, my third question for Jesus the night before was asking Him how I should talk to my son about all of this, and the other scripture that He had me turn to was where King David was talking to his son Solomon. I could barely keep my composure at work after seeing how God had answered all of my questions and how I, someone who wasn't versed in scripture at all was supernaturally led to all of the scriptures to answer the questions that I had posed the night before.

Well, I had tried to explain to my son and to other people how God had answered me and they were all looking at me like I was wacky. Their perception of God had them convinced that God just didn't work that way. I remember that the priest had come over to the house to see how we were doing. I told him the whole story of what had happened in the previous days and he had a look on his face as if to say, "Yeah, right." He looked at me, still confused, but said, "Well, God works like that sometimes."

In the meantime we were still going to the doctor over in Orlando and my son had a bunch of biopsies which the doctor didn't agree with because the reports always came back that the cancer was benign. He said that he knew better, that it wasn't benign, that it had to be malignant seeing all the damage that it had done. We went for a second series of biopsies, this one being an open biopsy because the others were inconclusive in the doctor's opinion. This was actually a surgery but the

doctor said that it wouldn't take a long time. As the procedure went along I started to get worried because it was taking longer than the doctor had said it should take. I thought that maybe they saw that the cancer was so bad that they had to amputate his leg or something like that.

We all sat in the waiting room: myself, my wife, and my son's mother, which in itself was a miracle because we all got along so well! After a while I saw the doctor come through the doors and I jumped up and walked very quickly over to him. The doctor looked at me with a big grin on his face so I asked him what the status was and he stated that he just didn't understand. I asked him what it was he didn't understand…and he simply repeated that he just didn't understand. He said that he opened my son's leg up and looked at the tumor and his heart sank. He was sad because he thought that he was going to have to amputate my son's leg, and then admitted that he was a highly trained doctor and knew cancers when he saw them. He was positive that my son had chondrosarcoma in his leg. His expertise told him that he was looking at malignant bone cancer. He took a piece of it and sent it down to the laboratory and they brought the results back up and it showed negative for chondrosarcoma; it was a benign schwanoma, which is a totally different kind of tumor. He said that he didn't agree with their findings, figuring that the laboratory had done something wrong. With this in mind he cut off another piece from another part of the tumor and sent it down to the lab for a second test; but that came back as benign too. He reminded me that he knows cancer, that he's operated on people with this type of cancer before and he just knew that was what it was…but it wasn't. He told me again that he didn't understand, but he could fix it and take the tumor out, and that we needed to decide when we wanted him to proceed with removing the tumor.

I began to worry about the money because we had already spent a fortune already. I was prepared to do whatever I had to do, even promising my son that I would mortgage my house if it were necessary. Meanwhile, the doctor still had his doubts about the laboratory's diagnosis so he sent another sample off to John's Hopkins for another evaluation. Just as before, the result came back that the tumor was benign schwanoma. He remarked that he had never seen a benign schwanoma damage a bone like it had in my son's leg. The bone in my son's leg looked like termites had eaten through it and it had broken. The breakage is what caused my son to have it looked at in the first place.

The doctor's office contacted me and they wanted to know what we wanted to do about my son's leg. The doctor said that he thought it best that the tumor be removed, stating that if it had done the damage it did to the one bone it might move to the other bone if it was left in the leg. So I asked what the cost of the surgery

would be. He said that his normal charge for this type of surgery was sixteen thousand dollars. I didn't have that kind of money because we had spent twelve thousand dollars already and the figure that he told me really kind of shook me. I told him to proceed and that I would see how I could come up with the money. I prayed and asked the Lord to provide the money for the surgery. The doctor called back and said that the surgery was scheduled and I told him that I didn't have the money to pay him. He then said, "Well, I'll tell you what; I'm going to do the surgery and my charge is going to be twenty four hundred dollars." This was a miracle in itself! Well, everything went just fine. My son had his surgery; they removed the tumor and the dead piece of bone and my son is doing well and hasn't had any problems.

A few weeks later we got a bill from the hospital for eleven thousand dollars and they said that if we didn't pay it by the middle of the month then the price would go up to sixteen thousand dollars. Evidently, because we had paid cash for all of the other services they decided to give us an initial discount. This figure had nothing to do with the doctor; it was just the hospital bill, which had gone to my son's house and upset him quite a bit. He made reference to how the world sucked and I agreed with him. The world did suck, but he needed to take his focus off of the world and place it on Jesus. I reminded him how much he had been blessed already. He asked what we were going to do. I reminded him of how when we were over at the hospital filling out all of the papers we told them that we didn't have the money. I reminded him how they made us fill out and sign a paper that stated that if we didn't have the money they could find some charitable organization that would help with the costs, so my son called the hospital and reminded them of this, and the girl in the office said that she'd see what she could do. Imagine our amazement when a few weeks later we got a letter saying that the bill had been paid, and we also received a rebate check for a thousand dollars from the hospital.

So if you ask me if God is real, He *is* real. He has blessed me tremendously. I need to do something for Him, and the only thing that I can think of to do is to relate my story to other people. If I can help them to know God and Jesus Christ through all that has happened to me then I will help other people with my testimony. If you're having an abduction problem (if you want to call it abduction, I guess we could call it demonic abduction), and you want to stop it, I can tell you how to stop it, and it's going to change your life in ways you never could have imagined. What I would like to say in the strongest of words is that the belief in UFOs as being extraterrestrial, the belief that these beings are from outer space, and the alien abduction experience itself can destroy someone's life. But understand this; people *allow* it to destroy their lives! You can fight or you can cower and give in; there is a choice.

I really feel that when we receive a blessing from God we aren't supposed to sit back and bask in our gift. Instead we're supposed to share our blessing with others. I know my story is helping people. Just the story of what God did with me with my Bible that one day has blessed a lot of people and when I add the story about the miracle with my son's leg it touches so many lives. I have been informed by Joe Jordan that my story through Joe's work has been published in at least ten books by different authors and in other publications. So, I guess that a lot of people have read about how they can get help and get freed from what they know to be alien abduction.

I know that we're in what the Bible calls "warfare" with these entities and I have experienced the warfare personally, but I don't really worry. You see, I am on the side of the winner of that war and that gives me a lot of comfort. I have a lot of friends; some where I work and some away from work. Some of these friends have had experiences that they have told me about. I believe that God leads these people into my path so that I can plant a seed in their hearts when I tell them the true nature of UFOs, aliens, and other strange things. I truly believe that we are in the last days, and that God is gathering His people and He wants us to share as much of the truth as we can. He wants people to have the Word so that they will know the truth, and so that when He comes back there will be no excuses. I feel that I am in the position now to share Christ with these people and to show them the kind of warfare that we're really under. These demons take on the alien form, but we are privileged to know the person who is going to win the war. God is playing the movie, but we've read the book and we know the ending.

CONCLUSIONS:

As we have seen in the "Doors" chapter of the book, there are things either in our lives, or in the lives of our direct family members (living or dead) that can open us up to a greater potential for being harassed by demons and/or fallen angels. As Bill mentioned in his testimony, his great, great grandfather was a member of Knights Templar during the Civil War Era, which many well know is a very secretive society that practices things diametrically opposed to the teachings of the Bible. Many, even Albert Pike, attribute the Knights Templar as being the progenitor of the Masonic Lodge. We see also that Bill's grandfather was a high official in his Masonic Lodge; these two things alone being more than enough to create a door in Bill's life that would allow all sorts of things to enter into his life.

Bill mentioned that it was formally his opinion that that there was more out there, that life had more meaning than the normal "human experience." This is a common theme amongst those who have been harassed by UFOs and their occupants. This mindset isn't just an idea, it is more of a faith and it is almost always used by the fallen angels and demons to propagate belief in UFOs and extraterrestrials. It almost always thrusts people into astronomy and then later into things like SETI and also the search for the truth about the UFO phenomenon.

As we saw in his testimony, Bill's experiences most probably started when he was a young boy. Having the memories of hiding behind objects outside so that the lights would not find him, and also having memories of waking up in the yard are clear indications that he was being harassed and that his memories were being scrubbed of these occasions, only to come back in bits and pieces later on in life. These memories were deeply ensconced in Bills memory where they would wake up later in his life to plague him with questions that he would try to the best of his ability to answer on his own.

It was interesting that the events that happened later on in Bill's life happened after he had received Jesus into his life as his Lord and Savior. There were some Christians who questioned Bill's salvation by stating that things like this don't happen to Christians; their ignorant talk I am sure caused Bill to search his soul and also to ask God in prayer what his condition was. But if we look at scripture we see a parable about seed being sown on different types of ground:

"A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it" (Luke 8:5).

As I was reading Bill's story I couldn't get that section of the parable of the sower out of my mind. I asked what it meant for this story and I got this explanation. When Bill received the Word of God all he did was lay it at the wayside of his life. Sure, he did accept Jesus as his Lord and Savior, but basically that is as far as it went. Satan introduced Bill's UFO experience and it was like a bird that ate up Bill's faith and his faith didn't grow. The seed of God's word survived in the intestinal tract of the bird and was later excreted by the bird onto good ground. So we can see that in an attempt to kill Bill's faith, the enemy unknowingly took steps to preserve it. While it is sure that Bill went through quite a few years of turmoil, his faith wasn't dead, it was being perfected through trials and tribulation, and the seed finally sprouted that day on the couch when Bill had his epiphany and Jesus became real in his life.

But why did the enemy try to devour the seed of faith in Bill? The answer is simple in that the enemy saw that Jesus has purposed great things for Bill's life and

he wanted to douse the fire while it was still on the woodpile. He has always done things like that. He killed the Hebrew children in Egypt, all except one (Moses), who later led Israel to freedom. He killed all of the children in Bethlehem, all but one (Jesus), who leads all people to freedom. He has tried numerous times to thwart God's plans, but it always turns out bad for him because the person or people that he tries to destroy are always preserved and strengthened by God to turn the tide of the battle. Bill is stronger than ever. He is just one of God's innumerable success stories; he's one of the conquerors, one of the overcomers, and one of the countless soldiers that Satan has unwittingly battle-hardened to fight against his own purposes.

One sad truth is that Bill had to travel close to twenty years searching for the truth before he found a Christian answer to what had happened to him. He did ask Christians during that time about his dilemma, but was for the most part written off as someone who was on the lunatic fringe or even worse, someone who wasn't truly saved by Jesus Christ because he saw spiritual things manifesting into the physical realm. The Bible is filled with accounts of people seeing spiritual things. Abraham and Jacob communed with angels; Jacob even fought one. Elisha and his servant saw angels, horses, and chariots of fire that were surrounding a city to defend them. Ezekiel saw the throne of God descend in front of him while he was near the River Cheber. Isaiah was brought into heaven where he saw the Lord. The disciples saw Jesus transfigured and they saw him enter rooms that were shut up tightly. They saw his resurrected body and they watched him ascend to heaven. These are just a few of many accounts where God introduced people to the spiritual realm. There are quite a few places in scripture where we are promised that we will do and see many great things including seeing angels and working miracles for God's glory.

To say that Bill did not have salvation because he has seen manifestations of the spiritual world is most ludicrous. Sure, for a little while the enemy used the manifestation of such things to lure Bill away from the truth but his tactics did not stick. The fact that Bill can still see UFOs when they manifest isn't a curse, but a blessing. Jesus allows this to show Bill what he is fighting against. It is interesting to note that the Apostle Paul was harassed by something of a demonic nature as we see below:

"And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure" (2 Corinthians 12:7).

The scripture above is an interesting one that not too many people examine. The Greek word for "messenger," found in the scripture is *aggelos*, and it is the word that we get "angel" from. The Greek word for "buffeted," is the word,

kolaphizo and it has a few meanings that are very similar; it means: *to strike with the fist, give one a blow with the fist or to maltreat, treat with violence and contumely.* If a Christian says that another Christian who sees manifestations of fallen angels or demons really isn't a true believer in Christ Jesus then we must lump the Apostle Paul into the same category because angels manifested to him and pushed him around and treated him with violence. If we therefore do that then we must throw out more than half of the New Covenant because it was written by an unbeliever. Furthermore, we have to also consider Christ Jesus Himself, who was tempted by Satan while in the wilderness; having been shown (supernaturally) all the kingdoms of the world and having them offered to Him. Even more so, we have to wonder if Jesus was who He said He was, especially since Satan brought Jesus (supernaturally again) to the top of the temple and tempted Him a third time. We hope that the reader can see how off the mark such a premise can be. Whenever coming up with any premise, notion, or doctrine relating to Christiandom it has to pass the litmus test of abiding by *all* of the scripture in the Word of God.

Bill has found his answers and he has found the right way to fight against demonic and fallen angelic influences in his life and he glorifies God for all of these blessings. But the wonderful part is that Bill has *chosen to fight*. He feels that his way of fighting this delusion is for him to spread the word to everyone who will listen. He knows that we are living in the last days and that these things will become more prevalent in our time. He has found that there are a lot of blessings in obeying Jesus when He says, "freely, freely you have received; freely freely give."

We hope that if Bill's testimony has touched your heart, and if you are a victim (yes, it is a crime) of alien abduction, that you will take interest in the last chapter of this book. There you will find out how to not only prevent abduction, but you will learn how to have a personal relationship with the creator of the universe, the one to whom someday every knee will bow, and every tongue will confess His deity over all of creation.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN: Matt's Testimony

It all started around 1987 or 1988. At this time I was employed as a flight attendant for a major US airline. I had a friend and roommate whom I got along with well and one of our subjects of talk was UFOs. We would talk about whether or not there could be other life out in the universe and other such things. My roommate liked to read and he always had a book in his hand. He had purchased a book titled *Communion*, and he was having a hard time getting into this book. He read the first two or so chapters and it really didn't interest him. In January 1989 I was really getting into the Bible. I had read the New Testament about three times in six months. I had a girlfriend that was a Christian and I loved this woman a lot. We had been going out for about three years but around this time things weren't going too well; I had been messing up pretty bad. I began to read the Bible because I thought it would give us some common ground and that this would help to heal our relationship. During this time I had a very powerful encounter with Christ Jesus.

However, also at this time I was reading other books. I started to read *Communion*, as well as the Prophecies of Nostradamus, and another book titled, *The Great Depression of 1990*. When I think back on it, these probably weren't good books to read when going through a depression over the failure of my relationship with my girlfriend. That is when everything started for me. I believed what Whitley Strieber wrote about in his book. I thought he was telling the truth and I was persuaded that he wasn't making these things up; it wasn't the product of any sort of hallucination; the book was convincing to me. At that time I hadn't started to read Zachariah Stichin's work; that wouldn't come for another four or five years.

Around the time I received the Holy Spirit and became a Christian, I made the same mistake that I believe Zachariah Stichin has made. I had assumed that when scripture is read, or when one reads documents that were written four or five thousand years ago, that the accounts of the prophets were really encounters with a technologically advanced civilization. I believed that the angels were physical extraterrestrials from another planet.

After reading *Communion*, I was really obsessed. From 1989 to 1999 I figure that I read close to one hundred fifty books that dealt with the UFO phenomenon; I read anything that I could get my hands on. I was going to conferences at least twice a year. The speakers at these conferences seemed to be credible men. They didn't seem to be pot-smoking hippy freaks. One of these persons was John Mack, who

was a Harvard graduated psychiatrist. When people of that caliber start taking the phenomenon seriously you can't just dismiss it as easily as some people do. I joined a MUFON group in the Orlando area and essentially took over a UFO Forum Group that had remained there. It was pretty much an "anything that goes" group that discussed all different phases of Ufology and other things. About this time I had become acquainted with Joe Jordan from the Cocoa, Florida group who came to visit our group from time to time.

Later on Joe's group took on a different air because Joe became a Christian. The rumor was that you couldn't go to that group unless you were a believer in Jesus Christ. Joe had shared his faith and the truth about UFOs to the people in his group and for the most part, they just left his group. It happens all the time; when you tell a person that you are a born again Christian, they just change their whole outlook about you. Of course, in many cases these people are knee-deep in sin and they don't want to be accountable for their lives and they don't want to believe that they will have to give account for their life one day. When people hear that you're a Christian, they think of the caricatures that they see on television who have their theology pretty wacked, who bilk people out of their money; thousands upon thousands of dollars. These people tend to give the faith a bad name and many people have never met a genuine, down to Earth Christian; a person who strives to live by the scriptures. We all struggle with the flesh from time to time, but we have to examine all of our ways. Even Christ Jesus said that apart from Him we can do nothing and any positive changes that happen in our lives, well, the glory has to be given to God. In our own strength we can't bring anything about; we can't even bring our own faith about because even our faith is a work of God.

As I mentioned earlier, back in 1987 I had a very powerful experience with the Holy Spirit. Now, this might sound strange, but in this encounter I heard the voice of Jesus. I didn't hear Him audibly in my ears, but in my mind. It was unmistakable, undeniable; it wasn't my own private thoughts or my own spirit. It was a voice that spoke directly to my mind, as if you were hearing me talk right now; you would be hearing me with your ears, but you would still be hearing me with your brain. When I heard that voice in my head that was the exact moment when my faith was quickened in my life. I no longer believed that the Bible was a book written by mere men thousands of years ago, it was in fact the Word of God. Interestingly enough, there was another encounter at that time. After I heard from Jesus and felt a peace that passes above all understanding I went into another room of the apartment. When I got into that room there was a different presence there. This presence was the exact opposite of the Holy Spirit; I felt the very presence of evil. Although I couldn't see anything with my eyes, I knew that there was something there in the room with me. I was attacked mentally in a very powerful way by this entity. There

was an oppression there that was so thick in the room that I felt like it could actually be cut with a knife. At this time I don't care to elaborate anymore about that.

However, having been infected, as you will, by *Communion*, and the concept that angels were really extraterrestrials, I became obsessed to learn all that I could about the UFO/alien phenomenon. I was a believer in Christ in 1989, and was baptized into the International Churches of Christ in 1991. Incidentally, this church is partly what drove me into the New Age because they were so controlling and didn't understand the concept of grace to a great degree. But reading all of those books, from about 1989 to 1999 caused my faith to become torn apart piece by piece, book by book. I lost my faith in the Bible and I no longer believed it was the Word of God and my obsession with the UFO phenomenon was at its highest extreme. Because my faith had become so eroded, my belief was now that the Bible wasn't written by God, but it had been written by extraterrestrials, which I also believed had created us. My faith's underpinnings had been stripped almost totally away.

To the best of my recollection, it was 1993 when I had a profound experience that made me realize just how real the entities are. I had read just about all of the books that I could find and they piqued my interest for a while but as the newness wore off I wanted to take things a step farther. I got it in my head that I now wanted to meet an extraterrestrial entity. I went out one night to a field that was near my parent's house and I knelt down there. I proceeded to send a message out to the universe, telling these beings that I wanted them to reveal themselves; that I wanted to see them. Soon afterward I became aware of a humming or buzzing sound that came from behind me. The best way that I can describe the sound was like a Star Wars light saber that sort of oscillated. I turned my head to the right and out of the corner of my right eye I saw a being standing there. It was about two feet tall with a soft luminescent body and dark eyes. I only saw it for a second and then it disappeared. I think that it disappeared because I had become scared by that point.

Right around 1999 I used to listen to Art Bell on the Coast to Coast radio show. Art was talking to a researcher named Ann Druffel on the subject of righteous indignation terminating abduction experiences. Well, it may work sometimes, or the entities may make you think that it works just to keep you more deceived and to keep you away from the real deliverance. I looked up and in my bedroom I saw what you would consider a typical "gray" with the almond shaped eyes and thin little fingers. He had his hands on the door frame and was sort of peeking around the corner, looking at me. I looked at it and then looked away and I couldn't believe that I was scared. I had read about the so-called telepathic communications so I decided to send this little dude a message. I told him that if he came near me, or if he put me

on his ship, that I would trash his (explicative) ship so bad that it would never get off the ground, and that he could take my word on that. With that, the being disappeared.

Starting around 2001 or 2002 I would be awakened in the middle of the night, maybe once a week. Sometimes it would feel like something had sat on my bed because there would be a depression on the bed. I would sit up in bed and there would be something in my room; maybe just a tall shadowy figure. Once it might have looked like the angel of death, with the long black robe and a hood and a skeleton for a face. I wasn't really scared in all of this. I would tell the figure to go away, using my power and authority in Jesus, and it would disappear. One instance I found sort of funny. It was 2002 and I was living in Apopka and I woke up in the middle of the night. Standing next to my bed was a short shadowy figure about three and a half feet tall, and a tall shadowy figure that was about five or six feet tall. I looked directly at them and said, "In the name of Jesus, leave." They both ran away, running toward the wall, or maybe through the wall but the little one ran back again and I looked at him and rebuked him again and he ran away for good. I thought that this was all kind of humorous. This hasn't happened much since then; maybe once in the last year or two. But there are still some times when I will feel like something is sitting on my bed and I don't even lift my head and look anymore; it's like there is no fear anymore. I just lay there with my head on the pillow and I rebuke it, telling it "in the name of Jesus just leave me alone."

I had to laugh because I have a friend who has a friend who is a woman. She said that she woke up one night and she saw Lucifer standing at the foot of her bed. She just looked at it and said, "Oh, it's you...just leave me alone," and it left her alone.

I used to have a fear that Lucifer was stalking me. I felt like he was after me all the time. I even felt like he would sit next to me at church. At one point though I realized that he has no power and that he couldn't do anything bad to me. He is like a lion who has had his teeth ripped out. He doesn't have power unless you allow him to have power, speaking from a born again Christian viewpoint of course.

When I became acquainted with Joe Jordan and Chris Ward, and when they explained to me how the Bible really did have the answers to the extraterrestrial question, this is what helped me to escape from the clutches of the New Age. This is when my faith was reawakened. This was a hard time for me because I was at my lowest common denominator. I never really read the Bible anymore, unless it was to support my ideas of extraterrestrial life. My faith had been stripped away and I wasn't talking the talk or walking the walk of the Christian lifestyle. I was broken-hearted and I felt so bad. I was so ashamed that I had disappointed God so badly. It

took me quite a while to come out of that feeling. It still comes back to my mind from time to time. I guess that with this process I have to forget what is behind and I have to press on to the higher calling.

I had actually felt like I had been polluted. What people have to understand is that the whole UFO culture is based on the New Age and that is intertwined with mysticism as well as Buddhism and Hinduism. These things cannot coexist in one person and it affects a person adversely. I felt like I had been seduced by the New Age and the UFO phenomenon. I remember talking with Chris Ward on a trip to Roswell. In effect, I told him that I had been praying that God would pull all of the weeds that were in my mind that I had allowed the enemy to plant there. The ground that the weeds were growing in was that of pride. While I was going through my time of rebellion I had quite a bit of pride. I felt that I was an authority on all of the extraterrestrial stuff. I had read many books and through them I thought I had become the expert, the one with all of the answers. When we were in Roswell and I had said that prayer that God would pull the weeds out of my mind it was funny. I was talking to some guy about the Philadelphia Experiment and I couldn't remember anything about it. That was unusual because I have a pretty sharp memory. I just walked away sort of amazed and I thought to myself, "that's interesting." It's so much better to fill your mind up with the truth. If you fill you mind up with junk then you are deceived and you are living a lie and you and your life will suffer because of it.

Having read all of those books and having attained all of that "knowledge" so to speak did open up some doors to things that I didn't care for. I was at the very least harassed in the spiritual realms. It wasn't too long after we went to Roswell that my picture was placed on the CE-4 Research Group website. What I am about to say may seem to some to be paranoia but it really did happen. Right after the Roswell trip I would constantly see either a white or black limousine; they were all around, wherever I went. I then became obsessed with the whole "Lord Maitreya" phenomenon. There was a particular experience that I had. I was living in an apartment with a roommate and it seemed that this limo was always parked in the driveway of the complex. I thought this was very odd. This wasn't a bad neighborhood, and there wasn't high crime in the area, but it was not an area where a limo would have been parked. I remember reading a book titled *Psychic Warrior*, by a David Morehouse. Mr. Morehouse had claimed that he used to work with the Defense Intelligence Agency in their "Remote Viewing" program. What made him leave their employment is when he found out that the DIA was investigating the use of "psychically assassinating" people through meditation.

During this period of time when I thought that the limos were following me

around there was a time when the spiritual oppression in the apartment was very heavy. The air was heavy with the sensation of ominous dread. I had become almost paralyzed; not catatonic, but just paralyzed mentally and spiritually. I was constantly second guessing myself and I was having a hard time just functioning or doing my job. There was this one moment where it felt like my brain was being ripped in half. I have no other way to explain it other than to say that it felt like the Corpus Callosum (the tissue that connects the two brain hemispheres) was being pulled in half. Although the pain only lasted for half a second, it was the most intense pain I have ever felt. After that experience and after researching the whole Maitreya stuff I couldn't help but wonder if all of the things that Morehouse said were true. So there were ramifications, both physically and spiritually from reading all of the books and other material that I read, and becoming obsessed with it.

While my faith began in 1989, it wasn't until 2002 or 2003 that I became aware that grace and faith leads to works. When I was a member of the International Church of Christ I really didn't realize that their doctrine is work based rather than grace based. I knew that something wasn't quite right but I didn't have the scripture to defend myself from them. One commonly quoted cliché that I have found to be so true is "when you're on the road to hell, Satan will give you nothing but green lights." This was true of me before Jesus woke me up. One way that God woke me up was by using Joe Jordan, Chris Ward, and Guy Malone who taught me the truth about the whole UFO/alien phenomenon. They helped me to understand that the Bible is indeed the Word of God. When I knew the truth, and I wasn't on the road to hell any longer is when Satan and his minions started to attack me more heavily. I became depressed, delusional, and had paranoia and it was a rough time for me. I have to say though, for the past four or five years I haven't had any bouts with depression or the other things that bothered me.

When I went to Roswell I immediately thought that this place is the Mecca for the New Age Movement in all the United States. I used to jokingly call myself one of the New Age tree-hugging hippy freaks so I pretty well know what I am talking about when it comes to the New Age and Roswell fits well into the theme of this movement. Another thing that I noticed is how the whole UFO/extraterrestrial theme tends to fuel the economy of Roswell. It struck me that the UFO thing for Roswell is what the Disney thing is for Orlando, Florida; people come there from all over the world and it is the same for Roswell.

I know that a lot of people have open doors in their lives that allow these entities to have a hold in their lives and I have related how my open door was my interest in the UFO phenomenon and how it affected me. I have thought about possible family connections and I would like to talk briefly about my dad. My dad

by profession was an electronic engineer. He worked at Bell Labs in New Jersey, and according to (if you believe it or not) Phil Corso, some of the crash debris from Roswell was sent to Bell Labs. At one time he went to Texas and worked on the antennas for the Apollo moon missions. He spent six years at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base where they had the "foreign technologies division," which is where (at that time) the Air Force sent any foreign aerospace technology. After that, Dad moved to Orlando where he worked for Lockheed Martin. Around 1998 I had been living with my parents and they were aware that I was obsessed with anything that had to do with UFOs. Dad never said much about my interest. Sometimes he would make small ridiculing remarks. Around 1999 I became so frustrated that I didn't have the whole truth about UFOs, I was even entertaining the notion of joining the NSA so that I could get on the inside to find out what the hell was going on.

My frustration caused me to look my dad in the eye one day and ask him if he knew anything about all of this. He didn't respond immediately and I could tell that he was really thinking, like he was contemplating the answer that he was going to give to me. He then looked at me sternly and told me "No." That was all that he said. About a month or two later, my parents and I were in their car driving somewhere and I was sitting in the front passenger's seat while my dad drove the car. We were all sort of quiet during the drive. At one point during the trip my dad looked at me as he drove and he said, "So, that's what you think they are, angels huh?" Then he turned back to the road and drove. Now, to anyone reading this, my dad's actions might seem peculiar, but the way that my dad answered me was odd to say the least. The odd thing is that I had not bought up the subject for quite a while leaving me with the impression that he had been thinking about these things and I thought perhaps he knew more than he was letting on.

My dad worked at Wright-Patterson from 1974 to 1980. It was at this time in history where the "Foreign Technologies" division of the Air Force called Wright-Patterson its home. This was the same time that there had been a big news leak that the government was storing the bodies of aliens at the base. At the end of the day that that news broke out, my brothers, sisters, my mother, and I all waited for my dad to come home. We wanted to grill him to see if he knew anything about what he heard about. When he got home we all asked him what he knew about the "little, green men." My dad looked at all of us and said, "What little, green men?" Knowing my dad, and knowing that if he didn't know anything about this subject, or if he wanted to flat out deny any knowledge, he would have told us, "What are you talking about, why are you talking about little, green men. Where did you get that from?" So yes, my dad's reactions many times when presented with such questions were quite odd. I don't know what my dad knows. I think that he probably knows things that he can't tell me and that's okay, I don't need to know, I know enough. I

guess that I can assume that if he did have some involvement in all of this that perhaps it was an open door that he passed on to me. But if my dad did know something, or especially if he was somehow involved in all of the top secret alien stuff, that would have been a big open door that would have allowed the forces of darkness to enter into my life.

Every believer in Jesus comes to the point where they have attained knowledge and wisdom from God. The right thing to do is to then pass this information on to others so that they can be helped. I think that it is important to listen to what these entities are saying because their message is their mission. What they are saying will either confirm their fidelity or confirm their deceitfulness. So let's look at what they are saying. If you read the things that are being channeled by the Pleiadians or the Ashtar Command or any other such group, or if you listen to the information that the abductees receive, it all had to do with apocalyptic visions and it had a spiritual nature to it. Anytime that the name of Jesus is brought up, whether it was channeled information, or if it was from abductees' reports of telepathic communications, in their homes onboard the ships (UFOs), etc., the message was always to downplay Jesus Christ. They would say that Jesus really isn't who you think He is, or that the Bible tells you that He is. They say that Jesus really isn't the son of God; He's just a very powerful, very enlightened social philosopher and teacher; kind of like Buddha, Mohammed, or Krishna. In their messages, any concept of sin is just whitewashed over and diminished. These are the most prominent points that I like to bring up. I like to ask people who are involved in this phenomenon, "Well, what are they telling you?" I tell them that the Bible not only tells us that Jesus is the son of God, but that He *is* God.

The one scripture that comes to mind is where the Pharisees question Jesus about His knowledge of events. They tell Him that He was only a man about thirty years old, how could He know about Abraham and Moses; I'm paraphrasing a bit. Jesus told them, "Before Abraham was, I AM." The same word for "I AM" in Hebrew is the word that God used from the burning bush on Mount Sinai when Moses asked Him, "Who should I say has sent me to you?" God told him to tell the Jewish people that "I AM" sent him. This upset the Jewish leaders of Jesus' day and they even wanted to stone Him for saying it because Jesus was in effect saying "Before Abraham lived, I existed, and for all eternity I have existed, and I am God." So when I talk to people who have received messages from these supposed alien entities, I'd tell them that just as Josh McDowell discovered and recorded in his book titled, *More Than A Carpenter*, Jesus is one of three things: He is who He said He is, or He was insane, or He was a liar; and I am convinced that the Bible is the Word of God, and that Jesus is the son of God and is God. If these entities are telling people other than what Jesus said, then who is telling the truth?

I'd like to tell the people (those who have gone through the abduction experience) that the phenomenon is a worldwide event and that it is happening to deceive the world, and that the messages that these entities are telling them is to further deceive the world. I'd tell them the testimony of Bill (see Bills testimony in this book) and of others and how the name of Jesus has delivered them. I'd tell them that there is no one who can bring freedom to these people, permanent freedom, without knowing the power and authority of Jesus' name and to stand upon His promises, and to fight this in the spiritual realm, which is where it needs to be fought.

I know that a lot of people might read this and wonder how I could be seduced so easily, especially since I had that experience with Jesus at the beginning, hearing His voice and feeling the peace that He let me feel. I have to say that it was because I didn't have a firm foundation in my faith. I wish I would have understood scripture better. I wish that I would have understood Genesis chapter six a lot better. I also wish that I could have had some knowledge of the Book of Enoch too. I talk with other Christian friends about the Book of Enoch and most of them say things to the effect that since it's not in the Bible it's not God-inspired and it's not scripture. I think that we have what we need in scripture but I do think (and this is a slippery slope and we must be careful) that we don't have all of the scripture. There are those who argue in favor and those who argue against the Apocrypha, and who knows what is right there? I think that it is good for historical references.

The Book of Enoch was very helpful for me. The Book of Enoch is quoted in the Epistle of Jude, adding some credence to its validity. One of the main tenants of what led me down the wrong road was my belief (especially after reading *Communion*) that angels were really extraterrestrials. But reading Zachariah Stichin's books is what really drove the nail into the coffin for me and stripped my faith in the Bible. The argument that Stichin makes is that the Sumerian Cuneiform records are older than the Bible and thus more accurate. Had I known about the Book of Enoch, and that since parts of it were probably scribed by Enoch himself, I would have seen them as being older and more accurate.

Since these entities are so deceptive they can really come to a person in a subtle manner. The Grays and the Nordics and others present themselves as being gentle and caring. They take on a friendly demeanor and sometimes even heal people of their sicknesses and such. This is part of the deception. If a thief comes up to you and he shows you his gun and tells you to give him all of your money there is no doubt that you are being robbed. But if the same person comes to you and befriends you he gains your trust and once he has your trust he can take the same money as he wanted in the prior scenario, and he can cause you to give him the

money that he once would have taken by force, he's still a robber, but his mode of operation has changed. This subtleness is how these entities fool a lot of people, and it is how they fooled me.

One thing that I've come to realize (once I discovered that these entities were really fallen angels and that they aren't extraterrestrials) is that these entities have been unmasked before me. Since that time they don't reveal themselves to me in the guise of alien visitors from other planets, but instead they now show themselves as what they really are: dark and evil emissaries from Satan's warped and contorted kingdom.

I feel that the way that we can help people who are being harassed by these entities is to share testimonies of those who have overcome these beings. I mean, if these people are on fire for more knowledge and they're wrapped up in all of the things that go with the phenomenon and they are going to listen to the testimonies of people who claim to have seen stuff at Area 51 or people who have seen stuff in their bedroom at night, they're going to have to accept the testimony of those who say that they're not having these experiences anymore and why they're not having them anymore. You can't choose to believe one side and choose to ignore the other side, simply because it fits their preconceived idea of what is right. Everyone does this to a certain extent but if they're willing to explore all avenues to find the truth then they have to look at what we're trying to show them so that they can know that they have been totally objective, rational, and realistic.

When it comes to sharing these things with Christian believers it is almost always harder than sharing it with a New Age person. As I mentioned earlier, if I would have had the knowledge that I have now back when this whole thing started, it probably would have made things come out in a good way much faster and would have kept a lot of heartache from happening. The attitude of many in the Body of Christ is a hands-off one. I was in a group one time and somehow the subject of UFOs and aliens came up. A seminary-educated pastor that I know started to talk about how he had been listening to Coast to Coast on the radio earlier in the week and then he started to mock the show because it was talking about UFOs and aliens. I asked the pastor what he knew about it and he just smirked and said something to the effect of, "What is there to know about it?" It seemed he was trying to affirm that he thought the subject to be nonsense. I told him that I had personally read 150 books on the subject and he retorted that he wished that I had read 150 books on the Bible. My former view, and the view of many in the UFO community, is amazement that people aren't interested in the subject. They wonder why everyone doesn't find it fascinating that we're being visited from people from other worlds. That is another hook in all of these beliefs. I mean, other than the return of Christ Jesus,

what could be more ground-shaking for humanity than to be confronted undeniably without a doubt by those from other planets? How could you not be interested in that? This is the hook in the whole thing: that this is ground-shaking, Earth-shattering, and is going to change the whole destiny of humanity. If they're extraterrestrials and they're from other worlds, think of all of the things that we can learn from them; think of all the knowledge and wisdom they must have. So many questions come to the mind for those who are steeped in the UFO phenomenon. How did the beings survive their arms race, or did they even have one? There are so many hooks in the lie. The end result is that the deeper you get into this stuff, the more your reality is changed and your thoughts are altered and it affects you and everyone around you. Seeing how this affects people, wouldn't the church want to fight against it?

These entities directly oppose Jesus Christ and it shows up in all of their communications with channelers and abductees. One legend in the UFO realm is that back when Eisenhower was president he met with an alien race. That alien race showed him a holographic movie of the crucifixion of Jesus Christ and went on to explain how they are the creators of mankind. The UFO message is that we were not created; it is an attempt to remove the creator from the picture and to do away with biblical creation. It is just another spin on evolution, basically saying that evolution is true but that the aliens helped it along. With this sort of lie out there, just sitting there to ensnare another person, people, or our society, how can the church just sit there and ignore the problem? This is very wrong.

It is imperative that those of us who know the truth pray a lot for God to provide places for people to go when they come out of the UFO community. The Holy Spirit is the only one who can soften the hearts of pastors and congregations so that they will be willing to treat the wounded coming out of this community. He is the only one who can speak to the hearts of those people who are in the bondage of UFO lore, and He is the only one who can ultimately set the captives free.

I hope and pray that my testimony and the testimonies of the others in this book will help people to realize that they are deceived. I hope and pray that they will realize that they are not hopelessly trapped in anything, but that they can find peace, freedom, and unconditional love in fellowship with God Almighty through the person of Jesus Christ.

CONCLUSIONS:

Matt's testimony is quite interesting and it eerily parallels the testimony of Bill (also found in this book). Both men were brought up Catholic, and both come from

the Midwest of the United States. Both were young in their faith when they were snatched away to the deception of the UFO realm. Both searched in the New Age for answers and both had encounters with entities in the guise of extraterrestrials. Both gentlemen could not find the answers in the New Age and both came back to Jesus Christ after years of having been deceived.

There are so many parallels to their stories that if one didn't know their histories well, one would swear that they got together and formulated their stories one night over drinks and dinner at a sports bar or something. However, the truth is that the first time that these men met each other was on the day that Matt was interviewed by Joe Jordan.

The similarities were not dictated by these two gentlemen however, but by the entities that have harassed them. The truth is that the forces opposed to God Almighty look for new Christians, new believers who have some sort of past interests in UFOs or the occult or anything else that promotes ideas that are opposed to God, His Majesty, His creating power or His saving grace. There is no doubt that if these gentlemen, prior to their salvation had an interest in evolution, the enemy would have introduced them to some famous archeologist who would have tried to dissuade them from belief in creationism; or if they formally hungered for money, would have given them more money, or if they liked sex, would have given them a beautiful woman to lead them astray. Yet in the testimony of these two men, they both said that before they were saved by God's grace, they had an avid interest in life out in the universe. What better way to draw them away from the truth than to introduce them to entities who purported to be from other worlds and who have been sowing that very lie into society for many years?

Both men reported that they sought answers from Christians and didn't get any. They both said that they were treated with disdain by believers in Jesus when they brought up the subject. They both felt like they were the only ones that knew the truth and that nobody would listen to the truth. They also felt that they needed to do something.

It is interesting that when Matt learned the truth the entities didn't appear as extraterrestrials anymore, but more like the trolls and shadowy figures that people have always seen when they fight spiritual warfare. A lot of us grew up either reading comic strips or watching cartoons of what we knew as super-heroes. Characters like Superman, Batman and even the Lone Ranger all wore masks. They all wore disguises because there is a mysterious awe in someone whose real identity cannot be known. Had Superman been unmasked he would have only been Clark Kent and had Batman been unmasked he would have only been Bruce Wayne and so on and so forth. The super powers were not really in the person, but in the

persona that they portrayed. The same is the case with the supposed extraterrestrials. There is an interesting passage in the Bible that talks about a future day when Satan will be unmasked:

> They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners? All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house. But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet. (Isaiah 14:16–19)

The same vernacular can be used at the unmasking of the entities that purport to be visitors from other worlds when we see them for what they really are. Matt told of a time when he saw the "Mutt and Jeff" entities that came to him in his room. He said that since he knew what they really were, he wasn't scared. He commanded them to leave and they did. He said that the whole event amused him, like it should amuse anyone who sees the stupid antics of the powers of darkness for what they really are. He told of other times when he was visited and he said that he doesn't even raise his head off of his pillow anymore, but just tells them to go away in Jesus' name. And Matt told of his friends' woman's friend who said she was visited by Lucifer one night and mockingly said, "Oh, it's just you," before she rebuked him. These are the acts of people who know the enemy, and know that the enemy doesn't have power over them anymore. These are the people who know that we're in a war, and they know that our commander's name is Jesus and that we have the enemy on the run and that ultimately we win the war because we're on the all-powerful side.

On top of all of those good things, Matt is doing what Jesus told all of us to do. He told us to go out and spread the Good News of the Gospel. The good news is that Jesus Christ died to save people from their sins, and that He rose again to promise us eternal life. Matthew knows that he has been freed and he isn't going to stand on the sidelines of the war while others fight the enemy. His two forms of battle are to tell others how they can be freed and to pray for others so that they can see the truth and come to the only one who can save them from what they know as "alien abduction," but in truth we know to be the harassment of individuals by fallen angels and their children, the demons. Matt will someday stand before his maker and he will hear the words, "Well done my good and faithful servant."

CHAPTER SIXTEEN: Lyle's Testimony

These incidents/contacts and such began when I was a child and continued throughout my teenage years into what is now my late 20s. It began when I was around five years of age. I would awaken in the middle of the night to a fevered condition with what seemed like a loud siren going off. I was so frightened that all I could do was huddle under my blankets in fear. Suddenly it occurred to me that while under the blankets I was able to see the designs on them in the complete darkness when a black void began to envelope me. I was so terrified that I couldn't even scream for help as I was left feeling abandoned and without hope due to the fact that no one else in my family seemed to hear this sound or be aware of its presence. Suddenly I remember beings escorting me through a large curvy shaped room with tall ceilings and many more beings dressed in elaborate clothing like princes of some sort. I saw rows of mats in which the beings seemed to lay on their stomachs rather than sitting upright like we do. There was no verbal communication of any kind. It was as though I was being walked around this structure before them like an object on display. The next morning I told my mother what had happened as soon as I woke up. She was absolutely amazed because my twin brother had just adamantly mentioned going through the same thing himself that very night to my father.

For some time afterwards I would periodically wake up in the same fevered condition with that pursuing black substance of a void seeping from every angle towards me. It felt soft yet hard at the same time whenever it made contact with my body. It was truly beyond my mental and sensory comprehension. It would feel as if though whatever part of my body it touched would give the sensation that I was becoming absorbed and taken from this dimension. Truly there are no words to accurately describe it. All I remember was my parents being scared to death because it kept happening to me right before their very eyes. I remember being ripped out of my one piece sleeping pajamas and dunked into a bathtub of cold water several times to get my temperature down. I didn't understand why my parents could not see this substance seeping towards me through every crack of reality. Across the floor it would rush towards me; a towel in which my parents would pull from the hamper to dry me off would be covered in it yet they didn't even seem to know. I have always been puzzled and perplexed as to why I have never heard of other people stating similar experiences that may have happened to them as well. I was under the impression that it had to be commonplace with others due to my own

undeniable experiences. This led me to begin opening doors down a hallway of possible explanations that, in truth, foolishly invited more of the activity into my life.

I dug deep into the alien UFO phenomena knowing that due to my previous experiences it was possible to be in contact with such beings. Yet I didn't realize who and what those supposed "alien" beings really where. On many occasions after my childhood I would awake at night in complete sleep paralysis. The levels of contact would be random and consisted of the following examples:

—I would awaken, paralyzed, only able to see a being's hand slip away from my arm into the darkness within a split second. Yet I could still feel the impression of its grip on my forearm for moments afterwards.

—I would awaken halfway out of bed screaming loudly in terror and not knowing why as I fell back down upon my mattress. To this day I am unable to replicate the shrill I then had in my voice. It was complete horror.

—I would awaken paralyzed seeing beings standing outside yet stretching their arms and bodies through the window to my bed.

—I would awaken to a being sitting next to me. As soon as I asked myself if it was real it reached its hand out for me to touch it, in which I did before it disappeared. I was left with a feeling that what I saw was not the true projection of whatever it was but something my mind would find acceptable. Oddly this would be during the morning daylight unlike the other instances.

—I would awaken on the floor on my hands and knees. My body felt as if though it was vibrating with the sensation of falling motion. Once, I mustered the strength to turn towards the bed. When I did, I saw myself lying in the bed before immediately seeing a pale face with large solid black eyes appear before me for a split second moments before blacking out.

During the period of time in which I knew no better to partake in divination or contact with spirits I diligently, yet foolishly, began to do research into contacting them like a soldier going into battle without his armor. I was raised Christian and believed in God but only until recently did I really know who Christ is and what He truly did on the cross for all mankind or else I would of never voluntarily dabbled in such things. I began reading books on how to meditate and expand my consciousness thus putting them into practice for hours on end every day while undergoing methods of sensory deprivation, and yes, even trying to contact alien beings. I can honestly say that I began to get results. Soon within a few months of this I began to be visited at first by entities in my dreams. I would fall asleep and awake in a lucid dream under the guidance of a being which would not only take me places in my dream but actually walk me down the road leading to my apartment

and up three flights of stairs to my front door where we would part for the night only seconds before I woke up. On several occasions during that part of my life I would awaken with information of what was going to happen that day or have prophecies of certain events to come, only to see them unravel in *exact* detail before my very eyes. This became so accurate for me that I would even tell other people things that were going to happen for their own verification as the events played out exactly as I described, yet always something was tugging at my heart saying, "This is not right."

Eventually I began to pay attention to that increasing, growing cry for reason. Soon I blew the dust off my Bible and there it was, like several hard, repetitive slaps to the face. Countless verses in the Bible jumped out at me from every page warning of God's disapproval for those who practice such things. The only thing I could think was, "It felt so right at the time, Lord what have I done?" I then dropped to my knees in prayer asking God's forgiveness and that He and only He would show me true wisdom. What I got in return was by all means more than what I was prepared for. I began to feel the immensity of being in Hell for all eternity. My mind raced day and night with the torments of physical and mental pain that it holds. I no longer was able to enjoy life. I couldn't smile, eat, or rest in any way. When awake, I was full of fear for this was a revelation beyond what anyone could ever make me doubt. I would fall asleep to escape, only to be awoken with fear because it made its way deep into my dreams as well. I began to get weak with a depression-like fatigue and loss of sleep. I nearly lost my job, and my fiancé and family where greatly worried because they knew something was terribly wrong.

One day I cried out to God in a mixture of fear, hopelessness, and partial anger. "Why are you doing this to me?" Suddenly it was all there before me. I was being shown true wisdom, the fear of God's wrath, and that our Lord Jesus had willingly paid the price with His life to keep us from facing it. I never fully knew who Jesus really was until then. I thought He was just some man who taught incredible love, not knowing He was the son of God in the flesh. No preacher or Bible tract was there to tell me this. It was a spiritual revelation of its own. I felt His presence within my heart begin to lift away my fear with a promise that I now belonged to Him. I can't help but smile reflecting upon that very moment. It was a wonderful new beginning but by no means the end of the past.

Shortly after that I began to purge my life of all my possessions that did not glorify Christ. It looked as though I was burglarized when I was through. I began donating what little I had to the church and placing my faith in God which lead me to praying for others and sharing my faith with them.

Unfortunately evil does retaliate. Soon afterwards I began to have dreams of the night visitors again. This time they were lustful, seductive and at times

intimidating with fear yet I declined to partake to the best of my ability. I would awaken many times completely paralyzed from night-to-night afterwards. I could see my room, the bed, window, and possessions each time thus telling me I was wide awake yet I could not move a single muscle. These attacks began to get more and more physical throughout the next few months. Instances of feeling hands pulling various parts of my body while in this state grew common. Eventually I was even pulled off my bed and across the floor of my apartment right in front of my wife. I tried to breathe heavily and even make a snorting sound to wake her up but it was to no avail. I distinctly remember being released as I simply thought of the Lord's presence in my life. I stood up, walked to the bed and anchored my arms and legs around my wife before passing out, filled with fear and exhaustion.

The last episode I had occurred on Sunday March 1, 2009, I remember waking up to a black shadowy looking figure sitting on top of me. I felt the sensation of what seemed to be metal wires jingling on my leg where it sat, and as I turned my face away, it moved its face with mine as if though it wanted to intimidate me. I can tell you with assurance its intimidation was not enough for me to turn away from my walk with Christ. On the contrary I will cling closer to the fortress that is our Lord and savior and continue to build my faith in Him until the moment I die. I realize that, to many others, this may sound bizarre at best, yet it only sickens me that they have fully bought into this world as it being all there is, leaving them defenseless against the evils that I now know feed off their ignorance and await them on the other end like sheep being lead to an eternal slaughter.

CONCLUSIONS:

In preparation of putting Lyle's testimony into this book I had to consult with him about certain things about his life. He was pretty thorough about his involvement with opening doors and such so I really didn't have many questions for him in that regard. I did however ask him about parents and ancestors and their possible involvement in open doors.

Lyle did inform me that there might have been two or three instances where ancestors could have opened doors but while he shared them with me he expressed wishes that they not be published in this book. When we hear that people of such a young age have had experiences we automatically ask questions about ancestors and invariably we are told of ancestors who have opened the doorways to invite the activities of the powers of darkness into their lives and the lives of their progeny.

In further conversation with Lyle he states that he hasn't had an attack for more than two weeks, which makes him very happy. This is a long period of time for

someone who was constantly attacked by these entities. Like a lot of experiencers who have found the truth he expressed to me that he is happy to find someone who will listen to his story and not label him as crazy. It often happens that when folks like Lyle try to tell the secular world, including family, about their experiences, they are labeled as crazy and if one reaches out to Christians they are often labeled as outside of God's will, having committed some grievous sin, so much so that God allows these things to happen to the individual. While this might sometimes be true it is no reason to cast a person away, especially when they are seeking help. No, in fact it is the church that is supposed to help the person to become free. Sometimes as believers in the Messiah we forget that we will be judged for the works that we did and the ones that we failed to do.

As you read in Lyle's testimony, his harassment continued for a while after he came to faith in Jesus Christ. As we've mentioned before, this is sometimes the case. Sometimes the enemy tests our new faith to see how genuine it is. We're reminded by the Apostle James that we're supposed to resist the devil, and only then will he flee from us. Resisting doesn't mean that we're supposed to try just once and then give up. Resistance is an active verb and it bears in its name a consistency and persistence. In his latest letter to me that came at the time of the writing of this chapter Lyle concluded that, "I've been praying for great discernment and found that these experiences that were allowed to happen to me have made me more of a bold follower. I refuse to give the enemy his desired glory." Lyle's attitude is exactly the one that everyone who wants to rid themselves of fallen angelic harassment must have in order to win: "If you push me I'll push back and if you hit me then I'm going to put you on the floor." This is the kind of victorious attitude that we, the authors of this book, applaud and we pray that Lyle is an inspiration to everyone who wants to become free from harassment of fallen angels, demons and all of the powers of darkness, even the human agents thereof.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN: David's Testimony

I grew up in what would be called a fairly normal environment for our day and age. My adolescent years were during the 1960s and I was a teenager in the 1970s. The first nine years of my life were spent in northern New Jersey, about five miles from New York City. We were far enough away from New York to live relatively safe lives although some crime did spill into our town. Nevertheless, with the little safety that our town's location afforded it was just a violent enough place to allow a young man to get the toughness that he needs to survive in this world. Most people in our town were fairly level-headed and most lived a relativistic life; if you didn't see it and couldn't touch it, it didn't exist.

There was a quiet, ongoing battle of ideologies that went on in my home. My mother was religious (going to church on Sundays, singing in the choir and developing friendships with church going people, etc.); my dad was more of a pragmatist. He liked to work with his hands and know what made things work. My dad was a blue-collar worker, a plumber by trade, but he was different. While others of his trade would like to go to bars after work, or attend sporting events during the weekends; my dad would be looking at things through microscopes and telescopes and fooling around with a chemistry set. He really did not fit into the Italian American mobster mold that most of his peers settled nicely into. Other dads thought my dad was an oddball, but I held him in high esteem. When my mother would dress us up and cart us off to church on Sundays, I would feel bad that I couldn't stay with my dad and do the "cool" stuff.

My dad was a science fiction buff. When new movies would come out in the theater he would always take me (and sometimes my cousin Larry) to see them. But the big event happened on September 8, 1966 when Star Trek debuted on television. After the first episode my dad was a devoted fan. He liked it so much that when NBC pulled the plug on the series, my dad was one of the people who wrote letters in protest. When Star Trek was on the tube, our house turned into what I can only describe as a Sci-Fi church. Anyone who wanted to stay in the living room had to remain quiet. Talking was only permitted during commercial breaks and before or after the program. Those who remember those days laugh about it now, but it was a very serious time back then. It was interesting to watch my dad when this show aired. It was like he was living vicariously through James Tiberius Kirk, and he imagined himself traveling to those strange new worlds, and seeking out new life and new civilizations.

Dad was also into something that we didn't talk much about outside the home. He was absorbed by the UFO phenomenon. He studied UFOs with an appetite that could not be satisfied. He would drive to New York City once a month to get the latest issue of UFO Magazine and other publications that talked about this subject. I think that he drove to the city because by his getting the magazines there he would retain an air of anonymity and probably also because these publications weren't readily available around our town. Dad tried to remain inconspicuous about UFOs because he was already considered somewhat an oddball around our neighborhood and didn't want to accentuate even further what others thought about him. While other fathers were taking their sons to Little League baseball or Pop Warner Football, Dad and I were looking through telescopes at the stars or building radios or fishing up at Lake Wawayanda up in the mountains. Most of the fathers were sort of jealous that their kids would come and spend time with us and our telescope every night, and if they found out that dad had an interest in UFOs they might figure that he was trying to teach their kids about UFOs. It is important that anyone reading this know that back in the 1960s, anyone studying about UFOs was considered as living on the lunatic fringe and even socially unstable. In retrospect, I can only imagine what the mailman used to think when Dad got mail from the US Air Force and its contents were copies of "Project Blue Book" materials.

I wrote a lot about my dad for a specific reason. It is because of him that I immersed myself in the study of UFOs. It is also because of him that I became such a science fiction buff. I really loved my dad and I took interest in many of the things that he was interested in.

In 1967 my parents decided to move us out of the New York Metropolitan area because they saw that the area was starting to deteriorate. Crime was increasing and there was a lot of talk about illegal drugs becoming a big problem, even in our little town. They bought a house in a town called Toms River, down the shore in central New Jersey. It was a nice area, not too remote and only ninety minutes from our hometown. Dad and I used to make forays out to Lakehurst Naval Air Station and also McGuire Air Force Base. I think it brought back memories of Dad's days in the Army during the Korean War.

One of the things that I remember about this time was that the articles in the UFO magazines started to change in their content. When I was younger it seemed that all of the articles dealt with investigating UFO sightings that were fairly innocuous; investigating things like landing sites, angel's hair, and sometimes a strange odor that remained at the sites for a short time. However, later the articles in the magazines started to tell about people who had been attacked by aliens; some being chased by UFOs while they drove their cars and some who were taken against

their will by the beings that piloted those craft. Even in my young ignorance, I was starting to see that there might be a dark side to all of these sightings.

It Was Not The Moon:

As an adolescent I often craved to be alone. I liked to read and liked to be able to do that without the interruptions that came from my family. So after haranguing my parents for what seemed like an eternity they finally gave into my requests and let me have the bedroom that was down on the lower floor of the house. The house had a half basement and I thought it was so great to live in what was basically my own apartment. On the other side of the wall was the slot car racetrack we had set up and across the room from that was the table where we made the arrows for our crossbow and right down the hall was dad's tool room. It was a young boy's dream situation!

One particular night in the summer I stayed up late reading. What I was reading I cannot remember, but I remember having the satisfaction of being able to stay up late without having my parents coming in constantly with reminders of not staying up until ridiculous hours. Sleep finally overtook me and I turned out the light in my room and crawled into bed.

The sleep that came upon me was strange that night. I was very tired, but I also had an anxiety that was very unusual. It was like I knew that something strange would happen to me that night, but I didn't know what it was. I dismissed this feeling as being an unfounded fear, like every kid gets from time to time when they are alone; feelings like the bogeyman was in the next room or something of the like. I, however, was old enough to know that there was no bogeyman, so I shook off the feeling and closed my eyes.

I woke up a couple of hours later to find that my room had a lot of light in it. I looked at the window and noticed that the light happened to be coming from there. I thought, *Wow, the moon sure is bright tonight.* I felt an urge to go to the window to see the moon and when I looked, sure enough, the moon was full and it was hanging right over the house of the neighbors who lived directly across the street. Yet there was another light in the sky, down to the south and a little higher. I focused my eyes to look at the second light and noticed the crescent shape that hung in the sky and realized that it was that moon. I immediately turned my gaze back to the neighbor's house and the round object was still there. Immediately a fear came over me and I ran back my bed and did what every brave young man does when faced with such things; I pulled the covers over my head and laid there in fear.

As I lay there I thought to myself that it was stupid to be afraid because my

fear was unfounded and after all, if the space men were after anyone, it was the family that lived across the street. So I lifted the covers off of my head and saw that the room was still bright. Then, I looked to where the door of my room was and it was open. I didn't remember leaving it open, but there it stood, opened up all the way. What I saw next was what I perceived to be an astronaut in some sort of strange uniform, helmet and all. I was very scared now and covered my head again. The fear that I felt was a fear that I had never been accustomed to before. It was a bone-chilling fear, like my whole body feared the worse…like the chill gripped me from the top of my head to the soles of my feet, and now I was paralyzed and could do nothing. I tried to call out for my dad but I could not speak. I screamed in my head, hoping that perhaps if I screamed loud enough I could get my speech back and really shout loudly for help. Sleep came over me abnormally quick, especially considering the fear that I was experiencing at this time.

The next memory I had was hearing the sound of two or more jets approaching from the west. It was hard to tell how high they were but I do remember them being quite recognizable and to me they sounded quite low. I remember feeling happy that the United States Military was going to go and chase this object away. I cannot recall how much time elapsed between the time I fell into sleep and the time the jets flew over, but I do remember that they woke me up; my room was now in normal darkness again.

Morning came and I awoke in a bit of a fog, but even with this foggy state of mind I had a determination that I should share this experience with my dad. He had been into the study of UFOs for many years prior to that time and I surmised he would be fascinated at what I had to tell him. I hurried up the stairs and found my dad eating at the breakfast table. I waited until my mother was out of the room and then shared with Dad what had happened the previous evening. I finished my story and my dad looked at me like I was a poor confused child that had probably had a bad dream or something of the like. He was acting like a classic UFO debunker and it hurt my feelings that he was being this way. It was then that a strange sort of peace came over me and I felt somewhat of an assurance that he would soon realize that I did have a strange encounter the previous night; an encounter that we would both been intrigued with.

It didn't take too long before my dad received the verification that I so desperately hoped would come to him. Two houses down the block lived a family that we had become friendly with. The neighbors were a nice family and, like us, they had come to Toms River from the New York metropolitan area. The man (Conrad) and my dad became friends and would talk a lot. My dad felt comfortable about talking with Conrad about his belief in UFOs, but Conrad, while he would

listen to my dad, would tease my dad; the classic "little, green men," sort of kidding around. My dad was a gentleman and accepted this ribbing from Conrad, laughing along with him and such. But one day, just about a week after my strange encounter with the UFO and the spaceman, Conrad had his own strange encounter.

It was about a week after my encounter that my dad came up to me to tell me something. He had the look on his face that said that he needed to admit that he had judged wrongly. He asked me if I wanted to go with him to get something at the store and I told him that I would go. When we were in the car he expressed to me that he was sorry for not totally believing what I had told him the week before. I asked him why he had changed his mind and he told me that he had just had a talk with Conrad. Conrad must have had the same look on his face that my dad just had on his when he (Conrad) talked to my dad earlier that day. He told my dad that during the prior week he had gotten up early to go to work. If I remember correctly, he was one of those people who commuted up to North Jersey to work. He told Dad that after he left his driveway and had gotten down the street a little ways his car was buzzed a number of times by what he described as a UFO. I felt good in that I had been vindicated by Conrad's experience and his admission to my dad about that experience.

Time Marches On:

A year or two after my sighting and the subsequent "astronaut visitor," things in my life started to deteriorate. My parents couldn't get along and divorced. Dad moved back to North Jersey and I stayed with my mom and my sister. We sold the house and moved into an apartment and I fell in with a bad group of kids. After a couple of years I moved back with my dad and a year later we were in Northern California. In 1976 my cousin Larry came from New Jersey to visit us, and one of the things that we did was to drive up to my grandparent's house, which was 130 miles north of Vacaville; in a sleepy little community called Los Molinos. It was a nice place: a resort community with a small mobile home park, which is where my grandparents lived. I have to clarify that there wasn't much of a resort there, just a place where people could launch their boats into the northern Sacramento River.

At night Larry and I would take a couple of folding chairs and sit out by the riverbank. Our sole objective was to hunt for UFOs. As we sat, we looked into the clear summer night and could see just about every star visible with the naked eye, and with the aid of binoculars, we saw other things. There were many times that we would see lights very high in the atmosphere, probably in space; some of them satellites, and some of them unexplained. We would see lights move incredibly fast

across the sky, and when we would start to dismiss them as satellite they would perform turns that would have been impossible for human piloted aircraft or satellite.

For four or five nights we would go to the riverbank and repeat what was quickly becoming a tradition. Our grandfather had told us that at one time in the recent past some of the neighbors had seen a red disk across the river and above the trees. We wanted that to repeat for us, but it never did. Our closest encounter came when we saw the high moving lights again and one of them appeared to come much lower and then zip back up into space. It startled us so badly that my cousin fell back into his chair, which caused him to fall through the webbing and in his attempt to extricate himself from his dilemma, he ended up falling partially down the embankment onto the rocks that shored up the bank of the river. It's a memory that always brings a smile to my face. After a couple of days of talking about this sighting, we just agreed to forget about it.

My Life…The Battleground:

When I moved to California I was reacquainted with another cousin that I had not seen in quite a few years. I had always looked up to this cousin and in my life I mimicked him as much as I could. This cousin was into Science Fiction to excessive amounts. He saw every movie, read every book and developed a philosophy about what he thought life should be and what the future might hold. His belief system soothed my itching ears and I adhered to it. It was a philosophy based in a denial of the Lord, or at least the traditional beliefs about the Lord, and it consisted of thinking about what life in space could be and how it could benefit mankind. When Star Wars and Star Trek movies came out, we were the first in line to see them and when new books came out we were the first ones at the book stores to snatch them up. Add to this that his philosophy also included a life steeped deeply into the drug culture, and you can see that I had become quite an interesting mess.

While all of that stuff was going on there was another philosophy out there that wanted to be noticed. When I was fifteen years old, I got a job as a dishwasher in a restaurant known as "Ken's House of Pancakes" in Vacaville. While I was there I met a guy named Art and we became friends. Art was funny and had a laugh that was quite unusual, but he made people laugh at parties and that is why we liked to keep him around. Art had one drawback though; he was one of those born again Christians. Art was different though, and when we saw that he liked to get high with us we let him hang around more.

Art liked to talk about Yeshua Ha Mashiach (Jesus The Messiah) and he

always seemed to bring the subject up when we were somewhere where we just couldn't ditch him. We thought about leaving him out in the woods at times, but could never bring ourselves to do that. So to get even with Art we would stick him in the back of the truck and find the worse roads to travel down, but the joke was on us because it just made Art laugh all the more. He was one of those friends that was quite annoying, but at the same time they work their way into your life and you can't just tell them to get lost. Art was very persistent about sharing Yeshua, and later in my teen years I would be grateful for his persistence.

As time passed by, things got progressively worse for me. I graduated high school in 1977 and work was hard to find. I would work at one place for a short while and then another place. In the summer of 1978 my dad told me that there was a lot of work in New Jersey and I took the money that I had saved from a recent construction job and invested it in a move across country. At this time my life was steeped pretty heavily in drugs and my belief in evolution. I had picked up the latter philosophy during high school from a teacher who taught Darwinism like a fanatical preacher.

Things in New Jersey only went from bad to worse. My cousin was dealing drugs and because of this, and the fact that I lived with him and his parents, I got whatever I wanted for free. I visited my grandmother a lot and she was reading books by Alice Bailey that talked about there being no hell and that everyone was destined for a nirvana. Her books said that there was no good or bad and that everyone had a spark of god in their lives. This philosophy fit in well with Darwinism (at least for me it did), and it fit in well with the drug culture. With this new philosophy, taking drugs was not wrong, especially if it suited one well, and the lawmakers were just people who made them illegal because they were on the take from the drug dealers. This is the way that I thought back then.

Things turned bad though. The narcotics squad started to follow me around and I noticed them wherever I went. I was turning into a raving maniac who thought that my life was more important than everyone else's and I treated many people badly. One day, I had a run-in what a coworker named George. He was a Vietnam veteran and probably could have snapped me in two had he so chosen. I yelled at George and he looked at me and said, "What did I do to make you hate me?" For some reason this really bothered me and I got quiet and circumspect for several days.

During a party at my cousin's house one night in the spring my cousin told me that he had some cocaine and wanted me to partake with him. I went into the kitchen and snorted the two lines and my nose burned very badly. I had an experience for what seemed like a long time where I was paralyzed in my uncle's favorite recliner chair. I couldn't talk nor could I move. This was the same feeling that I had about

eight years before in my room in the basement, down in Toms River. I was scared and I prayed to Yeshua for help. Because of that prayer I was, in a short while, able to move and I stumbled into the bathroom. I looked at myself in the mirror and saw a death face there. I thought right then and there that I would not take drugs anymore. I wrote to Art and told him that my life was a mess and he told me about a new life in Yeshua…but I still hesitated. Yeshua was not for me.

In the meantime my dad found out that I was not doing so well and he made provisions to send money to me so that I could come back to California. Before I came back out west though my mother asked me to go to church with her, to a healing service. She always blamed herself for my bad eyes, even though the genes came from my dad…go figure huh? So I went to the healing service and although I wasn't healed, I felt a peace come over me that I had been searching for all of my life…now I needed to know more about this Yeshua person.

When I got to California it wasn't very long before I followed Art's advice and asked Yeshua into my heart. The transformation wasn't dramatic, but it was noticeable. I started to attend church and to experience the Spirit of Yahweh's work in my life. The years went on and then those old feelings started to come to me again.

After about three years I started to attend a new church; one where the Spirit of Yahweh seemed to be working more noticeably. It was there that I met a man named Doug and we quickly became best friends. Doug was a chaplain's aid out at Travis Air Force Base, down by Fairfield, California, and he was a strong believer in Yeshua. Doug was very musically inclined, having the ability to write songs and to play just about any instrument that you could place in front of him. A few months later he had married Mari, a wonderful woman who shared Doug's love of music and worship. We would get together at least twice a week to sing and pray and such.

One night Doug and Mari had several people come over to hear a tape that they had gotten from a friend. The subject of the tape was "backmasking," which is a clandestine way for people to put messages into music. Those messages are picked up subliminally by the people listening. Doug played the tape and I was fascinated because it made a lot of sense and some of the examples that the narrator provided sounded like bonafide deceptions placed into Rock and Roll music. When the tape ended I excused myself so that I could go upstairs to the restroom. I proceeded to climb the stairs and when I was half way up, on a landing, I noticed that climbing became very hard. It was like I was trying to walk through air that had the consistency of hardpan clay. As I tried to press forward I noticed that a chill went through my being, like I was frightened from head to toe. I came down the stairs and Doug made a comment about me being fast in the restroom, but he saw that I looked

perplexed. He asked me what the matter was and I told him that I could not walk up the stairs. I told him about the frightening feeling that I got from who or whatever was in the stairwell.

Upon hearing what I said, Doug calmly said that he knew what the problem was. He said that it was a demon and that we needed to cast it out of the house. So, all of us in the room started at the bottom of the stairs and we took the authority of Yeshua Ha Mashiach and mentioned His name a lot as we commanded the thing to leave. As we prayed, and as we talked to the entity using Yeshua's name we could feel it move up the stairs. When we got to the top, Doug asked me to go into a bedroom and open the window. We then proceeded to speak to the entity in Yeshua's name and it was forced to leave out of the window. I was amazed at this. All of a sudden the memory of my visitation in my basement bedroom came back to me. The same feelings of fear and the feeling this time that paralysis might start, all reminded me of that day so long ago.

The tape that we listened to really impressed us. It was clear to us that the enemies of Yahweh didn't want us to listen to this tape. The tape was revealing to us a tool that our enemy uses and Satan doesn't like when his tactics are revealed. So we felt that this visitation was sent to us in order to scare us into quietness so that we would fear playing the tape again and getting the same response from the enemy. However, that strategy never works with me or anyone who knows that we have authority over these entities, simply by evoking the name of Yeshua.

Well, this whole thing took on a larger dynamic in the days to come. I got a copy of this tape and brought it to my church's singles group meeting. We used to have the meetings at the apartment of a single woman who attended our church, whose name was Irene. The time came to start the tape and I suggested that we pray before we listened to the tape. The events that happened at Doug's home were still very fresh in my mind and I really didn't want a repeat of that night. To my amazement, the rest of the group sort of blew off the idea of praying and they were quite insistent that we just proceed. So I bowed my head and prayed protection over myself before the button of the tape machine was pressed. I at least wanted to be prepared in the event that something did happen.

We listened to the tape and got most of the way through it when Irene announced that she had to leave the meeting. She had to work the next day and was getting a bit late in the evening. After the tape was turned off Irene bid everyone a goodnight and she headed upstairs. About five minutes elapsed and we were preparing to leave when Irene came flying down the stairs. I truly think that she was so scared that she missed some of the stairs on her departure from the sleeping quarters. When she got to the bottom floor it was clear that something had happened

in her room. She was out of breath and she looked a bit pale in color. Some of the others asked her what had happened, but I already knew what she was about to say. She caught her breath and yelled that there was something up in her bedroom. She couldn't see anything, but knew that there was some sort of entity there. I looked at the group and said, "Now will you listen to me the next time that I say that we need to pray?" I told them that we needed to pray as we walked up the stairs and that we needed to use the authority of Yeshua Ha Mashiach to rid the home of the presence. So we did just as we did at Doug's home and we opened the window in Irene's room and when we were done the entity had gone. But I have to add to this account, that I again felt the bone-chilling fear and the thick atmosphere as we rid the house of this entity, and again it reminded me of the encounter in my room so many years ago. I started to notice that although the entity projected a fear, the fear did not bother me, but instead it angered me and I wanted to fight against it. I was experiencing the boldness that comes with the power of Yeshua's name and the authority that I have in a sold-out relationship with the Father through Yeshua.

On The Offensive:

During the 1990s things remained relatively calm. But something had been growing inside of me since my first week of being a son of Yahweh through the blood of Yeshua. I noticed that from time to time Yahweh would give me a dream, or tell me something that would happen to someone or that I would sometimes, during times of prayer mostly, get visions from Yahweh about future events, sometimes for myself or loved ones, and sometimes the visions had futuristic global themes. During the late 1980s and through the 1990s these things started to come to me on a more consistent basis. I had always desired to have the gift of prophecy as imparted by the Holy Spirit and to hold the office of a prophet, and it appeared to me that this was Yeshua's desire for my life also.

Late in the 90s I began to grow restless. I asked Yahweh what He wanted to do through my life. I desired to be not just a pew sitter, but someone who would be used dynamically for the Kingdom of Yahweh. This answer came in the late 90s in the form of a web-based ministry. At first the website started out using my name as a web address. It consisted of subjects that I had always been attracted to; some politically conservative, some personal things and then there was the anti-evolution and anti-alien parts of the website. Over a period of time Yeshua talked to my heart and convinced me to shed the political part of the site, telling me that politics was inherently evil and that neither party was looking out for the wellbeing of the people. Later still, I felt that the website shouldn't be devoted to my own personal things, so those things were shed too. Then Yeshua told me that He wanted me to

focus on what He called the “Delusions” of the end times. He said that the site should be used to show the people about the deceptions that His enemy was presenting to the world as truth. So, we decided that the name of the website should be “The Delusion Resistance.”

In the summer of 1998, The Delusion Resistance became a reality. Almost immediately I started to get ideas for articles and factoids to put on the website. People I would know would write to me and tell me that there were interesting articles and ideas on these sites that gave the same sort of information that I was presenting; sometimes with another angle on the UFO phenomenon or the Evolution debacle. People started to find my site on the internet and some wanted to join with my efforts. I was truly being blessed.

But aside from people finding the site, there were other entities that found the site. They began to harass me by having their human underlings write threats to me or belittle me to try and get me to stop what I was being led to do by Yeshua Ha Mashiach. When that didn’t work, they stepped up the attacks to the next level. I was forced to battle with the entities themselves.

The first time that this happened I was lying in bed and felt very tired. I started to fall asleep and then a horrible fear came over me. It was like the worse anxiety attack that anyone can ever feel. A chill went up my spine and then back down again. Pretty soon my body was paralyzed and I could not move, nor could I talk. I have to admit, I was rather scared and it became quite clear that I was not alone in my room. I was afraid of whatever was there and kept my eyes closed. All of a sudden I was reminded about the other times that this same fear came upon me. The paralysis was just like the paralysis that came upon me that night so many years ago in my basement bedroom. I realized that this was a demonic attack.

Unless you’ve been through this sort of thing it is very hard to understand. You want to move but you can’t. You want to rebuke the entity in the name of Yeshua, but you can’t talk. All you can do is pray inside yourself for Yeshua to give you the ability to use utterance. And that is just what I did; I prayed that Yeshua would let me use my mouth so that I could use the power and authority of His name to end the experience and to force the demonic entity to go away. Slowly but surely the words came to my mouth and then I was finally able to boldly take authority of the situation and send the entity packing.

In October of 2001 I decided that I wanted to drive down to Roswell, New Mexico to visit some of the people who were spearheading efforts to present the truth about aliens and UFOs to those who visited Roswell. For those who might not know it, Roswell is to UFOs what Jerusalem is to Christians and Jews and what

Mecca is to Islam. It is the UFO culture's capitol and information center. A couple of close friends named Clint and Marie wanted to go too, so we piled into their new Chevy Impala and got on our way. We had a great trip, exploring all of the major UFO places, including little Rachel, Nevada, which is just over the mountains from Area 51.

But before we left for Roswell I had another visitation from the entities that purport themselves to be extraterrestrials. I was walking in the spare bedroom of my apartment, near the walk-in closet and all of a sudden I felt that cold spiritual chill again, and the fear came upon me very fast. But I was now beginning to war against these entities whenever they came against me. I pointed to the direction where I could sense they were and I told them that they had not hold over me. I told them that I was a child of Yahweh and that Yeshua was my Lord. I told them that Yahweh Yeshua rebukes them and I could feel the presence fade, but not completely. I again told them to be gone in the name of Yeshua and then started to quote scripture to them and to sing psalms. They really hate these sorts of things and they have to leave. Just a couple of the many scriptures that prove this are:

"Behold, I give unto you power to tread on **serpents** and **scorpions**, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you" (Luke 10:19).

"Wherefore Yahweh also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Yeshua every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in Earth, and things under the Earth; And that every tongue should confess that Yeshua Christ is Lord, to the glory of Yahweh the Father" (Philippians 2:9–11).

I mentioned above that I sang a few psalms. Singing songs and hymns help to combat these entities especially when they are songs that talk about the cleansing of a person's soul by the blood, shed by Yeshua Ha Mashiach.

Early in 2007, I was visited again and they tried to scare me with the same old crap, but I warred against them and they had to leave. I was sort of amused this time because upon their departure, I heard what I can only describe as a continuous beeping noise that seemed to come from above my apartment roof. It was so amusing that I started to laugh and I said to them, "You have to be kidding, do you really think that you can still make me think that you're from other worlds?" It made me laugh because it was like watching a 1950s movie in 2007—way too cheesy.

What was incredibly interesting about the visitation above is that it was shared by others in my church. I went to fellowship the following Sunday and my pastor told me that I looked tired. I told him that I was a little tired because I had spent some time in spiritual warfare the night before. My pastor told me, "Wow, it

happened to me last night too. I spent three hours locked in battle with some entities and I knew that they would be after other people." He then told me, "They want after Eddy last night too." Ed is another brother in our fellowship. So it appeared that the enemy went into full battle mode with many in our fellowship. However, there was another blessing that came to our attention. One sister in our church walked up to us and said that the night before, Yeshua woke her up and told her to pray for protection of people in the church that were under attack…we were all amazed at this for sure!

There have been a number of other times where these entities have tried to dissuade me from moving forward in areas where they might suffer defeat. The latest one has been just this year before I went to Roswell to work in a booth for my ministry. We planned on sharing with people how the entities that claim to be from other worlds are really fallen angels and perhaps demonic.

Just three or four days before I was set to leave things were going along normal. I was preparing all of my material and was making sure that I had all of the things that I would need on my trip. I was pretty tired that night and decided to turn in sort of early. I lay in bed and as soon as my head hit the pillow I felt that old familiar feeling. I started to feel that fear, like there was someone else in the room with me; a feeling that pure evil was going to come against me. Then the paralysis came upon me and I went into fighting mode right away. I started to pray in my mind for Yeshua to give me utterance and my prayer was answered quite quickly. I tried five times and each time more speech came to me. On the final try I was able to tell the entities that they had no hold on me; that I was a son of Yahweh and that He has given me authority to fight them. Then I claimed the blood of Yeshua over my life and rebuked them in the name of Yeshua. They went away, but not totally, and I could feel that they were going to come back and try again. And they did just that. So we went through the process again and they left again, but I knew that they would try again, and they did. This time I not only rebuked them in Yeshua's name, but I asked Yeshua to send angels to help me and I started to sing, and then I started to pray in the spirit for what must have been close to half an hour. Finally, they realized that it was hopeless, and they left.

In August of 2007, I met the woman who would later become my wife. For over a year we talked about our lives and how Yeshua worked through us in different situations. Imagine the surprise and joy that I felt when she revealed to me that she had been harassed by these entities too. Yeshua had prepared for me a woman who is adept in spiritual warfare so now neither of us have to battle alone. We married in January of 2009, and we make quite an effective force to turn back the enemy. We'll present her testimony in the following pages for you to read.

My Conclusions:

The first thing that I naturally thought of when looking back on my life is; why did all of this start up with me? Was there one event, or a series of events that allowed these entities to come into my life? Was it something that I did that invited these entities into my life or was it the action of another? Well the answer to those questions is a resounding "yes!" I will now explain.

I've spent quite a bit of time studying demonology and the mechanics of how evil operates. When it is looked at as a warfare scenario it makes a lot of sense. It also makes a lot of sense when one looks at it in relation to open and shut doors. If you look at it with those two perspectives, and put the "open door" application before the military one, the picture gets clear.

When I talk about open doors I am referring to the idea that evil is like a seducer trying to get into your house. If you keep the doors closed and locked then it is hard for anyone to come into the home. If however you leave a door open, or just blatantly open the door and invite the seducer in then they will come in every time. So with these things in mind, let's take a look at the doors that I opened and the doors that others opened for me.

The Bible is very clear when it comes to explaining these things. It tells that there is a hierarchy in the family that is clearly demarcated. This was explained in one of the sections of this book that preceded this section. But to recap just a little bit, Yahweh's Word says that Yeshua is the head of the man, and the man is the head of his wife and his children. Scripture also goes on to explain that if there is a family where the husband is a believer in Yeshua and the wife doesn't believe in Yeshua, then the man's faith in Yahweh sanctifies the home. That same scripture tells that if the wife is a believer in Yeshua and the husband isn't a believer, then the home is sanctified through the wife and her faith in Yeshua. Yahweh made very thorough provisions for this. But, if a home has no believer in it then there is no sanctification in the home. It must also be made quite clear that simply believing that Yeshua is Yahweh's Son doesn't make one a true believer. Satan knows for sure that Yeshua is Yahweh's Son and so do many people, but they deny that He is their Lord, and that is the litmus test in the whole affair. Only by being born of the Holy Spirit can one truly claim to be a believer in Yeshua.

In my case, the enemy had quite an easy time when it came to coming into my life. First, neither of my parents was born again. My mother, who attended a church of a mainstream denomination, didn't know Yeshua Ha Mashiach personally, and

my father was even farther away from a relationship with Yahweh. There was no sanctification of our home, which is the first line of defense in these matters.

Secondly, my dad opened up a big door when he started to take interest in UFOs. His interest started out with a spark that ignited into a forest fire. His interest grew into a full-blown belief that there were corporeal intelligences out in the universe that were taking interest in mankind. To believe this is a denial that Yeshua created the Earth and the universe and that mankind is a special creation of Yahweh. When you deny that the beginning of Yahweh's Word is true then you deny Yahweh and the rest of His Word. But when he started to take interest in UFOs and their supposed occupants he opened up a door and basically shouted, "Come on in boys, you're welcome here."

Second, my dad was an avid Sci-Fi fan. His real love was Star Trek and one can't possibly deny that in just about every episode of Star Trek, the Starship Enterprise encountered life on other worlds or intelligences in the cosmos. Again we have the denial that Yahweh created all that there is, and the guilt is by associating with the premise that the universe isn't in a fallen state of sin; and if it isn't there is no need for a redeemer and Yeshua is written out of the picture, so to speak. So my dad created a spiritual vacuum in our family. Remember that vacuums like to be filled and that being the case, Satan is just waiting to fill such vacuums.

Before I go any farther, I want it to be clear that I'm not blaming my dad for the things that happened, I'm just showing how through his ignorance, he opened doors to entities that aren't out for anyone's best interest. I also want anyone reading this script to know, my dad did come to faith in Yeshua just after I did, and he came to realize the nature or these entities, and where they really come from.

To be fair about all of this, I have to admit that I was circumspect for a long time in my quest to find out how my involvement with these entities started. Through prayer and self-examination Yahweh revealed to me quite a few things that I did to implicate myself in the opening of doors and leaving them partially open. Even when we're children we're given basic Yahweh-imparted gifts to know right from wrong. We had those guilty feelings when we did something wrong. We knew that if we stepped out in front of a train we'd become hamburger meat and we knew that if we touched fire it would burn us. I freely admit to you that I felt an uneasiness the first few times I read UFO magazines. Star Trek sort of bothered me at first when I watched it. These signs, had they been heeded as warnings, would have kept me from diving head-first into the UFO pool. I, however, ignored these signs and it is because of that my life didn't have the quality it could have while growing up. Some might say, "Well, you didn't have a chance because your dad opened these doors." Well, on the surface that sounds like a great copout, but I

could have easily reached over and pulled the doors closed, at least in my life.

There were other things that opened up doors. I distinctly remember playing with Ouija Boards when I was an adolescent. While I can't remember them ever spelling out anything for me, it was still an invitation for demons and fallen angels to have a place in my life. When I was fourteen, my dad had a psychic come to our home. He didn't believe in their capability totally, but he was interested in what she had to say. She read my fortune as well as the fortune of one of dad's neighbor friends. I could have walked out on this session at any time, but I was interested and even thought that I could get some answers for questions that I had. Please understand, these actions weren't just my peeking out the door and then just innocently leaving the door open. No, they were my opening the door wide and turning on the power to a big red neon arrow that announced to the agents of darkness that I was open for business.

Solutions:

I am a researcher in this field of study. Most of my adult life I have been looking at the UFO and the Alien Abduction phenomenon from both sides of the philosophical realm. As a secular person I looked that these things mostly from a nuts and bolts sort of way. During the months before I became a believer in Yeshua, I did look at the New Age angle on explaining this field of study. I did find their explanations quite interesting, it being presented almost in a messianic sort of way and there were many similarities between the New Age message and the Christian one, but I noticed that the New Age position involved a rabid denial of Yeshua. These beings seemed to go out of their way, in their explanations, not only to explain their view in a religious manner, but they strive to either not mention the real Yeshua Ha Mashiach, or they deny Him by explaining Him away as just one of many great teachers.

In my experience, the name of Yeshua is quite important in ridding oneself of these entities. They leave every time that the name is mentioned. On our counseling website: Alien Abduction Crisis Centers of America, we have many such testimonies. The thing is that using Yeshua's name is just a quick fix if a person doesn't know Yeshua personally; that is, to have a relationship with the Father through a born again relationship with the Son, Yeshua Ha Mashiach.

The fallen angels and demons who pose as extraterrestrials know all about Yeshua. They fear him because He will someday give the order to throw them all into the Lake of Fire. He has authority over them and they know it. If you don't have faith in Yeshua, they will still run from His name, but they will keep coming

back. If however, you come to faith in Yeshua, you are adopted by Yahweh (literally) and then when you use the name the bad guys see who you are, and they don't want to mess with you.

So some might say, "Hey Dave, you say that you have such a relationship with Yeshua, but you still get harassed from time to time." Well, this bothered me for a short while until I realized that I am an effective weapon against Satan's kingdom. Some people come to Yeshua and after they rebuke these entities a couple times, they are never bothered again by them. My thought is that these people aren't a threat to the enemy. My ministry is like a howitzer on a hilltop which is firing on the enemy and is effective against him. The enemy is going to naturally try to take out my howitzer. He can't destroy it, but he can disable it if I give into his attacks and become ineffective.

Many people have the impression that once they are saved by the blood of Yeshua, and they are living a life in Him, their problems will magically disappear. While Yahweh does start to work in our lives right away, the major change that happens to a person is internal; the heart is changed and Yahweh performs a major attitude adjustment. Problems still exist to some degree, but He walks with us through the problems and effects change in us and others through this process.

"Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Yeshua Christ:" (Philippians 1:6).

When we come to Messiah Yeshua in faith and are born again, we become a work in progress, and we're continually being worked on until we die and go to be with Him, or should the Harpazo happen and He comes to take all of His people to be with Him.

One day in prayer, I asked Yeshua to show me an instance in the Bible where a person dedicated to Yeshua was harassed by evil entities, and Yahweh was faithful to show me where this happened.

"And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to **buffet** me, lest I should be exalted above measure" (2 Corinthians 12:7).

I needed to know the exact meaning of the word "buffet," in the original Greek, so I did a word study. What I found is that the word for "buffet," is the Greek word *Kolaphizo*, which is pronounced "ko-lä-f'-zM," and the word means: *to strike with the fist, to give one a blow with the fist; to maltreat, treat with violence and contumely.* So the Apostle Paul, a man who had personally talked with Yeshua, and a man who had given up his former life to preach the Gospel of Yeshua Ha

Mashiach, was maltreated by fallen angels or demons. This was a comfort to me because it helped me to realize that when these entities come to me in the night and they temporarily paralyze me and attack me it isn't because of some perception that I am outside of Yahweh's will, or that I am a lesser believer than other people. It means that they know that Yahweh has some special purpose for my life and they are trying to dissuade me from accomplishing that purpose. However, I say with all assuredness, they will fail at what they try to do. I have the power and authority over them through Yeshua Ha Mashiach and I will be victorious in every battle up to and after I leave this life and go to be with Yeshua.

It is my prayer that everyone who has these abduction attacks, will realize what they really are, and that they can not only stop them, but they can have victory over them through the power of Yeshua's holy name, and the covering of His blood in a relationship with Almighty God through Yeshua.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN: Lourdes' Testimony

My name is Lourdes and I would like to tell my story so that people can read it and see how Jesus can free people from Satan and his evil angels. I hope that someone will read my story and that they will find freedom from the fallen angels and also that Christian people can see that these things are real and that we need to fight against them.

My life is a miracle. I'm not saying that on my own account only, but I am just saying what doctors have told me. When the doctors brought me into this world I came to life with a heart defect. I had a hole in my heart that was in a hard place for the doctors to fix. Nowadays this problem is easily fixed, but in the mid 1960s it was not an easy operation. I was born in Mexico and medicine was not as advanced as it was in the United States. My father had a good paying job. He worked for a large Mexican oil company as an engineer and because of his job he was given good medical benefits. The only doctors skilled enough to operate on me practiced medicine in the United States so when my father was referred to the United States we went there for my surgery.

Before the surgery life was very hard for us. The littlest bit of exercise caused me to grow tired and my lips and fingernails would turn a blue color. I could not run and play like the other kids and this caused me to be sad most of the time. It was hard for my parents and my siblings too. I was the youngest of four kids and because of my illness my parents had to pay a lot of attention to me, and a lot less time with my two brothers and my sister. My sister was just a little older than I was, so this lack of attention affected her the most. My parents were always worried about my health so their life was tough too.

One very beautiful thing happened sometime before the surgery. I was about seven years old and I had been in school for a couple of years. I had an assignment book and that is where I did my homework. One day I wrote in the book that I recognized God for who He is and I told Him, "Lord I receive you today as my God and I always want for you to live in my heart." This was a very important thing for me to do and I truly would not realize the importance of what I did that day as a young girl, until I was born again in Jesus.

The doctors told my parents before the operation that I would probably not live to be very old and that I would probably be short in stature and have some deformities. The doctor that performed the operation was said to be the best in the

United States and some said that he was the most skilled in the world. I was in good hands, but even truer, I was in the hands of God. I am convinced that God gave my doctor the skills that he needed and that He guided the doctor and all of the staff during and after the operation simply because God knew that He would save me and use me later in life when I came to faith in Jesus Christ. The operation was a success and my health became better very quickly. When I recovered from the surgery I was finally able to play with the other kids, to run and jump and to enjoy life. I started to grow in height and continued to grow until I reached the height of five foot, seven inches. Because of the blessings of Jesus, all of the so-called bad forecasts that the doctors made became null and void.

As I got into my teen years I started to get into the things that the other kids were getting into. My mother had twelve brothers and sisters so I had a lot of cousins to pal around with. Like many kids our age we experimented with things like Ouija Boards, palm-reading, and tarot cards but we never put any stock in these things. To us they were harmless little games. I do remember that at least twice while playing with the Ouija Boards the pointer did move. I always assumed that it was my one cousin who moved the pointer, but there was always a feeling that perhaps those times that it *did* move, it moved on its own.

I want to take some time to tell people about doors that we open to evil spiritual entities. I mentioned the things in the paragraph above, but sometimes there are other things that we allow into our life that we didn't ask for. I truly hope that the people reading this will realize that what I am about to say is not said from a person that hates people in other religions. I love the people but I do not agree with the religions or any of the doctrines of those religions. I said that because I was brought up in the Roman Catholic Church. My parents were like most Mexican parents, Catholic and very proud of their religion. Even though my parents took me to church when I was a child and they kept Catholic tradition in our household I never felt that it was my religion. Something felt strange about it, like it was not quite right and there was something better.

As I grew into my teens and even later I continued to have those feelings so I stopped going to church. In Mexico they worship a version of the Virgin Mary known as the Virgin of Guadalupe; an apparition that was seen by a Mexican man named Juan Diego. Catholicism in Mexico differs from Catholicism in other countries because although the Virgin Mary is venerated in other lands, the Virgin of Guadalupe is highly worshipped in Mexico and Jesus our savior is often treated as a secondary and minor deity compared to her. God says in His Word that this practice is idol worship and it goes against the first Commandment where God says that we are to have no other god before Him. It is also important to stress to

everyone that Catholicism is the same as the ancient Babylon tradition and there is no difference between the queen Semiramis and the Queen of Heaven that Catholics worship. Idol worship is an open door for fallen angels and demons to enter into the life of a person, and also into the lives of those whom they are close to.

Another thing that the Mexican people have going against their favor is that the land was once occupied by the Aztecs who performed many pagan traditions, the worse of them being human sacrifice. When the Conquistadores came to Mexico they did away with the human sacrifice, ending the physical tradition, but they never had the resources to clean the land spiritually. Hence, many people who are of Mexican origin have the curse that is handed down from their ancient ancestors. Jesus offers to make them clean, but if they deny Jesus in favor of the Guadalupe Virgin then they have no atonement for sin.

So what I guess I am trying to stress is that in addition to the open doors that I opened by playing around with occult things; I also inherited the sins of our forefathers in Mexico who had bloodguilt on their hands. I was a mess and I didn't even know it, but I would find out later.

When I was in my later teen years I started to experience things that I could not understand. There were times when I would lay in bed and I would get scared. I realized that I could not move and I could not speak. I tried very hard to cry out for my parents but nothing came out of my mouth. I then realized that I would have a strange sound in my ears and it felt like my spirit was trying to separate from my body. I would think in my mind that if I could only move a finger or any part of my body that this would stop. I would pray in my mind and ask God to make the experience stop and that would always work. I never personally called on the name of Jesus but like most Catholics, I believed in the Trinity and I knew that Jesus is God and that the three are one, so I believe that when I called out the name of God that whatever was causing me to want to separate from my body would recognize who I meant when I cried out.

When I was in my mid-twenties my father started to hang around with a born again Christian who was telling him about having a wonderful relationship with Jesus Christ. The man would sometimes talk to me and I didn't really listen, but at the same time I was taking in what he was saying. On one occasion this man came to my parent's home to visit and I was there with my parents and my sister and this man told us all about Jesus. I remember crying so much that night. The Holy Spirit was touching me and planting a lot of seeds that would come to life about a year later.

My father went to the church and told the priest that he was talking to this man

and the priest blessed my father, telling him that if this man was talking about Jesus and quoting the Bible then it was a blessed friendship. A little later my father would meet with another priest who told him the opposite, telling him that he should not hang around with this friend. This is probably the worst advice that my father ever followed, but I have always prayed that the seeds that were planted in him too will someday germinate and bring new life to my dad.

Around this time, I met a man and we dated for a while. For some reason I was attracted to this man but I could never figure out what it was about him that interested me. I thought that I might want to spend my life with this man but at the same time he was treating me disrespectfully and such. One day I was introduced to a woman who was a witch. My thinking was that if I could get this woman to cast some sort of spell over this man that he might start treating me better and perhaps she could make it so that he would be a good husband in all areas of our relationship. This woman asked me to bring articles of his and mine, and she said that she would cast spells that would make our relationship like the ones that women often dream about. I wasn't thinking clearly when I asked this woman to act on my behalf and this was a big door that was opened in my life that allowed the enemy to have access to my life.

About nine months after my dad's friend told me the truth about Jesus I married my boyfriend. It was a miserable marriage right from the start. It turned out that this man had hang-ups in just about every area of his life; he was a truly evil man. About three months after we married I reached out to Jesus Christ. I was miserable and had reached the end or my rope. I felt that all was hopeless, all except for the hope and love that I prayed that I would get from Jesus Christ. I asked Jesus into my heart and immediately the atmosphere in the room started to change. I was bathed in a heavenly light. The Shekinah glory of God Almighty was all around me and I felt a peace that passed all human understanding. My spiritual life turned around one hundred and eighty degrees that day.

I remained in that marriage for six years. I had read in the Bible that if one spouse was a believer in Jesus then their faith covered the other spouse. I prayed a lot that Jesus would change my husband and make him a better man. Instead, my husband grew increasingly worse. My husband's family had been involved in all sorts of strange things and the atmosphere of the house reflected the evil of generations of sin and iniquity that had gone on there. I was constantly ill with viruses and other illnesses and I was being harassed by unseen entities from time to time. Of course I would rebuke them in Jesus' name, but they always tried to wear me down and make me weak. Where these entities were concerned, I have to say that the Holy Spirit worked wonderfully in my life. Although these entities were evil

I had a wonderful peace around me and I was not afraid of them. The joy of the Lord was my strength, and I needed a lot of strength considering all of the troubles that I had. Circumstances showed me that my husband had been unfaithful. Knowing this, the Holy Spirit gave me permission to leave this man and file for divorce.

After I left that man my life became much better. One day I was looking through my paperwork and I found the workbook that I had written in when I was seven years old. In it I saw the prayer that I prayed to Jesus all of those years in the past. I began to realize that even though I was a child, my earnest prayer was taken seriously by Jesus Christ and that His hand had been on my life all of the years between then and that time. It was an epiphany that showed me the predestination that God had for my life and that all things are planned from before we are ever born.

Just a few years after my marriage to that man ended my sister was diagnosed with cancer. My parents moved close to her home so that they could be close to her. I moved in with my parents so that I could take care of them and also take care of my sister when she needed me. As time progressed the attacks from the unseen entities became less and less, but they never fully ended. Although I was a Christian and I would use the power and authority of Jesus to stop the attacks, they never came to a total end. I would realize toward the end of my time in Mexico that this all happened for a reason.

Although my life was much better than it was when I was married to that man, there were still some things that came against me. My parents were never happy that I left the Roman Catholic Church and that I became a *Christiano* (the Spanish word for Christians). It bothered my father that I had never asked my parents' permission to leave their religion. Although they loved me and treated me the best that they could, there were many times when I had to contend for my faith in Jesus. There was always friction and whenever an argument arose in the house the end result would somehow be attributed to my faith in Jesus. I just grinned and bore it though because they were my parents and I had to honor them as much as I could without compromising my walk with Jesus.

Near the end of the summer of 2007, I met a wonderful man on a Christian singles online ministry. We both felt the instant connection; a sense that God's will was finally going to come to pass in our lives. God showed us through many miracles in our lives; through dreams, visions and words of knowledge from other believers that we were meant to be together. Although I was in Mexico and he was in the United States things went very easy. In 2008, he came to Mexico to meet me and my family. In July I visited him in California and we went to Roswell, New

Mexico to minister to people during the UFO Festival there. Later that year I went to the states to visit him and we were engaged. We married in January of 2009 and we have a wonderful life in Jesus together.

Something interesting happened after we met in 2007. There were times when I would be in my room at night in our home in Mexico City and I had the feeling that I was not alone. I would get scared and I would feel paralyzed and I couldn't talk. I would see shadowy figures in my bedroom and they moved at me in a threatening manner. Of course I cried out to Jesus and each time I did the entities would leave. The last time that this happened in my parent's home I got a supernatural boldness and cast the entities out one by one, rebuking in the name of Jesus Christ and pointing at each one saying, "you, out and you, out and you, out," etc. They obeyed and left. When they left they even went as far as to make me think that there was a UFO outside my house, doing so by making a whirring noise and a ringing in my ears. After that I can't remember being bothered in my parent's house the rest of the time that I lived with them.

I began to wonder why these entities were starting to bother me again. Over the years the visitations had for the most part ceased, and now they were coming back and more frightening than ever before. One day I asked my future husband why he thought that this was happening to me. He told me that the reason was simple. They knew that we would someday get married and they knew that he was involved in a ministry that fights against these entities. They were trying to scare me away from him.

The last time that I was bothered by them was when we were staying in Roswell in July of 2008. I was rooming with a woman named Joyce, whose testimony is also in this book. It was very early one morning and I woke up feeling paralyzed and I could barely talk. I prayed in my mind for help and finally I was able to talk. I screamed out, "Joyce, they are here, they are here," and what happened next was quite comical. Joyce awoke very quickly from my shouting and she jumped up in her bed. Next she ran to the door, thinking that her sponsor was at the door and that she had awakened late for an interview that they were going to do. I started to laugh, telling her that if the entities wanted to come in they can walk through the walls and they wouldn't knock at the door. We laughed for a long time and finally laughed ourselves to sleep.

REFLECTIONS:

I would just like to sum things up here. My husband talks about a lot of things where alien abduction is concerned. While I cannot say with any surety that I have

ever been abducted by aliens, who we know to be fallen angels, I can say that I have had many of the preliminary effects that many abductees have claimed to have. The entities that have presented themselves to me have not come in the guise of gray aliens, reptilians, mantis-like beings or any other façade that these entities have come to many of their other victims. The entities that came to me were dark shadows, hooded and menacing looking. Perhaps this is closer to their real form. Who really knows?

I like the analogy that my husband uses. If a killer has a certain mode of operation then they will remain consistent. If they commit a crime in New York and then move on to Los Angeles and commit a crime, the detectives in those cities can compare notes and know if they have the same perpetrator. He may have worn a ski mask in New York and another mask in Los Angeles, but his methods will give him away. This works the same with demons and the fallen angels. They come to some people in one disguise and other people in other disguises. The crime is however the same. When I would lay in bed paralyzed in fear and unable to talk, and the victim of alien abduction has the same symptoms, then the crime must be the same and the criminals must be the same.

Nobody will ever convince me that there is a difference in my victimization and the victimization of alien abductees. Nobody will ever convince me that the entities that each of us has been a victim of is from outer space either close or far. No, they are from right here, in a spiritual dimension. They are fallen angels, and are sworn enemies of the living and loving God of the Bible.

If you are having abduction experiences and you don't know Jesus Christ then I strongly urge you to come to faith in Him. In Him there is protection, love and grace. In Him you'll find the peace and happiness that you have been searching for all of your life. In Him you'll find the fulfillment of your life that you have always looked for. If you don't believe me, then seek Him out. He promised, "If you seek me you will find me if you search for me with all of your heart."

CONCLUSIONS:

Lourdes' testimony is unique in this book because although she had many of the symptoms of the beginnings of an alien abduction she cannot ascertain that she was actually abducted. She equates her experiences as being harassment from dark forces of the spiritual realm. The reason why she is included in this book is that she had all of the classic precursors of alien abduction events. She used the same remedy that the others in this book used in their victory over their abductors. Lourdes' testimony is a bridge so to speak to show that the alien abduction event

and the events of those who are harassed by demons and/or fallen angels parallel each other; so much so that we conclude that the two events are one and the same. We don't make this claim on Lourdes' case alone, but by also comparing many testimonies of people who we could not fit in this book. These people sent their stories to us and we can say with certainty that each and every one had the precursor symptoms of the alien abduction event; paralysis, fear, feelings of beings in the room and apparitions of shadowy beings and even the classic troll-looking creature that for centuries has been equated with fairy abduction and other such events.

As we have tried to point out to so many in conversations, in postal and e-mailings and in our talks, the modus operandi of the alien abductors and the spiritual harassers are one and same. This is not an accident nor is it a coincidence. No, these are the same beings perpetrating their crimes under different concealing outfits.

We found it interesting how Lourdes discovered two open doors that not too many people would dare to divulge. The revelations that she shared about generational curses were quite revealing. They not only show her personal open doors or that of her family, but of a whole nation that could have opened doors. The connection of the Mexican people and their Aztec heritage was quite revealing. There really has been no national repentance in Mexico concerning the human sacrifice that once occurred in that land. Without a spiritual repentance the blood-guilt would still remain. Catholicism accepts repentance in the way of confession but it is just the individual's guilt that is admitted and that repentance is admitted to a priest, and not to God Almighty. She has something very vital to declare when she mentions that although the physical act was abated, it was never spiritually absolved.

Lourdes, a staunch Christiano (Christian) does not hold her comments back where Roman Catholicism is concerned, having been a victim of such. Her sentiments, claiming that the worship of the Virgin of Guadalupe and other pagan practices of the Roman Church in Mexico could very well be open doors that lead to demonic oppression, not just on a personal level, but on a national one too, are quite founded, spiritually speaking. This could possibly be backed up by the fact that Mexico has for years been a hotspot of UFO activity and alien encounters. It could also be true when one studies and sees that there is a pride in the Mexican people about being that hotspot of strange phenomenon in the sky.

The important thing though is that Lourdes found victory. Not only in the name of Jesus Christ was she able to find divine assistance, but in her relationship with Him too. Jesus Christ makes certain promises to those who choose His free gift of salvation, and we believe that the testimonies that we have shown so far and those that will follow will, without a shadow of a doubt prove that there is freedom that

can be had by knowing and loving the author of freedom, Jesus Christ – The Father's Justice Personified.

CHAPTER NINETEEN: Jim's Testimony

My Early Childhood Memories:

For as far back as I can recall, at around five years old, I remember having what I used to call, "My Science Fiction Dreams." I am now fifty-six years old, so this was back in the year 1957. I lived in a heavily wooded rural area just outside of the city of Detroit on an acre and a half with neighbors at just about that same distance away. Across the street stood my single-story elementary school and a five-acre open field, providing the only opening in this densely wooded countryside. The night sky was untainted by pollution, clean and clear and very dark without distractions like streetlights or city lights. This allowed for a beautiful view of the Milky Way and many other celestial objects including UFO sightings.

I believe that most of the "dreams" I had happened from five to twelve years of age and suddenly stopped just after puberty. A typical scenario would include at times, a bright blue-ish light that would fill the room from outside of the house. The "shadow people" would be around my bed or in my room. I never actually saw them but felt their presence as heaviness in my own body and mind. They always seemed to be about my size, about four and a half feet tall, but just outside of my actual sight. I could hear them whispering. Frightened, I usually pulled my covers over my head. Next, the only way I can describe it, I would feel like I was going into a dream state, thinking I was floating or flying in the air and then being inside of a flying saucer! This part of the experience was less frightening and actually exciting. Even at this early age I was completely taken by our own space program and the many science fiction movies of that time.

I do not remember fearful gray aliens with any medical procedures of prodding and poking like many others. My memories included more of a mental harassment by adult humans. These adult humans were always Caucasian with long blond hair dressed in a one-piece, space age suit, like in the movies. I was always being asked a series of questions and mental brainteasers. In one of these dreams, I remember being told to fold the box I was viewing before me inside out with just my mind. It was hard to do and I became argumentative. There was a big test in school the next day and I was concerned that I was not going to get enough sleep to

do well on the test because I was here playing these silly games. I saw other kids from my class with me being told to perform various mental tasks by our abductors. Most of the time, in these dreams I felt more anger than fear. I was often argumentative and uncooperative with their attempts to have me play these mental games. At times I remember being in a large room in front of a big window looking out at the stars and space being told that I was traveling in space. I thought this part of the dream was just great. How much of this was real and how much was just a dream triggered by my own interests in space, I may never know for sure. How much of this could have been typical childhood imagination of a more elaborate bogeyman in the closet type thing? I may never know for sure. That could be the conclusion of the matter, however, there is another dimension that must be included here that suggests there is more to this than just childhood dreams and imagination.

Physical and Mental Effects of These Dreams / Evidence of Something More:

Many times before I would have these visits, I knew ahead of time that they were coming. I would have a humming in my ears and a lightness in my head. I would say to myself, *Uh oh, the shadow people are coming tonight.* I had nosebleeds that would suddenly come with a heavy flow of blood. I had scoop marks and other marks that remained on me after my dream was over. I often felt fatigued and stressed during school with comments made by all of my teachers to this effect. I often was caught daydreaming and preoccupied from daily routines.

I never shared any of this with anyone other than to mention to my parents that I had a weird "science fiction dream" last night. Their comment was usually something like, "That's nice, now go and play outside until dinner." There was never any distress or urgency to do anything, as I felt this was just normal dreams that everyone had, so I just learned to deal with it. It took me almost forty years to discover that all of these experiences were typical traits both physical and emotional of an abduction experience.

A Connection and Continence of the Supernatural:

A few years later, as a teenager, I had a problem with having uncontrolled and involuntary out of body experiences. A typical scenario would include a pulsating

sensation in my mind that would affect my body as being light and floating. I was conscious, but usually lying still in bed, on a couch or somewhere simply quiet and relaxed. In my mind this pulsating sensation then turned into a feeling of flying through a tunnel. Sometimes there was a light at the end but usually only the sensation of approaching an opening that would then be opened to more earthly surroundings.

One of these experiences was authenticated to me as a very real experience as I recited a conversation my girlfriend had with three of her friends in her third hour class at school. I was there in mind but my body was back home in my bedroom. This was not a dream and this was several years before I ever did any drugs. Another time, I was in a cavern-like, underground place where a shining, bronze-like figure of a humanly creature stood before me. I remember thinking that maybe this was some kind of alien. I was twenty years old and in the army stationed at Homestead AFB, Florida. The figure said to me, "Salute, for each one of us has our own philosophy of living." The sound of his voice was wavy, like someone speaking through a window fan. (This description is confirmed in the Bible as angelic visitations included, "speaking like the voice of many waters.") As a young man I thought this was really cool and that this "New Age" type message must have some special meaning. I was rather embarrassed by the "salute" introduction and decided to research why the message would start in that funny sounding way. I discovered that in ancient times, "Salute" was a formal greeting. It is where we get the word salutations, another word for greetings. My own imagination could not come up with things I had never been exposed to before, so this also confirmed to me that the event was very real.

The next experience I had scared me, I was homesick for home and found myself in the living room at my parent's house. I suddenly realized that my body was back in Florida while my mind was in Michigan. I was scared at this realization and like the snapping of a rubber band, I was back in Florida in my bed.

After reading about the succubus and incubus in a dictionary on witchcraft, I experienced a personal visitation of the same. Again fully conscious, this was a very real supernatural experience that I had and more than just imagination and dreams. Just a seemingly innocent reading with an inquisitive mind had opened a door. I believe while looking into the night sky desiring to have a UFO encounter, I had opened a door for an experience.

The last out of body experience I had was several months later just before my salvation. I was twenty-two, and felt the usual feelings taking place and I let myself go with them. Instead of floating into a tunnel, I suddenly felt like I was falling. I

heard many voices that sounded like chanting. I was scared, as this felt bad; very bad. I pleaded to God to stop this and recited the Lord's Prayer not knowing anything else to do but crying out in that way for help from Jesus. The falling sensation and chanting suddenly stopped. An important connection with the name and person of Jesus was made which ultimately led to my salvation. A few months later I belonged to Jesus and knew how to come against the feelings before they could subdue me. I never let these feelings come upon me again. Looking back on all of these events, I strongly believe they are all connected and none of them independent from each other.

My Experiences Are Typical for Abductees:

It has been noticed in the national abduction conference at MIT that abductees leaned toward a New Age and occult belief system and experienced psychic and supernatural occurrences after their alleged abduction experiences. My own experiences would concur with these conclusions.

I was always a nut and bolt type of person never believing in magic or superstitions but rather physics and the mechanics of cause and effect. In spite of the many supernatural experiences I had, they did not push me toward a more metaphysical belief system. I always searched for logical practical answers. The answers came not by science but as a logical conclusion of a spiritual battle that has been waged against mankind and God since the beginning of time. These answers started when in 1974 I met my creator and savior Jesus Christ.

When I engaged these supernatural powers in all of the above experiences and manifestations as a born again child of God, they stopped, ran or left me alone. My various experiences have made me realize their reality. Many others have had much more horrible torments than what I faced. I know these things are real and not the imaginations of unbalanced individuals. Now as an experienced minister, I am able to listen with sincerity and belief to these horrible and strange sounding experiences by others. As one who has been there, I can offer the same help I received by introducing them to the only hope and way out. That hope and way out is not a formula, philosophy or method to be learned, it is a person to be experienced, your creator and savior Jesus Christ. What we can offer through Him is a total cessation of abductions and any other paranormal harassment. I have no regrets for the experiences I have had and am thankful that I am aware of their realities and even more thankful that I have the answer for myself and for others with the person and

savior, the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER TWENTY: Wade's Testimony

My name is Wade. What I have to say here is stressful and has caused me much mental anguish. I was a UFO researcher with thirty-plus years of experience studying the UFO phenomenon. I grew up with a close family member who was and still is very active in UFO research. My uncle is the director and co founder of the local UFO organization Round Town UFO Society (www.roundtownufosociety.com). He is a state section director for MUFON in Southern Ohio. I have what you might call an insider's view of organizations that research UFO events. I can remember in the 1970s as a child going upstairs at my uncle's house and seeing his research room. There was a big poster map of Pickaway County up with dozens of pushpins in it. Each pushpin represented a UFO sighting and had a corresponding date. The room was decorated with UFO pictures and a couple of air-inflated alien blowup toys (probably jokes from his buddies).

My mind was primed and ready for an encounter at a very early age. I did not have a long wait. When I was seven, I saw A UFO with a **cross** on it. At www.nuforc.org you may see my report just as it is presented below:

> My family was in Cleveland for a wedding, staying at my aunt's house in Lakewood. I was sleeping in a bedroom with my mom and little four-year-old brother. While sleeping I got a weird feeling and opened my eyes, facing the window I looked out and saw a glowing ball in the distance. It was a bright white light, like no light I have seen since. Scared stiff I tried to call to my mother but nothing came out. I screamed "Mom! Mom!" in my head but my ears did not hear me say it. Then after a minute of so she got up by motherly instinct I guess. Mother looked outside and saw it coming closer; by now we could see it was a disc shape. My mom than got my two aunts up and my little brother. She tried to wake up my uncle but could not. We all went out on the back porch to get a better look, now the disc was getting real close and we were all scared yet we just stood there watching the disc. The disc was bright white light and in the middle there was reflections all the way across and right in the center it looked like a plus sign or a cross maybe; it was really hard to focus. The disc stopped about twenty to thirty feet above the ground right over a tree and just hovered there; its size was about forty feet across. No sound, no tree leaves moving; total silence. Now please understand the whole time I should have been wide awake yet it was all I could do to stay awake. My aunt walked

under the tree and threw a stick up and that's all I remember. The next thing I recall is standing outside and the disc was gone. My mom called my uncle in Circleville Ohio during this event. He remembers the call. What's funny is after all these years we are just now starting to talk about it again.

This event left me with bits and pieces of abduction memories. I am not going to get into all the details of that encounter; let's just say that they are not pleasant to recall. That encounter launched me into the realm of UFO research. I wanted to know more about what happened to me and why. It was like a secret obsession that had to be fulfilled. After thirty-plus years of searching for the truth of that night, God intervened and began to allow me to see things in a different light in late 2006.

I began to read the Holy Bible and look for alien encounters in it. My motivation for Bible reading was to pick it apart and use it to prove aliens did exist. This action enraged my wife (my wife was born and raised a Southern Baptist). Usually a gentle and loving woman, she yelled at me; "What are you doing, this is blasphemy and if you do not stop I will divorce you and take the kids and leave you!" My wife said that even though I looked at her like I was possessed, God rose up a fireball in her soul and told her to throw a Bible at me. So…bang, straight across my face I got her dad's big, old, heavy King James Bible. Man, did it hurt! But most of all it got my attention.

The Bible landed on my lap and opened up. It felt weird. It felt warm. Instead of throwing it back at her I just sat there and looked down at it. Right where it had opened up was some writing on paper; it was a bible study on 2 Thessalonians that her dad had done years before. The Bible was even on that very page, the beginning of 2 Thessalonians. This chapter of the Holy Bible foretells of an End Time Delusion that will fall upon man in the last generation. This delusion will be a big lie presented to man by the working of the powers of the devil. It says that these powers will present lying signs and wonders. No one can read the Holy Bible and not be touched by its truth. I began to read the Bible in a different way from that day forward. My wife decided to accept my apology but to this day has not apologized for thumping me with the Word of God.

I got into Bible prophecy and realized how this whole UFO thing fits right into the prophecy as The End Time Delusion. I began to see connections between local UFO events and church events coinciding. One small example is a famous UFO sighting in Circleville, Ohio. The Bruce Stevenson case and the fact that it occurred the same time as the new local Ohio Christian University opened its doors to receive students.

After further study these connections where found to be happening in other

communities as well. Then on a larger scale the connection between Jewish prophetic events (like the formation of Israel 1948, Jerusalem reclaimed 1967) and UFO sighting spikes coincided. It seemed that the whole UFO phenomenon coincided with religious events like something was trying to counter the efforts of the Christian community and prophecy being fulfilled.

I began emailing these connections and God's truth on this subject to fellow UFO researchers like MUFON members and the local club members. As a member of the Round Town UFO Society I approached my uncle with this information with eagerness to present the connections at the next meeting of the club. I was told no! They did not like it at all. In fact the response was hostile. Why? Later that night I started having health problems; this went on for days. Chest pains, diarrhea, headaches, gums bleeding, nightmares, could not focus or concentrate, work was tough because of my lack of concentration, people around me acting overly aggressive; I even had thoughts of killing myself. I felt as though I was under attack by something. It felt like hell had descended upon my head. One morning I woke up and went out my front door to find a rat with its neck slit from ear to ear. There was a satanic symbol drawn in the street in front of my house. My wife saw these things and it worried her. I felt horrible fear; I prayed, and prayed. I went to my brother's church a few times before all this went down. Seeing the people of that church and their kindness gave me a safe haven. Sunday morning of the next day I was in church and under attack again. This time it felt like a panic attack; my heart was racing out of control and I felt intense fear. I got up and ran to the alter ten minutes into the service. I begged Jesus to stop my mental anguish and torment. I told Him that I loved Him and asked him to please forgive me for worshiping UFOs and not Him. I asked for His forgiveness and thanked Him for giving His life for my sins. I spoke out loud and said "In the name of Jesus! Satan leave me alone!" INSTANTLY THE TORRMENT STOPPED. Instantly I felt incredible peace and joy. I accepted GOD into my heart. At that moment I felt total peace.

In the Bible there is no reference to the creation of life anywhere but on Earth, this creation of life includes only angels, and us. UFOs can only be one of the aforementioned. Feel special and very much loved because God did create all this just for you. How wonderful to be loved that much by God; it does feel good! Just like there are good and bad people (because we have free will), the same goes for angels. There are evil fallen angels who are pawns of Satan. These evil fallen angels are pretending to be aliens. Their plan and agenda is deception and misdirection. Only the future will tell what they are up to. Within a few days of my salvation I did an internet search on words from 2 Thessalonians that my wife's father had highlighted many years before (he died in an auto accident before I could have the

honor of meeting him). The search resulted in hundreds of hits but at the top was a Bible study done by a man named Glen Hamer. Glen told it in a way like no other and completely explained what the Bible has to say about the UFO phenomenon.

In Glen's paper he talked about fallen angels. He talked about what the Bible and other works say about the activity of fallen angels before Noah's flood and afterward. He illustrated how the fallen angels of yesteryear are the same ones who are coming against us with this whole alien abduction thing. Glen talked about the scripture in the Bible that says that a great delusion will come upon the Earth and how UFOs and aliens fit into this scheme very well. It was the same scripture that my wife's father studied and where the Bible fell open when God talked to me that one night. There was a lot more to the article and I found it fantastic how God used this article to talk to me about all that is going on.

The real truth is being covered up about the UFO phenomenon. A cover-up-within-a-cover-up exists because UFO researchers have been deceived by the greatest deceiver of all time. What can we do? Always show love and empathy for others no matter what they believe. Accept God into your heart. He will fill you with love, peace, and wisdom.

In conclusion I say this: Be alert to this deception. God says it will be a <u>strong</u> one. So if you hear talk of aliens in the Bible, aliens created us, aliens are responsible for miracles in the Bible, Jesus was an alien, or the Bible is a history book about aliens…KEEP YOUR FAITH because you are under attack from the father of lies.

The truth is not out *there*, the truth is still where it has always been: In the Holy Bible.

May God bless you and your family,
Wade

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE: Testimony of Lynn from Texas

My name is Lynn; I'm from Texas. I am listening to you on Cursed Net Radio right now and God is directing me to contact you and tell you my story.

Three days ago I was looking around on the internet and came across the Cursed Net program website and I saw where you were going to be on the show. I had listened to Cursed Net before but never live. I knew when I saw your name and what you do that God was directing me to you for a reason.

I have done some witnessing on radio programs before but I now know that my focus and my testimony must be for one reason. Not that I was in the New Age/Metaphysical/UFO realm; willing contact with these beings isn't my focus. The focus must be how God showed me the beings were not the angels of God as I was told by them that they were. They were not nice caring beings as I had thought they were. The focus must be that the authority of our Lord Jesus Christ can stop them from taking me immediately.

I never had any bad experiences with them and as I said earlier I willingly let them take me every night. I am a little different than a lot of experiencers or abductees in that I have been able to go on the ships totally awake and conscious, and this was about the only experience I was able to remember.

So then I found my way back to the Lord Jesus Christ and surrendered my life to Jesus Christ and repented and asked for my sins to be forgiven. Then it seemed as I look back on it that I had a hard time believing that the beings I was involved with had to be good somehow because I read a lot of others' experiences and I never had a bad experience, ever.

I knew I had been redeemed and I realized I had put other gods before our God and I knew I had basically committed an abomination against God with all that I was doing. I stopped all communication with the beings, and started reading my Bible. I asked God to show me the truth no matter how ugly it was. I just wanted the truth because somewhere inside of me, and I guess it was the hold these beings had on me that fueled this deception, I was still half believing that they were good. They had just had to be, was what I thought. God showed me who and what they are in a big way.

I then had one night while in bed asleep, it seemed like a dream, but I knew it wasn't. But I woke up and I couldn't move any part of my body. I was paralyzed and couldn't scream. It was like my mouth was glued shut and it took all I had from the bottom of my soul to call out the name of Jesus Christ and claim the blood of Jesus. The attack and attempted abduction stopped immediately. This was the first time this had happened to me. I knew the very first time they tried to take me who they really were, and that they were really mad because I used to go with them willingly.

I think the next time was a couple of weeks later and I was just pulled out of my body this time only I didn't go anywhere. I suspected this was them, also, but didn't have time to do or say anything. I knew Jesus was with me protecting me. Probably another two weeks went by and I had another episode of attempted abduction, only this time I didn't feel arms all over me, I felt a net of some sort over me. I couldn't move again but this time it felt like the bed was shaking violently, like a scene out of *The Exorcist*, and I couldn't speak but somehow, and only by the grace of Jesus Christ, was I able to get through their paralysis of my mouth. I screamed, "By the blood of Jesus Christ," and again the attack stopped and the restraints just melted away. I woke myself up screaming Jesus' name.

A couple of days later I called a friend of mine. Actually she is the one that woke me up spiritually and told me that I was not on the right side and that in fact I was communicating with the dark side. So I called her and told her what had been happening. She told me how to pray and to bind the demons and Lucifer in the blood of Jesus Christ. She also told me to ask God to stop the attacks and abductions, attempted abductions that is, and to tell God that I got it. I told God that I understood the aliens were actually demonic in nature and asked Him to please stop them. All of the attempted abductions stopped completely. I was led by God to a church and was baptized in the name of Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit.

I didn't have any more attacks till I met (through a friend) a guy that has a live radio program on American Voice Radio and he wanted me to come on his show the whole month of October and to share my testimony. I was living for the Lord as I still am, doing God's will and not my own. I was being obedient to God's instructions to go on his show and share my story. I agreed to do the month of October on AVR. Then a couple of days later I was driving my car to work one morning and my car was directed into the sun. As I topped a hill the sun hit my windshield and completely made it so that I couldn't see anything. I could have hit oncoming traffic, a pole, somebody, etc, but I had to have angels watching over me

because I hit the medium wand and busted up my car. I now know that it was a demonic attack that caused me to not be able to see. It was so strange and as I think about it (this was a few months ago), there was no way possible for my windshield to completely white-out in such a way so I could not see one thing in front of me.

The day I got my car back was the same day I was supposed to do my first interview on the radio. Satan did everything he could to keep me off of the radio and I was only able to be on the radio thirty minutes instead of an hour that first show in October. I knew they were trying to stop me from telling my story and telling people who is behind the UFO agenda. The whole month I was on the radio being interviewed there was all kinds of technical difficulty with sound and the broadcast. It was about halfway through the month and I started having abduction attempts again; waking up paralyzed. This happened at my mom's and again I claimed the name of Jesus Christ; again it stopped immediately.

This time it was my fault because I had brought crystals down to my mom's house when I was into the New Age and I thought I had destroyed all of them. I thought I found one hidden behind some things and knew they connected through the crystal somehow. I was beginning to realize that what I was involved with in the UFOs, taking pictures of UFOs, communicating, etc., was the vilest evil thing I had ever come into contact with in my life. I also knew they were trying to scare me so I wouldn't talk on the radio anymore and give all their secrets of how they are deceiving people of this world. People don't realize, as I didn't at first, just how powerful the Lord Jesus Christ really is and the authority He has over these supposed aliens, and that claiming the authority of Jesus will stop abductions or demonic attacks immediately.

This is just part of my testimony and it really isn't my testimony. All the credit goes to our Lord and Savior, my Redeemer, my Deliverer, my Healer, All-Powerful, All-Authority over evil and demons, the Son of the Living God, King of Kings, the Lord Jesus Christ. To Jesus all the praise!

I know you want to know just how many out there have used the name of Jesus Christ to stop these abductions. More importantly the blood of Jesus Christ will make them flee from us. God bless you and the work you are doing. Truly the Lord's work in these End of Days. If I can help you in any way, please let me know.

In His Service

Lynn
Texas

1 John 4:4

Ye are of God, Little children,
and have overcome them:
BECAUSE GREATER IS HE THAT IS IN YOU,
THAN HE THAT IS IN THE WORLD.

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO: More Important Testimonies

Josef, Heather and Bob

In this chapter we will present to you even more testimonies submitted to us by people who had been harassed by fallen angels and/or demons; and who, through the power and authority of Jesus' Name and a relationship with God Almighty through Jesus Christ, have had the victory over these entities. We have placed these testimonies in one chapter only because they are shorter in length. Although they are shorter in length, they nevertheless still pack a powerful punch and their content is therefore a blessing and proof of what we present in this book; that at the name of Jesus, every knee shall bow, and every tongue confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord.

Testimony of Josef:

I felt I have to write and contact you. I am from Sweden, and I'm twenty-seven years old. I have an experience, which occurred summer of 1999. I come from a Christian family and have been a devoted Christian all my life. Suddenly, during a warm evening, I felt an urge to go out and watch the skies. So I did. I watched them for about two hours. Suddenly I saw a light, which was the same size as we see stars in the sky. And it moved, and stopped, and moved across the sky and it shifted direction. I was then convinced that this was not a star. I saw other light as well but later on thought they were satellites since they had a steady orbit on the sky.

Later on that same night I went to bed in our furnished cellar. I laid my head on the pillow and tried to sleep. Suddenly after a minute I felt paralyzed, like my soul left my body. I went below the floor two meters and then was lifted up above the bed one and a half meters, or so it felt, but afterwards I saw that my blanket and pillow hadn't been moved at all. When I was floating around one and a half meters in the air I saw a light. I was afraid; these forces were trying to get me out of the room so I called for the name of Jesus Christ. I couldn't move my lips but I said it in my mind over and over again. Slowly I was lifted back to the bed and I regained my strength. I was really afraid because this was the first time in my life I felt this. I prayed to God and afterwards felt secure and fell to sleep. At this moment in my life all I knew was the ordinary picture of Christianity and demonism presented in the Bible; but nothing of Nephilim and UFOs.

Another time the same thing happened and in the middle of the night I woke up and saw a figure looking like he came from the 15th century Italy; in a blink of an eye he disappeared. But he had moved me perfectly and shifted my position 180 degrees in the bed with blankets and pillow. Eventually this out of body experience lost strength in intensity and it felt like it was just a normal procedure happening to many people before they fall asleep. I was told this from a psychiatrist I talked to once only because I wanted to know what such a person would say about that experience. However, although it could be just a physical experience, I couldn't explain away the person I saw for a second, or the lights in the sky. This same summer, horrible back pain came over me and nearly made me end my life. It came from nowhere. I have made physical training my whole life, so it was a shock. It felt like it was a connection with the lights, paralysis, the person, calling the name of Christ and other difficulties in my life at that period. It felt like Satan was trying to destroy me. The pain in my back ended after one and a half years, but it went up to the head so I have headaches from time to time. They ease if I do some massage so I don't think there's anything supernatural about that.

But I have a feeling in my right hand holding a force or magnetic field floating around my hand. This I have had for nearly ten years now, since that summer. And no one, not my bishop, not the Bible, anyone can tell me what it is.

It feels like these watchers tried to destroy me or use me when I was younger. Today I have done extensive research on the subject and my testimony about Jesus Christ and God and have gotten much stronger. That doesn't mean they have other strategies of destroying me now. Since I know they are spiritual, multidimensional, and physical with bodies and spaceships, who knows what they can do with our technology, email, computers, personal data and records, governments and so on. I don't want to be paranoid, though.

I wanted to share this with you and maybe we can learn from each other. I want to do something but work and family life takes a lot of time. I want to wake up the Christian community in Sweden but I need help from others. Maybe someday God will open a path. I can assure you I am telling you the truth. I have not been on another planet, met aliens or been aboard a ship. Thank God.

However, these are my experiences and I am convinced that somehow we have to fight these entities with the power of Jesus Christ!

God bless you and the faithful ones in America.

Josef

Testimony of Heather:

I thought it my duty to give my account of how Jesus came to my rescue. The first time I was sixteen years old and had been picked up by a trucker while hitchhiking. To make a long story short, it was late and dark in Southern California and this man tried to kill me. He pulled me into the back bunk from behind and started to strangle me. I tried to fight him but he was much stronger so I'd say, "Ok, ok whatever you want" and as soon as he relaxed I would start fighting again. After several rounds of this he began to strangle me again and overtake me. I then realized that I was going to die this way and I thought I am way too young to die. I then remembered that I learned in church there is power in Jesus name, so immediately, and with total belief I yelled out "In Jesus name!" I felt a power surge well within me as I said the words and immediately an unseen force pulled this man off of me and held him back with his arms in the air. I sat up and looked at him momentarily, then jumped down from the cab of the truck, tried to open the door (it was locked), struggled to find the lock, unlocked the door, and jumped down out of the semi-truck. I ran to a gas station and they called the police. That was the first time I experienced an absolute miracle that cannot be explained away to any other explanation.

The second time was years later, I guess I was about thirty-three at the time. I awoke in the middle of the night. I immediately was fearful and sensed two dark beings at the end of my bed. The room had the most putrid odor I had ever smelled; I can only describe it as the smell of pure evil. I tried to scream for my husband but my mouth would not move and I was paralyzed. I then heard (telepathically) one being say to the other, *What do you want to do to her?* Since I heard them I figured they could hear me so I thought to them, *You have no right to be here, I am a child of Jesus*. Immediately they were gone and I fell back to sleep. Several weeks later I again woke paralyzed and there was one being in my room (this one I sensed was younger and was just watching me). I just said in my mind, *Jesus make it go away* several times and it was gone.

During that time of those visitations I had many other odd things happen, waking to buzzing noises, bed shaking, I even saw a UFO outside my window and my daughter saw it at the same time. She saw some dark figures in her room, before

going to sleep one night. After these incidents had happened I was cleaning her closet one day and found a Ouija Board that her friend had brought over and left. I ripped it up and threw it away. I wonder if that was the reason for all of the happenings, as I had never had *anything* strange happen before that time period, and have not since.

Glory to the power of Jesus!

Heather

Testimony of Bob:

I am presently sixty-eight years of age and until a few years ago, I was unaware that others were having experiences that mirrored my own. My experiences seemed so personal and spiritual that it did not occur to me for quite some time that others might be having experiences so similar.

My first experience was so traumatic that I could not tell anyone about it for some time and then only my wife. I was for some time concerned that I might be considered imbalanced or some sort of wacko. Though my experience contains many of the elements of what is described as "sleep paralysis," I believe that my own "sleep paralysis" was the result of demonic assault or that sleep paralysis was the means used by demonic entities to attack me. The fear was always instantaneous as I would awaken to find myself paralyzed, but aware of what I can only describe as a "presence" accompanied by a "tone" not unlike a one-thousand-htz tone in a sound system that's feeding back, and always so loud that I thought my head would burst.

While I never saw any images or "beings," the room would always seem darkened with what I am constrained to describe as the presence of an "entity" that seemed to move closer and closer attempting to push its way into my mind or psyche.

Words fail me in trying to describe the means I was using to resist the entity. The only way I can describe my efforts is to say that I found myself mentally or perhaps even spiritually "pushing" back against its attempt to enter me at whatever level. Finally when I felt I was losing
in my efforts to repel the intrusion, I cried out to God and Christ to help me and immediately the attacks would begin to fade and within a few seconds, I was able to retake control of my whole body. If this was not an attack from a demonic entity, why would such an appeal always cause it to cease almost immediately?

At those moments, I seemed exhausted from the incident(s) but also there would be such a sense of release, peace, and comfort that I would almost immediately fall back into a restful uninterrupted sleep for the remainder of the evening.

I have come to believe from my lifelong biblical studies that what I experienced was indeed a form of demonic attack that I'm sure could seem to many with certain backgrounds to be unquestionably alien, for alien on some level it definitely was. It may be that these entities are able to induce what we call "sleep paralysis" and then from within that inducement, use it as a means or portal to attack the objects of their assault. These attacks would continue for a period of a few years during my late twenties and early thirties.

As scripture admonishes, "...resist the Devil and he will flee from you." This seems to have been the case as my subsequent resistance was always to invoke the name of Christ to repel the attacks and ultimately the attacks ceased altogether. I have now been free of these assaults
for many years and rather than cause me any spiritual consternation, the attacks only served to drive me closer to the safety I found in my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

I hope you find my experience useful in conjunction with the others. Feel free to openly use it or any of its elements with no attribution asked or required.

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE: People Who Refuse Help and Their Outcome

Those of us who comprise the Paranormal and Alien Abduction Problem Solvers International have run into several types of people. Each person and each case in unique, but they all have the underlying factor of deception from the entities that are doing the abducting. The timing of these callers is quite uncanny. Calls usually come in when there are little crises occurring in our families, or when that once in ten years documentary is airing on television, or in the wee hours of the morning when we're getting the best sleep we've had in years. These things really do not bother us because we know that we are providing a free service to people who are in a crisis when they call. In a lot of cases, they've been through the most horrifying event in their life and they've found someone whom they believe can help them, and they want that help now.

In one of Jesus' discourses He illustrated how people accept the Gospel or reject it. The parable that He used is also a wonderful illustration of people who hear about how they can become freed from alien abduction. Let's read His words and see how they relate:

"And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear" (Luke 8:4–8).

While in Jesus' discourse the seed stands for the Gospel, in our case it stands for the message the freedom that can be had through fellowship with Jesus Christ. Let's look and see how they compare.

Those Who Call:

It probably won't come as a surprise to know that not everyone who calls will accept the remedy for his or her situation. Believe it or not, some people like being in a crisis situation because it gets them noticed by people who would probably not

notice them in a normal life's structure. Every person's situation is unique, so when the phone rings and caller I.D. shows a number that is not recognizable, the mind of the counselor gets geared up almost instantaneously for whatever could occur.

The people who call us for counseling fall into one of four groups as we have listed just below. Sometimes people will jump from one group to another once they have heard the message that we have to give concerning the remedy for their dilemma. The four groups are:

1: Scoffers and pranksters: the trampled message

2: Those who want help but won't take it because of who the Solution is: the withered message

3: Those who want help and try the solution but give up too soon: the message among the thorns

4: Those who want help and accept the solution and are victorious: the reproductive seed

Scoffers and Pranksters:

When you consider the field of work that we are in, it is not hard to imagine that we get scoffers and pranksters. While the majority of those in society feel that there is something to the whole UFO/Alien Abduction phenomenon there are still many who see this whole thing as fantasy or the machinations of a lunatic fringe that is out to seek attention. It gets even worse in that we aren't only people who acknowledge that UFOs are real and that the alien abduction event is real; we are also believers in Jesus Christ, which in itself come with a great deal of ridicule.

While some might see it as a hurtful thing to get these kinds of calls and e-mails it is basically something that the seasoned counselor will just let roll off of their backs. Some of the pranksters are quite amusing. For a period of two months I would have messages on my answering machine by people who claimed that they were in UFOs using their cell phones to call me and tell me their stories. These stories make for great conversation when we all get together. There are no confidentiality issues because they are pranks and no real persons were involved. All of the other calls and mailings we keep in strict confidentiality.

Those Who Don't Like the Solution:

The first thing that we do when we get a phone call is we listen to what the person has to say. It is far easier to assess a situation after hearing the victim's full account. We take notes during their talk so that we can look for events that we need to get more information about. When the victim talks we can see if they are genuine, what their anxiety level is, if they are in any imminent danger and what their spiritual condition is. This alleviates a lot of questioning and redundancy. It must be stressed that while we are in the course of the interview that we are in constant prayer, asking God to reveal things to us and asking for His protection too.

After we listen, and we have deduced the situation it is then time to ask questions about what they have told us and other questions that might have popped into our minds while we listen. We ask them about lifestyles, previous involvement with the occult, generational carryovers and other such things. All of these things are important because the answers help us to determine how deeply their lives have been involved in practices and events that can open up doorways to alien abduction/demonic oppression.

After we interview them we are prepared to give them the solution to their ills. We have to be very careful at this point because when we start talking about Jesus Christ many people shut down. Why does this happen, you might ask? The answer has been slowly revealed over the years of counseling that we have done. That answer is that a lot of people have had bad experiences in churches. Some people grew up attending churches with their families and saw it as being akin to the family dragging the kids off to the local Elks or Moose Clubs. Some people grew up in churches that taught them that they were wicked sinners without giving them the salvation message. Others saw the church as a place that just wanted their money and/or who placed heavy burdens upon them; cold and calculating. Frankly, I've been told several times that since the church was just like the world then they would rather be in the world where they can have their fun and not feel guilty about it. That's quite an indictment against the church if it was true in their lives.

Our message to the victims is that the name of Jesus Christ can stop alien abduction and we have documented proof for our claims as you have seen in the preceding chapters. It can be compared to a battlefield scenario where you have medics that take care of the wounded. The medic will stop the bleeding, pack the wound and even stitch it up temporarily, but the real healing comes at the hospital where the patient's wound can actually heal and the patient can recover. The name of Jesus Christ is a life-saving technique where alien abduction is concerned, but a further step is needed to make alien abduction stop for good. That final cure is a

born again relationship with Jesus Christ. The testimonies that you read proved that with a shadow of a doubt.

We've all heard the expression, "once bitten, twice shy," and that aptly explains the attitude of some of those who don't want to have anything to do with the only solution that will help them with their alien abduction problems. The sad part with this group of people is that they weren't just bitten once but they have been bitten many times and they feel that if they accept the solution then they will have to become "religious" and that is something that they refuse to do. All that we can do with this group is to offer them the solution so that they have it so that someday they will come to faith in Jesus Christ and have their problems alleviated.

Another group who mostly refuses to listen to us are those involved in the New Age. Many of those in this last days religion have come out of the church, and many of them have done so for reasons listed above. The New Age theologians are quite crafty in that they have presented to their adherents something called "the Christ Consciousness." This is the spirit of Antichrist in that those who recognize the Christ Consciousness feel that through meditation and other things, that they can attain this consciousness and not actually become like Jesus, but can become Jesus Christ. It is a lot more involved than that, but that is a brief summary of what Christ Consciousness is. This presents a problem when talking to those in the New Age who want freedom from alien abduction. This can be best illustrated by giving a narration of a phonecall I received one day.

I picked up the phone and was greeted by a woman who sounded pleasant enough, but who seemed a bit troubled. She asked if she had reached the AACCOA and I assured her that she had. I listened to her as she told me about how she was being visited in the night by alien beings and how this was frightening her. I could tell from her account that she was genuine and that she wanted help.

I started out by telling her about the name of Jesus, and how she could use that name to stop the alien abductions when they were starting, or at any time during the event. The next thing that she said took me back a bit. She told me that she had been using the name of Jesus when those events happened and that it didn't work. She said that it was just like the name was ignored by the entities who were abducting her. She was alluding to her thoughts that what we were trying to do to help her was not a valid method because her life's experience had proved our method to be wrong. This was strange so I asked the Holy Spirit for help.

Help came right away because God told me to ask this woman who she thought Jesus was. She said that she knew Jesus as the Christ Consciousness. I then knew that I was dealing with someone who was a believer in the New Age. I told the

woman that the reason why her appeal to Jesus wasn't working was because she was evoking the name of a different Jesus. I told her that the Jesus that she was calling out to was in league with the same beings that were causing her all of the problems. I told her it was like calling on Lucifer to save her from Satan.

After this she asked me about the Jesus I was talking about. I knew that my time was short because once I brought blood atonement into the talk and started talking about the biblical Jesus she would get disturbed. Surprisingly I was able to get through most of my talk concerning sin and atonement. I started to talk about Jesus taking away the sin of anyone who would come to Him and serve Him. At this point the woman announced, "I'm getting ready to hang up now." I knew that I had reached my limit with her but I asked her to wait just a moment more. I told her that if she didn't resolve this issue that it would only get worse. I told her that the Jesus Christ of the Bible was the only Jesus who could save her and I told her to jot down our phone number and e-mail address so that she could ask for help when she was ready to accept the help. She thanked me and hung up the phone.

It is a blessing to see how the Holy Spirit will bring people to mind when He wants us to pray for people. Although the preceding story happened years ago, this woman still comes to mind and when that happens I take pause to pray for her. Perhaps those are the moments that she is thinking about all of the words that God had me tell her and that I was actually praying a supplicatory prayer for her. Maybe, just maybe she will jump into the last category and get the help that she needs.

Every year in Roswell there is a festival that honors the aliens and the financial bounty that they have brought to city. The festival coincides with the July 4th holiday and it causes the population of Roswell to double for almost a week's time. During this time, many researchers descend upon Roswell to speak in conferences and to "enlighten" the people about their research in UFOs and extraterrestrials. On the flip side, people like Joe Jordan, Jim Wilhelmsen and myself go there too to set up booths and to speak in conferences to give people a dose of the truth about these things. Frankly, I prefer the booths because it allows us to reach many more people than speaking at a conference that has limited seating but are rarely filled to capacity.

In 2008, Jim and I set up a booth at the Roswell Convention Center to present the truth to anyone who would listen. Most of the other booths are populated by vendors who are to capitalize on the UFO and alien craze and you can find alien images upon everything from books to dog sweaters. We hand out free literature and stickers. Kids love the stickers so they come to our booth, sometimes more than once, even disguising themselves to try to get more free stickers. It is a lot of fun at the booth.

We were really heartbroken a couple of times when the children would approach the booth. On two occasions we tried to hand stickers to kids and they refused them. On one occasion we were told by the kids that they liked the aliens and I cautioned the kids, telling them that the aliens were not good, but evil. On another occasion I tried to hand out the stickers to a group of girls who told me that they didn't want the stickers, and that they were hoping to be abducted. Their mother looked at me, shrugged her shoulders, like a mother who had given up, and told me that her daughters did indeed want to be abducted. I got bold and told the girls to come back to the booth. I told them that I might not be able to change their minds, but told them that when they do get abducted, and they realize what these entities are, and that they are not good, that they just have to use the name of Jesus Christ and they would be okay. They looked at me like I was crazy and in an attempt to break the conversation they told me "okay," and walked away.

These kids enforced that there are people who are ignorant and actually want the experience. I had heard it before over the phone and by way of e-mail, but never in person. It bothered me that the mother had given up. From her tone it was like she knew that what her girls wanted was bad, but it appeared that the kids ruled the house and that the mother just didn't want to deal with it. This made me wonder if apathy is another door that opens us up to allow entry to these entities.

Yet another reason why people don't want to hear the message of salvation from these entities is that they make money or gain fame from their dilemma. This was perfectly illustrated to us in 2007 at our booth in Roswell. I was handing out literature about our ministries when a man approached who was dressed like a cowboy who was going out on the town. As he walked by I handed him our literature as he kept walking. I called him back to the booth because I wanted to give him a sticker or two. He looked at the sticker, which has a face of an alien encircled by a red circle with a diagonal slash through it (no aliens) and he gave the sticker back to me and snapped back and said, "I don't want this. We like the aliens because they make us money." He told me that he was the relative of a very famous abductee and I told him not to throw the literature away but to give them to his famous relative.

Well, a year went by and we set up our booth at the convention center again. On the first day this same man came up to us and although he was dressed exactly the same, he had a different look. His eyes looked strange, almost like the outside of the man was the same but inside dwelt someone else. All I can equate it to is that he looked psychotic. I had worked in psychiatric hospitals before and had seen that same look many times. He told us a wild story of how an alien had come to him and told him that he wasn't 100 percent human. He said that it was revealed to him that

his mother had been abducted by aliens and been impregnated, and that the result of that seeding was this man. He said that the aliens were giving him a special message of how he was going to save humanity and other such nonsense.

This man is a perfect example of a person who takes the whole alien abduction thing lightly and then tries to make money off of the delusion. In essence, he was fishing for salmon and hooked into a great white shark and was devoured by the evil fish. He wanted to make money off of the plans of the Prince of the Power of the Air, and he became a slave to that very powerful being. All attempts to share the truth with him were spurned. Be careful playing with fire because you will get burned every time.

There are some who don't want to accept God's solution to make them free because they see it as being too simplified. We live in a very complex society and with that complexity comes complex ways of resolving problems. For example, there was a time that when you were sick you went to your doctor, he diagnosed your condition, he gave you medicine upon which time you went home and healed. Nowadays you go to one doctor who sends you to another doctor who sends you to a specialist who performs tests and then maybe he'll send you home with medicine and you start to heal.

Many people see life looking through complicated glasses. They think that if it takes longer then it is a better way. Years ago, after I graduated from tech school I was offered a part-time position teaching other students the mathematics that are related to pharmacy. One day I was trying to show the class how to do a math problem, but I was showing them the simple way. One of the students kept pressing me, asking me why I was showing the easy way instead of the hard way to solve the problem. I explained to him that if the easy way works and there is no way to calculate wrongly using this simple way, then he should want to do it that way. I explained to him that when he was doing his job that he would want to do it the easy way and that his boss would appreciate the time-saving formula. When time is critical, simplicity is a better way and the intricacies can be studied later.

Because some people think that the answer to just about anything has to be hard or complicated they cannot see any validity in using the name of Jesus to stop abduction and/or coming to faith in Jesus to stop abduction altogether. They'd rather waste years and countless dollars to find an answer that is much more complicated and yet will not successfully rid them of their problems. This truly is a sad state of affairs, but you can't force somebody to get the right help.

So among the several reasons that there are why people would not want to accept help for their alien abduction dilemma are: fear of committing to the one who

can help them, fear of having to become religious, an outright want to be abducted, wanting to capitalize from the lies and deceit which are the alien abduction phenomenon, and of course the belief that the remedy is too simple and must be more complicated in order to work. There are other reasons, but we have listed the major ones.

Those Who Give Up Too Soon:

Believe it or not there are some who have tried to thwart alien abduction and have succeeded, but have given up after a while. This primarily comes from personality types that look for a quick fix. We live in a society, especially here in the United States, where people want everything right now. For the past sixty years or so this society has groomed its populace to expect such things. We're bombarded by the advertisements through the media channels that tell us that we need things and that we can get them almost instantaneously. Most of us are carrying credit cards in our wallets that allow us to make purchases right now. We can drive through a fast food restaurant where we can get our meal, right now. We get our news from the internet that gives us that news at the speed of light and we can conduct business on the same medium at the same speed. These things are truly wondrous, but in this "instantaneous" world perhaps we have been spoiled so that we expect it "right now" even with it comes to things that are better fixed over a period of time.

In our counseling career we have run into several people who want the quick fix. We counsel people that there is no quick fix and that once the remedy of Jesus Christ is accepted and put into practice that it could take a while for things to even out. We try to explain that what we are involved in is warfare against a powerful enemy that only Jesus Christ can fight and that the fight is a process that will reward those who stick to the fight and fight to win.

Everyone reading this book should know that quick fixes usually lead to more costly repairs down the road somewhere. Take for example a leaking radiator hose in your car. If the hose develops a crack and starts to leak it is possible to wrap the hose with duct tape. It might get you to the nearest mechanic who will fix it properly, or will get you home so that you can replace it with another hose, but what will happen if you forget about it in the interim and many days go by? Well, it will slowly leak and the water will leave from your cooling system which causes overheating and the engine head will warp which means a costly repair bill.

This is the same thing that happens with those who try using the name of Jesus Christ as a quick fix to ward off the alien abductors. They use the name for a while

and it works, but the enemy keeps coming back and the people get worn down. Even though they used the name they really never made any sort of commitment to the owner of the name so they get frustrated and start looking for other things that might help. They might buy every UFO magazine that comes out so as to see if anyone has come up with anything better to rid them of their malady. They might attend every UFO conference that they can find to see if there is anyone there who might have the answer. With this sort of person they usually end up giving up on the name of Jesus because they really never had faith that it would work in the first place. Sure it worked for a while, but if the attacking beings see that there is no commitment on the part of the victim to evict them they will bide their time until the victim gives up and rejects the very thing that could save them. When this happens then the state of the victim us usually much worse than it was before they started to battle with the enemy. Many times they give themselves over to the enemy and become one with them.

We've found that people give up because they immerse themselves into the deeper workings of the alien abduction phenomenon before they are really prepared to do so. A lot of people like to tinker around with things. I am one of those people. I have a hard time just accepting that something works. Take for instance a windup watch. I am the sort of person that can't just accept that the watch gives me the correct time; no, I have to take it apart to see what makes the watch tick; no pun intended. Some people are like that when it comes to alien abduction and how the name of Jesus puts a stop to the abduction. As we mentioned earlier, God likes to do things in simplicity and He tells that we are better off doing the same when it comes to His things.

There have been a few times when people have found the freedom that comes with the abatement of alien abduction in their lives, but their inquisitiveness gets the best of them. The enemy however knows that those people are inquisitive and he lays upon them that the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon is part of a much bigger conspiracy. People start to study conspiracies and after a short while they are so wrapped up in the conspiracy theories and fear that they fall away from the simple faith that brought them so much freedom just a little while earlier. Granted, some of the conspiracies are related to the phenomenon, but getting into them is like trying to understand trigonometry when you've just learned how to multiply by twos.

For certain there are numerous reasons why people just give up in the warfare with these fallen angelic entities and to list them would be another book in itself. We know for certain though that when people doubt God and think that they can find the answer in others or in their own strength that they will fail, and fail

miserably.

Rejecting God's Solution and the Consequences Thereof:

Imagine if you will a person who is terminally ill and they are offered a new medicine, the only medicine that will reverse the course of their illness and eventually make them well. They refuse the medication and as a result they begin to grow weaker, their pain gets steadily worse and eventually they succumb to the illness. Now imagine that the medicine costs a very heavy price, but the person who is offering it is offering it for free, yet it is still refused. You would think the person who would refuse such a life giving gift is either crazy or that they want to die. You'd probably say that you cannot understand why they would want to make such a decision. If you had the chance you'd ask them why they are being so foolish. You would try to point out to them that if they took the medication they would could feel well, that they would have a wonderful quality of life and that the medicine would not only bless them, but it would bless their spouse and their children because they would be in their lives free from trouble and strife.

Now take that scenario and substitute the illness with alien abduction. Substitute the medicine as the name of Jesus Christ and the power and authority that come with that name and a relationship with him. His cure is free too and taking it brings freedom and life to those who accept Him. The freedom brings a wonderful quality of life and it also brings freedom to friends and relatives who find it hard to deal with a life's situation when it is affected by alien abduction.

Rejecting Jesus' cure for the alien abduction malady only leads to problems that escalate as time marches down the road. People become more captive to the fallen angels who feel that they now have license to escalate their diabolical deeds. Rejecting Jesus' help is the biggest open door that there is because if you aren't in one camp you are in the other, and there are only two to live in.

People who decide to reject the cure that Jesus offers will often find that as time progresses so does the demonic oppression it can only lead to living a miserable life or winding up in a mental institution or giving themselves over totally to the oppressors or the final solution, taking one's life to escape the utterly devastated life.

Those Who Find the Only Answer and Employ It:

There is really little reason to write anything in this section. In the prior chapters you saw how people overcame the enemy with the power and authority that comes

when they give themselves to Jesus Christ and become adopted by God Almighty. You've seen how their lives have changed and how they have grown from being victims into being warriors.

If you are reading this book and you are still a victim then let us encourage you; there is hope and a wonderful future for you. There is no need to give up. There is no need to be a skeptic. There is no need to cower any longer. If you are resolute to fight and win, then victory can be yours. You don't have to buy expensive gear that won't work anyway. The gift that God offers you is free. It doesn't just free you from the aliens but it brings about a lifetime of blessings that you haven't even imagined.

It is quite possible that after you come to faith in Jesus that you will find a church or a group of believers whom you can become part of. When we started to tell people about the alien/fallen angel connection very few Christians knew about it. But, through the Holy Spirit's revelation to other believers and through His work in us to get this information out to everyone you have a better chance of becoming free and staying free than many of the people who preceded you. As you will see in the next chapter, there are many who have seen the torch and have picked it up so that they can spread the word. Every day the internet has more and more sites that tell the message of freedom in Jesus' Name. So please read the next chapter to see that there are many of us around and then read the chapter about how you can find peace and freedom through a relationship (not religion) with the creator of the universe.

SECTION FOUR: The Awakening

CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR: Christian Awakening

The Church Enters "Resistance" Mode

As I was sitting in reflection about what would be written in this chapter I reflected on the long road that had to be taken to get to this book. I was thinking about that journey and wondering what title would best describe the journey that we have taken thus far. The only title that I could think of is, *What a Long Strange Trip It's Been*. Frankly, it has been a long and strange trip and although it is getting better every year, it still is strange from time to time.

It has been a lonely journey with just a few who have walked the same path. Sometimes I've felt like some strange sandwich, me being the meat stuck between the top slice of bread that was the secular UFO community who didn't want to accept our message and the other slice of bread being the Christian Church, which laughed at us, criticized us and ostracized us for many years. Granted, we're not lumping all churches into that mold, but the majority of churches have been less than friendly to us and to the message.

We started to notice a change when we started to receive letters from people who had been given the same revelation by the Holy Spirit. Many letters included blanket statements like, "Why isn't this being discussed in the church?" and, "We want to thank you because you're taking up a responsibility that the church has dropped the ball on." These letters were a great deal of encouragement, not because they impeached the church for being lax, but because we saw that others were seeing these things too.

Sometimes when you are suffering, comfort can be found when others tell you that they are suffering too. We have gotten many letters from others who tell us that they were laughed out of churches or looked over for positions in the church because of what they believed. They told us of the snickers and the condescending statements that they received. While we lamented that these brothers and sisters suffered too, we shared in their grief and that brought us comfort and joy.

We found further joy when at the middle of this decade some churches jumped onboard and wanted to be part of what we are doing. Joe was already attending Whole Loaf Fellowship, whose pastor and congregation accepted his field of study and his work and the rest of us prayed to have the comfort and rest that comes with that. Around 2006, a friend led me to her church whose pastor welcomed our ministry with open arms, and who to this day still marvels at the ministry. Pastor

Tom Mooney and the congregation at our little Last Days Harvest Ministries here in West Sacramento has been an oasis for me and now for my wife Lourdes who is my co-minister. Around the same time we received a letter from Pastor Mike Terone from Christlife Ministries in Queens Village, New York who wanted to partner and we accepted gladly. Not only that, but Mike put on a seminar in his church titled, *In the Days of Noah*, which clearly showed the connection between Genesis chapter 6 and what is happening in our world today. Many others have partnered with us including a wonderful Baptist church in British Columbia, Canada and two little Spanish churches in Roswell. Things have really opened up and we feel that things will go full throttle in the months and years to come.

The purpose of this chapter though is to let the letters that have come to us speak for themselves. In them you will see the heart of those who have longed to see ministries like ours for a long time and who have wanted to get the word out themselves, that there is a spiritual connection to the UFO and alien abduction phenomenon. The letters below will all be anonymous but the names of the people are in our files.

Hello, my name is ****. I have been a real Christian for some two years now, living each day to please the Master. I have a testimony and I confess Christ is Lord and I am thankful for God's grace to me, a sinner. Now, I've never had UFO or alien encounters whatsoever, but your theory that aliens are essentially demons or evil fallen angels etc.; I've had that theory a long time before I ever found your website. I wrote a paper on it in school. I was really curious about UFOs before I really committed my life to Christ and I wanted to know the truth. UFOs are a very enticing and convincing lie with all the videos out there. But you know what, that got me reading about ghosts and that got me reading the Bible again, and shortly with a few other things I got saved, for real and for good and I'm never going back. However, here's my problem: The UFO = demons thing makes total sense to me, but If I share that even with Christians I'm regarded as a kook; if they read my paper I get the usual "that was good" but nothing else, I can tell they think I'm way out there in space.

I read your website and you cut right to the point. A lot of Bible websites say there is no aliens and nothing is happening, then some people say God created other beings (not angels or animals, you know, another race), but in all my research, the only thing that makes any sense is that aliens and UFOs is a razzle-dazzlement deception, and so here is my attempt to reach out to just one person once in my life who thinks the same thing I do. Man, not even my wife

really buys my theory.

Intelligent, smart people just don't see it. It freaks me out the potential this thing has to deceive the masses, but then I think maybe I'm dealing with it in the only way that I can rationalize it—demons, and maybe some things can't be rationalized. Well thanks and write me if you have any thoughts on it.

Interestingly enough, the person above found Jesus while trying to do research on the occult. He'd only been saved for two years at the time the letter was written, but he saw the connection. Maybe sometimes all of the years of study and faith building can cloud the spirit from the truth.

The one thing that really blesses us is that our information is on the World Wide Web, so it is available to people all over the world. Because of this, people like our brother from Mexico often write to us letters like the one we present next.

I just wanted to write that this night I've been blessed more than I was. I just saw the webpage looking for a book, and suddenly I was reading this website. It's really amazing how the truth of God can help, I know there's some way to relate UFOs with the Bible, and I was almost getting to the same point you got earlier than me. I'm **** **** from Mexico city and this webpage gave me more hope. I know God can stop all of them, you know, those little guys, and now I just want you to know that this webpage helps me a lot. I will pray for people in that situation, God bless you more…

I'll be in touch. You should open a chat or something, it would be helpful like an "AA" room or something, but on the internet…

Thanks a lot for the time.

Some people like our website and the message that it conveys so much that they pass it on to other people, including their own children, as is seen in the following letter:

Thank you very much for your most informed articles. These are questions that stay in our minds and drive us crazy trying to find the answers. I definitely believe in Acts 2:38 and knew something was wrong about the UFOs but couldn't figure it out.

I have printed your article and sent it to my sister in West Virginia. I have seven children and told them all to log on to this website. I have been overjoyed with this information all day. Thank God for you.

We all need to know about these things that are going on around us. The Holy Ghost just tells you something is wrong but you can't find it. Thank you again for your research and time.

Praise the Lord for He is great!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Below is a letter from a person who has done the research and found that the "aliens" are fallen angelic in nature. He asks the question that we hear so often about not hearing this truth in church, but, he takes the initiative to inform his pastor:

Congratulations on your site, it is well thought out, researched, and it is something that I hold on to in these days that we are to be like "the men of Issachar"—who knew the times and what to do. I have long been suspicious of the UFO and alien phenomenon—this seems to be well founded, and it does seem to fit with yours and others view of them being powers of the air—i.e. the fallen angels or manifestations thereof. How come we don't hear of this stuff in church? I go to a very good church and still we haven't heard of this stuff. I will inform my pastor to do his own research.

Anyway I will keep it short. I pray that God will bless you richly, and that He would enlarge your territory, that His hand would be with you and keep you from pain (a paraphrase of Jabez' prayer 1 Chronicles 4:11).

When a person comes to the truth about the supposed "extraterrestrials," they start to wonder how this whole end time delusion will pan out, as seen in the following letter:

Hi,

I was shocked when I ran across your website and found the very same idea I had, that we are dealing with demons, not aliens. I have never personally had an abduction experience, just the occasional "paralysis" experience with the sense of something coming to get me, all the while being fully awake and trying very hard to even speak.

What gives me the creeps is that I can't think of a better deception for people other than the "alien" theory to explain the rapture of the church, etc.

People will just think aliens took everyone away. It's the perfect lie. Is that the "lie" that God causes them to believe in 1st or 2nd Thessalonians? He didn't make the lie, Satan did, but God just gives people over to it since they "had not a love of the Truth".

Since this so far has turned out to be a ministry field made up of individuals knitted together with other individuals, people tend to pray for direction from Jesus Christ concerning what they should do to get the word out, as we see in the following letter:

Thank you for doing what you're doing. All I can say is God bless you!

A little over a year ago, God began preparing me for ministry involving spiritual warfare but I wasn't sure what it would be. After months of preparation and seeking God's will I have grown much closer to the Lord and he's shown me my "project" is a book showing who aliens really are, what their modus operandi is, and what the balanced view of UFOs is from the canonized Bible. I'm already massing lots of bits of research. Please pray for my protection and God's blessing on my ministry.

Thank you!

Every person who receives a revelation from the Holy Spirit concerning UFOs and "extraterrestrials" comes to the working knowledge that they are spiritually wicked and not from outer space, as seen below:

For some reason I have always been terrified of this UFO phenomenon, I have had dreams of huge ships in the sky and diabolical demonic deception. These have been since childhood. I live in a state with the second most UFO sightings recorded and at this time it is so terribly corrupt.

I concur with you that these are demons and not beings of peace and light. This is the great deception and lie many will believe.

Take care May God bless you.

We could post many such letters but we know that you have read a lot already and we don't want to be redundant. What we are trying to show by publishing these

letters is that there have been many people who have put the pieces of the puzzle together concerning the alien/fallen angel connection. Many of them have felt alone; like they were the only ones whom the Holy Spirit conveyed this message to. Many times they are elated to find that others have been given the message.

All through the history of the Jesus' Church there have been divisions that have been caused by revelations of the Holy Spirit that some people are glad to accept and others will not accept. In the Protestant movement these offshoots of the main tree are called denominations. After a fixed amount of time that only God knows, He reveals more of Himself and it is as though He is the conductor of a train that is calling "all aboard." Those who chose to travel on the train to the new destination will experience refreshed moves of God's Spirit. They will settle into new territory and after a period of time the Holy Spirit will yet again yell "all aboard," and the train will leave again.

The train is boarding and it is leading toward territories that only Jesus Christ knows. God wants to train up a people who will be versed in spiritual warfare. He wants a people who know who the enemy is, what the enemy's tactics are, and how we can fight this enemy. He has enabled His Spirit to show this people scripturally and through His Spirit how to recognize this enemy and how they have intermingled with mankind all throughout recorded history; from the time before the worldwide flood right up through our present age.

Those who accept His invitation will be known as outlandish and maybe they'll even be called heretics because what they have been shown is outside the box. Recognize though that this has always been the lot of people who strive for holiness and truth. Sure, we are praying and waiting for the church at large to wake up and see the alien abduction phenomenon as a danger to the souls of men, but also as a danger to the church itself. The church slumbers right now and we don't know if it will ever wake up fully. We are very thankful for those who have woken up so far and we look forward to more waking up each and every day. On the last day we will change the title that we cited above, and we will say, "What a long blessed trip it's been."

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE: Official Disclosure

The First and Second Disclosures

The greatest longing in the UFO community is to know what UFOs are and the real identity of the entities that say that they are from other worlds. We have mentioned at least once in this book about longing for people without hope to fill the God-shaped vacuum in their hearts. Although many will deny it, all of mankind yearns for salvation. Everyone wants a father figure who they can run to when they are in trouble and who will answer all of their problems. The trouble is that there is already someone who pleads with mankind so that He can take that spot in their lives, but mankind is opposed to God Almighty because of the rebellion that is embedded inside of mankind's genetic code.

Right at the very start of the current UFO enigma the government has played a part in its great mystery. Governments have gone out of their way to discredit witnesses and to cover up evidence that could prove one way or the other what the phenomenon really is. But with all its measures of secrecy and denial, the government really does not do a meticulous job of putting an end to a story. There are probably a lot of ways that they could have put a lid on the story; and a government that could keep the Manhattan Project top secret all throughout the war is quite skilled at such things. The problem is that when a government changes the story, not just once but three times it causes people to sit up and take notice. By its own incompetence the government caused the Roswell conspiracy to flourish. Things tend to happen for a reason though, so the event at Roswell pushed the whole UFO subject into the spotlight.

Over many years and through similar blunders the government has caused people to be suspicious of their actions. Because honesty cannot be found in the action of the government, their dishonesty caused many to question their actions and to obtain documentation so that the government could be held accountable. In 1966, the Freedom of Information Act (of FOIA) was enacted so that documentation could be obtained much easier. The one drawback was that the government was given the right to refuse or to black-out any information in any documentation that they felt would jeopardize national security. This resulted in many researchers receiving paperwork that had useless information and many forms were received that were blacked-out. So much for freedom!

It became quite obvious that governments couldn't be trusted, especially where

credible information about the UFO phenomenon was concerned. Late in the last century people started to press the government for something that they called, "FULL DISCLOSURE." Those asking for disclosure have tried to point out to the governments of the world that their citizens are mature enough to accept whatever truth they might be told. There would be no mass panic on the streets and the institutions of the world would not collapse if governments told the world that there were indeed alien visitors coming to the Earth.

According to the governments, one of the main concerns for not releasing the truth to the populace was that telling the world populations that there were alien visitors would cause the collapse of religions around the world.

I find that premise sort of hard to swallow. First, most of the polytheistic religions of the world would not dissolve because their religions are New Age in nature and an alien reality would only enforce those religions that would probably see the alien revelation as a return of the gods. The only religions that would not accept an alien reality would be Torah-observant Jews, Koran-believing Muslims and Bible-believing Christians. All three would see these entities as demonic, especially if they held firm to their faith. Of the three, only Bible-believing Christians would be a force that the aliens would have to contend with. They will be the ones that not only realize the fallen angelic aspect to the aliens, but would have the power and authority to come against these entities. It was always the western governments that expressed doubt about their populations. Since the western nations had the highest populations of Christians then perhaps they thought that exposing the alien reality would cause a problem. This would be especially true if the conspiracy that aliens and governments were working together wasn't just a conspiracy, but the truth. The governments would have quite a situation on their hands if that was a fact, rather than a rumor.

Is There More Than One Official Disclosure?:

Those who are enamored by UFOs and aliens and those who research them from a secular viewpoint are all waiting for the governments to come clean. There are even some people who, looking forward to that day, are trying to enact legislation so that when their perceived saviors do arrive they will be under the protection of Earth's laws. These people are known as exo-politicians and they lobby the governments of the free world on a consistent basis to have their laws in place and ready for the day that their aliens come. Believe it or not, if the exo-politicians get their way, when ET does arrive it will be protected by the law with all of the rights that you and I have. That means that when that time comes, this book will be labeled

as hate speech and will be collected and destroyed.

Could there be another disclosure? Has anything ever been told to a specific group of people, or perhaps to the entire world that maybe it missed? Has the search and the expectation of a cosmic savior clouded the eyes or the judgment of so many that people have missed the other Official Disclosure? We know this has indeed been the case and we would like to present the original Official Disclosure to you. If you choose to accept the real Official Disclosure you will be able to see that the official disclosure that the governments of the world will release soon is nothing but a ploy to get you to acknowledge and accept entities that have no love for you or any human.

So What Is This Other Official Disclosure?:

All throughout this book we have revealed to you the true nature of the entities who parade themselves in front of the world in the guise of visitors from other worlds. We've shown you, not only by biblical texts, but through the testimony of scientists themselves that these beings are right from our own backyard; living in another dimension, a spiritual one at that. You've read testimonies from people who stopped alien abduction by crying out the name of Jesus Christ and who have stopped alien abduction altogether by coming to faith in Jesus Christ by being born again and who are living their lives for Jesus. They heard the real Official Disclosure and they believed it.

The real Official Disclosure can be summed up with just a few passages that we will now present to you. The first declaration of the Official Disclosure is:

> For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved. He who believes in Him is not condemned; but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For everyone practicing evil hates the light and does not come to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed. But he who does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be clearly seen, that they have been done in God. (John 3:16–21)

God Almighty, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob loved the world so much that He became flesh and dwelt among us. He loved the world so much that He died to save all who would come to Him, confess their sins and accept His free gift of salvation. The fallen angels do not love the world. They only love themselves and that is why they want to set themselves as gods over you. They will promise to make life here on Earth better and their plans will ultimately fail. God Almighty offers you His love and He came here to tell you. The fallen angels will demand love from you and force you to give it to them.

You come to Him through the act of being born again by the Holy Spirit of God:

> There was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews. This man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, "Rabbi, we know that You are a teacher come from God; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him." Jesus answered and said to him, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God." Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born?" Jesus answered, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Do not marvel that I said to you, 'You must be born again.' The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit." Nicodemus answered and said to Him, "How can these things be?" Jesus answered and said to him, "Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not know these things? Most assuredly, I say to you, We speak what We know and testify what We have seen, and you do not receive Our witness. If I have told you earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things? No one has ascended to heaven but He who came down from heaven, that is, the Son of Man who is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life." (John 3:1–15)

The fallen angels and their emissary, the son of perdition (commonly called the Antichrist) will offer you a counterfeit of being "born again." They call their version of this the "Luciferic Initiation." They will require that you wear a number on your forehead or right hand that will show the world that you have signed your soul over

to Satan. Jesus Christ not only died to save your soul, He gives you eternal life. The fallen angels teach that you must follow karma and live countless lifetimes to attain perfection. I prefer to die once and live forever. It is a much kinder and gentler doctrine, don't you think?

We saw how the name of Jesus has been used to stop alien abduction while it is in progress. We've also seen that while Jesus' name works to abate abduction it is not a cure-all in itself. By this, we mean that while a person could possibly spend a lifetime using the name of Jesus to stop abductions this would become a wearying thing to do because the entities that perpetrate the abductions will come back after they have had time to lick their wounds and heal. We've seen how those who have overcome alien abduction (fallen angel oppression) have done so by accepting Jesus as their savior through a born again experience. We've seen that while alien abduction has been abated in all cases, there are some cases where individuals are still harassed by entities, but the entities are not in the alien persona anymore, but have to show themselves as they really are. These people do overcome, but it might take a longer time, some extra prayer, deliverance, and a sold-out life serving Jesus.

Here's How You Start the Process of Freedom and Liberty:

By now you're probably wondering how all of this is accomplished. You want to have that freedom and you're saying, "Okay, I know that I have to become born again to make these things stop, but how do I do that?" There is a process and it is easy. By now you have realized that your life is not right in God's eyes. You've sensed that there is right and wrong in this world and you feel that even your best efforts haven't been what God requires. It might even feel that getting right with God is impossible. Well, on your own it *is* impossible, but that is where Jesus comes in. Realizing that you have a problem is realizing that you are a sinner. All sin really means is that you miss the mark where God's requirements are concerned. No human being is perfect on his own accord and can only be seen as perfect if Jesus Christ's blood covers his sins. The whole blood subject might make you feel strange, but when you finally realize how it works you will see how easy it is. First, let's take a look at the human condition as it is seen in God's eyes.

"You [God] meet him who rejoices and does righteousness, Who remembers You in Your ways. You are indeed angry, for we have sinned—In these ways we continue; And we need to be saved. But we are all like an unclean thing, And all our righteousnesses are like filthy rags; We all fade as a leaf, And our iniquities, like the wind, Have taken us away" (Isaiah 64:5–6).

In our fallen state even the best things that we do are like filthy rags in God's

eyes. The term “filthy rags” in the original Hebrew language means bloody menstrual rags, or in modern terms, bloody tampons. Now if that makes it sound like it is impossible to please God, that is true, but we have an advocate, a kinsman redeemer whom we will learn about in a little while.

It is vital that you realize that God made a way in the Old Covenant for men to temporarily cover their sins, and that was through animal sacrifice. Through this He was pointing to a way that He would accomplish forgiveness and satisfy the rigid rules that He made in the Law of Moses. We’ll talk about that later too. Paul the Apostle tells us that:

“And according to the law almost all things are purified with blood, and without shedding of blood there is no remission” (Hebrews 9:22).

This is why the people in the Old Covenant sacrificed animals for their sins. In many ways this is akin to using the name of Jesus to ward off alien abduction while not being born again. It is effective, but is only a temporary fix for the problem and it has to be done over and over again. A permanent solution was required then just as a permanent solution is required if you want to be rid of alien abduction forever.

We know that God made some very rigid conditions back in the Old Covenant and that these conditions had to be met for God to overlook the sins of the people of Israel. The rigidity was so hard that the only way was for God Himself to fulfill the conditions and to meet the requirements. The rigid nature of the Law of Moses showed man that on his own, mankind cannot satisfy the requirements. But, this same rigidity was also God’s way of telling mankind that He (God) would have to help mankind out of this dilemma.

The only way for God to be satisfied that the requirements were met was for Him to come and perform the sacrifice personally. It was sort of like God said, “Well, if you want something done right you have to do it yourself,” and He lived up to that His own obligation. In the Old Covenant God required that the animal to be sacrificed had to be a clean (Kosher) animal and that it had to be spotless (cosmetically perfect). In order for God to meet His own obligation to put an end to sin altogether, the sacrifice that He used had to be the same way, except that the animal had to be sinless. Well, we live in a fallen world and nothing on this Earth is sinless so God had to become a man, which fulfilled His requirements. This man would have to endure a lot of pain and even death to remove the curse of sin from those who chose to accept that His sacrifice was for them, as we read in Isaiah:

Who has believed our report? And to whom has the arm of the LORD been

revealed? For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, And as a root out of dry ground. He has no form or comeliness; And when we see Him, There is no beauty that we should desire Him. He is despised and rejected by men, A Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him; He was despised, and we did not esteem Him. Surely He has borne our griefs And carried our sorrows; Yet we esteemed Him stricken, Smitten by God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; The chastisement for our peace was upon Him, And by His stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; We have turned, every one, to his own way; And the LORD has laid on Him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed and He was afflicted, Yet He opened not His mouth; He was led as a lamb to the slaughter, And as a sheep before its shearers is silent, So He opened not His mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment, And who will declare His generation? For He was cut off from the land of the living; For the transgressions of My people He was stricken. And they made His grave with the wicked - But with the rich at His death, Because He had done no violence, Nor was any deceit in His mouth. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise Him; He has put Him to grief. When You make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see His seed, He shall prolong His days, And the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in His hand. (Isaiah 53:1–10)

Knowing that Jesus came to be our sacrifice lamb is a very comforting reality and it is an honor to know that the God of all creation, God Almighty, became flesh and dwelt among us and knowing that He died for us is a sobering thought that should bring joy to each heart. Knowing just this, how could anyone reject the Messiah?

It would have been enough had He just suffered and died for us but there is a special gift that He gives to us on top of what He had already done. That gift is the resurrection from the dead. Those who accept Jesus' wonderful gift of salvation not only get that salvation, but they are raised from the dead on the day of resurrection, are given new and glorified bodies and they get to live in bliss for eternity with each other and with God Himself. Jesus said regarding the resurrection:

"Jesus said to her, 'I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in Me, though he may die, he shall live. And whoever lives and believes in Me shall never die'" (John 11:25–26).

Salvation is a wonderful thing for everyone, but it holds a special place in the heart of those who have been ravaged by alien abduction. Whether being freed from just a month of harassment from fallen angels, or if has been a lifetime of abuse, salvation brings a freedom, like a long prison sentence has been ended and the life

of a freed man begins, as we see Jesus saying:

> So He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up. And as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up to read. And He was handed the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when He had opened the book, He found the place where it was written:
>
> "The Spirit of the LORD is upon Me, Because He has anointed Me To preach the gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, To proclaim liberty to the captives And recovery of sight to the blind, To set at liberty those who are oppressed; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD."
>
> Then He closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant and sat down. And the eyes of all who were in the synagogue were fixed on Him. And He began to say to them, "Today this Scripture is fulfilled in your hearing." (Luke 4:16–21)

What wonderful news this is to anyone who has experienced alien abduction. It is almost as if Jesus was speaking to the alien abduction community exclusively. Abductees are brokenhearted because they feel that they will be oppressed by the abductors and they feel that there is no hope. They feel like captives in prison who are waiting for someone to free them from their bondage. They are blind in that they cannot see that they will ever be freed from their pain and agony. They are definitely oppressed and are looking for liberty. And finally they are looking for time when they can not only be freed, but will be accepted by the King of Kings. When an abductee finds a life of freedom in Jesus Christ all of these things happen. Jesus Christ proclaimed your victory two thousand years ago. He declared the only true Official Disclosure and all that you have to do is accept what He offers to you.

But it gets even better because He doesn't leave us alone here on Earth. He fills us with His Holy Spirit who helps us to live the way that God wants us to live and who gives us special gifts as He works through us:

> If you love Me, keep My commandments. And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may abide with you forever—the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it neither sees Him nor knows Him; but you know Him, for He dwells with you and will be in you. I will not leave you orphans; I will come to you… These things I have spoken to you while being present with you. But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the

Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things that I said to you. Peace I leave with you, My peace I give to you; not as the world gives do I give to you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. (John 14:15–18; 25–27)

So there you have it, the genuine Official Disclosure, given to you not by any earthly government, but by the God who made heaven and Earth, who formed all of the planets and stars, and yes even the stars of the Pleiades, Orion, Sirius and Draco; luminaries that are just stars with no planets and no life.

So what do you do now? Will you wait for an Official Disclosure that will be a jumbled up mix of lies and deceit, dictated to you by governments infested with liars and by fallen angels who serve the father of all lies, Satan? Or will you believe the Official Disclosure that has been available to mankind for two millennia? The real Official Disclosure has blessed countless millions of people who have heard it and believed it over twenty centuries and who, although they're not here now will be resurrected and will come back with the King of Kings with the rest of us. It is tried and true, regardless of what tune the liars and malcontents have beat on their monotonous drums for so many years. The choice is now up to you. You know the truth now and you are therefore responsible to use the information that you have wisely. On Judgment Day you will not be able to plead ignorance. You can end alien abduction today if you wish and all you have to do is come humbly before God Almighty, confess that your life is messed up and that you need help; and then pray and mean the prayer that you want help and that you want a new life in Jesus Christ. If you are serious about this then please pray the following prayer and read the few words that are after the prayer:

Dear Jesus,

You know who I am and what I am. I haven't lived like you have wanted me to live all of these years. Because I have decided to go my own way and have rejected you all of these years there are aliens who have come into my life and made it even worse that it was before they were here. I've reached the end of my rope and I realize that I cannot control my life anymore and I want to give my life to you. I want you to be Lord over my life. Take my life and do with it as you see fit. Make me a new creature just like the Bible promises. Make me born again by your spirit. I invite your spirit to come and live within me. I know that it may be hard at first, but I know that you will make my life free from alien abduction and everything that I have done that has hurt you. I repent of my sins and renounce all of the bad practices that I did prior to right

now. I will live my life for you and for your kingdom. I thank you, Father, for your free gift of Salvation and I accept it freely. The blood of Jesus Christ, God's Son, has cleansed me from my sins. In Jesus' Holy Name I Pray,

Amen

You've made a wonderful choice if you chose to pray that prayer. You can ask any number of believers in Jesus Christ and they will tell you a variety of different stories. Some say that they had major life-changing revelations the minute that they became a born again believer in Jesus. Others will tell you that they change gradually over time. The one thing that you must realize is that you are adopted by God Almighty now and you belong to Him. If you have ever thought that believers in Jesus are mindless drones that follow an impersonal and uncaring God then you have a pleasant treat in store for you. God doesn't strip your free will away from you when you come to him and He allows you to grow at the pace that is comfortable for you. This is a good thing, but it must be tempered with a seriousness of your new position in His Kingdom.

When you made the decision to have faith in Jesus there was a literal change in who you are, not just spiritually, but also in your soul. Several times it is mentioned in scripture that a person who comes to faith in Jesus becomes something new:

"Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new. Now all things are of God, who has reconciled us to Himself through Jesus Christ, and has given us the ministry of reconciliation……..Now then, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were pleading through us: we implore you on Christ's behalf, be reconciled to God. For He made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him" (2 Corinthians 5:17–18; 20–21).

When you come to God Almighty through Jesus Christ you become a new creation and the old part of you that rebellious and sinful had died. You immediately become an ambassador for God because when people see the change in you they will want to know what great thing happened to you. Do you remember anyone who came to Jesus before you did? Remember how they used to act like religious fanatics or Jesus Freaks? Well, it was because they found something so utterly fantastic that they wanted to share it with you.

Take time to read your Bible. It is the Word of God and you will find out that since you have become born again the Holy Spirit will help to reveal God to you in its pages. Spend time with Jesus like you would spend time with a great new friend.

The Bible says that if you draw close to God, He will draw close to you.

Lastly, it is very important for you that you find other like-minded people whom you can hang around with. It is wise if you find one person who has been a believer in Jesus for a few years so that they can help you further in your development and to help you mature in your new faith. It is also important to have such a person around if you need prayer or find that the entities harass you further. It is also stressed that you find a group of people whom you can get together with for Bible Studies, prayer, and worship. All of these things are very important because they will help you to grow strong in Jesus. The stronger you are in Jesus Christ the less you will be harassed and after a while they will leave you alone altogether.

After you have come to Jesus Christ there is a chance that the fallen angels might come to you from time to time to convince you that the decision that you made was wrong, or that they are part of the ministry of Jesus Christ. Just remember that you are a child of God now and remind them of that too. Tell them to leave in Jesus' name and they are obligated to go. You are a threat to them now so they shouldn't bother you much and when they see that you are resolved to fight against them they will move onto other people who do not know Jesus yet.

We gladly encourage you to write to us to let us know about the decision you made to follow Jesus Christ. Our counseling site, the Paranormal and Alien Abduction Problem Solvers International, has many men and women who would like to keep in touch with you and to help you by answering any questions that you might have. You can find our website at www.paapsi.org.